

TREE-FERNS, TASMANIA.

THE
ISLES OF THE SEA;

BEING

AN ENTERTAINING NARRATIVE

OF

A VOYAGE TO THE PACIFIC AND INDIAN OCEANS,

AND EMBRACING

FULL AND AUTHENTIC ACCOUNTS

OF THE

ISLANDS OF POLYNESIA, MICRONESIA, AND MELANESIA,

AND INCLUDING A

FULL AND COMPREHENSIVE HISTORY

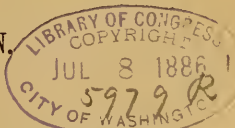
OF

THE BERMUDAS, THE BAHAMAS, THE CARIBBEAN ISLANDS, ISLES IN THE BAY
OF RIO, THE FALKLAND ISLES, TERRA DEL FUEGO, JUAN FERNANDEZ,
THE GALAPAGOS, THE MARQUESAS, PAUMOTOU, TAHITI OR SOCIETY
ISLANDS, SAMOA, TONGA, FIJI, THE NEW HEBRIDES, NORFOLK
ISLE, NEW CALEDONIA, NEW ZEALAND, TASMANIA, AUSTRALIA,
PAPUA, THE SOLOMON ISLANDS, THE GILBERT GROUPS,
THE HAWAIIAN ISLANDS, THE MARSHALL ISLANDS,
THE CAROLINE ISLANDS, THE LADRONES, THE
BONIN ISLANDS, JAPAN, LOO CHOO, FORMOSA,
THE PHILLIPINES, BORNEO, CELEBES,
JAVA, SUMATRA, SINGAPORE, CEYLON,
MAURITIUS, MADAGASCAR, AND
MANY OTHER ISLANDS,

TOGETHER WITH A DESCRIPTION OF THEIR INHABITANTS.

BY

EDWARD WALTER DAWSON.



EMBELLISHED WITH NUMEROUS ILLUSTRATIONS.

HARTFORD, CONN.:
BETTS & CO., PUBLISHERS.
1886.

COPYRIGHT, 1886,
BY BETTS & CO.,
HARTFORD, CONN.

*The Case, Lockwood & Brainard Co.,
Printers, Hartford, Conn.*

INTRODUCTION.

Since the days of Prince Henry of Portugal, surnamed the Navigator, there have been many books written about the Isles of the Sea; indeed, were all the works on the subject, including accounts of voyages of discovery, collected, they would of themselves make quite a library. But while, for the information they contain, many of these works are worthy of all commendation, still, none of them go quite far enough; in truth, they do not even give us a glimpse of the whole subject; and those which come nearest to doing so are either so antiquated as to be very rare, or, if obtainable, practically of little value.

Missionaries are much given to publishing accounts of their missions; and from those who have labored, and those who are now laboring on the isles of the Pacific, we have obtained some most valuable information. But these good men are too apt to confine themselves to their personal affairs, and the immediate fields of their labors.

Who ever heard of a navigator who undertook a voyage of discovery that did not afterwards publish "a full and authentic account" of his perilous venture, with a circumstantial statement of all his "discoveries"? Such a seaman, I opine, never sailed — never will sail. And while the oceans have fairly swarmed with the ships and fleets of discoverers, and the shelves of the book-stores have groaned with their productions, still these voyagers have only been able to tell us a partial story, and even that has not always been reliable.

Naturalists in search of knowledge, travelers seeking adventures, invalids in quest of health, have all given us entertaining — some of them most fascinating — accounts of their wanderings, and so far as they go, a large proportion of these works are particularly valuable; but like the missionaries, their

authors do not succeed in getting away from themselves, their books, in great part, are made up of whatever they as individuals are most interested in, whether it be botany or bipeds, corals or craters, climates or cocoanuts. Then, too, in hardly any of them do we catch even a glimpse of more than a single great island, or at most, a group of smaller ones.

"To the mind of eager youth and sober manhood almost alike," says one who has spent many years in Polynesia, "there is an imaginative charm in the very word island," and the writer never penned truer words; for from the hour when in early boyhood we first take up our "Robinson Crusoe" till the time in old age when we dream of a winter in the Bermudas or among the Bahamas, or better still, in Hawaii or Samoa, the Isles of the Sea have a peculiar fascination for us.

With many of these isles we are tolerably familiar, and besides what we have seen or read of Sicily, Cyprus, and the Ionian Islands in the Mediterranean, of Cuba, Hayti, and many more in the West Indies, of some of the Dutch possessions in the East, and the Hawaiian group in the Pacific, of late years we have learned much of the islands which make up the Empire of Japan. But there are others of which, up to the present time, we know very little, notably those of the Caroline Archipelago, the Marshall Islands, the New Hebrides, some parts of Borneo, the Solomon Islands, and other Papuan groups and isles, including the great island of Papua itself. Of all these we wish to know something, at least. How eagerly we sought for information about the Carolines when Germany undertook to gain possession of that extensive archipelago, and how little we were able to learn of them. The fact is, of many of these groups and islands hardly a word can be found in any book heretofore published, while others are barely mentioned or incorrectly described.

It has been my aim in preparing this volume to bring together in one comprehensive work ALL the important isles of the sea, and as many of lesser note as possible, and to give the latest, the most authentic, and fullest information regarding them. By extensive travel and persistent research, I have

endeavored to make myself thoroughly familiar with the subject. I have consulted not less than two hundred and eighty-four authorities, have examined innumerable periodicals, have been in correspondence with missionaries, travelers, and eminent men, among whom I may mention the Rev. Judson Smith, D.D., Corresponding Secretary of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions, to whom I am under special obligations for kind favors; Prof. Jas. D. Dana, of Yale College, the Rev. E. E. Strong, D.D., editor of the *Missionary Herald*; the late Rev. Samuel C. Damon of Honolulu — Father Damon, as he was familiarly called; and the Hon. O. H. Platt, U. S. Senator from Connecticut. And it is proper to say that no statement has been accepted as a fact and permitted to appear in the work until it has been first carefully examined and thoroughly substantiated.

The plan of the work it is hoped will prove particularly acceptable and attractive. A learned professor and two young graduates of a New England university make the tour of the world in an elegant steam yacht, and beguile the time, as they pass from ocean to ocean, and from island to island, in conversations relating to the groups and islands they expect to see.

The Professor represents his college, the young men are brothers, and the party is in search of an uncle of the young men, whose signature is necessary to make valid a transfer of valuable property to the university. When last heard of this uncle was residing on one of the romantic isles of the Pacific; but years have passed without any word or sign from him, or any information regarding him, and therefore it is necessary to seek him out, or secure evidence of his death.

On the passage through the Atlantic the yacht pays a visit to the Bermudas, which are now becoming such a popular winter resort for our invalids and others. They also stop in the West Indies, tarry for a time in the magnificent Bay of Rio, learn something of the Falkland Islands, pass through the Strait of Magellan, and become acquainted with the degraded natives of Terra del Fuego. Having emerged into the Pacific, they visit Juan Fernández, then stopping at Callao, hear news of Mr. Pierpont, the party they are in search of, and so steam to the Galápagos group. From this point the

seeming fugitive leads them an exciting chase all over Polynesia, until at last they come up with him at Lahaina, the port of Maui, one of the Hawaiian Islands, when he agrees to accompany them home. It being necessary, however, that he should visit Amoy and Hong Kong, they return via China and the Indian Ocean, thus passing through Micronesia, and learning much of its coral isles and atolls, hearing, too, something of the Bonin Islands, visiting Loo Choo, seeing Formosa and Amoy, and many other groups and islands. Passing through the China Sea, they catch a glimpse of the Philippines, gain some knowledge of Borneo, and the other isles of Malasia, and after calling at Singapore, steam through the Strait of Malacca, and enter the Indian Ocean. Here, from the lips of the Professor and Mr. Pierpont, they become acquainted with new islands and groups, and at length, after a pleasant passage, come to anchor in Table Bay. A day later the yacht's head is turned toward home, where, after calling at St. Helena, and learning something of the groups in the eastern Atlantic, they arrive in safety, after an absence of more than a year.

In describing islands, districts, villages, and tribes in Polynesia and Micronesia, it has been thought best to adhere closely to one set of names and one form of orthography, though, as all students of Polynesian and Micronesian history are aware, no two authors agree in these particulars. For instance, in writing of the Marquesas and the Marquesans, Porter's *Tieuhoi* is changed into *Taiohae* by Stewart, his *Tayeh* becomes *Teii*, his *Happah* is *Hapa*, his *Typee* is *Taipii* or *Tapii*, and *mattee* (to kill, hurt, etc.) is *mate*, and so on. In giving the preference to the native names for groups, clusters, and islands, I feel that I have taken the only proper course; in other matters I have endeavored to follow the best authorities.

That the volume may prove both entertaining and instructive to the reader, and that he may feel that the time bestowed upon it by him has been well spent, is the sincere wish of

THE AUTHOR.

233 Orange Street,
New Haven, June 2, 1886.



	PAGE.
1 TREE FERNS, TASMANIA,	Frontispiece.
2 NEAR HAMILTON,	78
3 JARDIN DES PLANTS,	96
4 FOREST SCENE, CARRIBEE ISLES,	(Full page) 101
5 BAY OF RIO,	(Full page) 105
6 AVENUE OF PALMS,	(Full page) 109
7 PATAGONIANS,	121
8 FUEGIANS,	122
9 A FUEGIAN SETTLEMENT,	124
10 MOUNTAIN STREAM, JUAN FERNANDEZ,	130
11 TATTOOED MARQUESAN CHIEFS,	167
12 NECK ORNAMENT OF A CHIEF,	168
13 MARQUESAN CHIEF,	174
14 KAVA BOWL,	189
15 FIGHT WITH THE TYPEES,	210
16 GLEN, HEAD OF THE VALLEY OF TIEUHOY, (Full page)	231
17 PIARORO'S HAND,	235
18 FEATHER APRON,	283
19 KUSAIE, CAROLINE ISLANDS,	(Full page) 285
20 A MODEL ATOLL,	(Full page) 293
21 GILBERT ISLAND WARRIORS,	326
22 MISSIONARY STATION AT APAIANG,	328
23 SUNDAY MORNING AT APAIANG,	332
24 VILLAGE IN THE KINGSMILL GROUP,	(Full page) 343
25 UNDER THE COCOANUT PALMS,	(Full page) 353
26 THE HUMAN SACRIFICE,	388
27 NATIVES OF TAHITI,	400

	PAGE.
28 TREE FERNS, (Full page)	419
29 CLOTH MAKING, SAMOA,	435
30 LEUMANU, CHIEF OF APIA,	448
31 FANTULIA, WIFE OF LEUMANU,	449
32 TATTOOING DAY IN SAMOA,	452
33 GILBERT ISLAND MANEABA,	455
34 AN ISLAND VILLAGE, (Full page)	464
35 RIVER YARRA-YARRA AT SAINT HUBERT,	474
36 VINEYARD AT SAINT HUBERT,	475
37 ROAD THROUGH THE GUM TREES, (Full page)	481
38 THE WANDERERS,	487
39 CAMP OF AUSTRALIAN ABORIGINES, (Full page)	489
40 A BOTTLE TREE, (Full page)	493
41 A SOUTH AUSTRALIAN ABORIGINAL,	496
42 BOTANICAL GARDEN AT ADELAIDE,	497
43 GREEN JADE ADZ AND CHISEL,	511
44 COMMON STONE ADZ,	512
45 TWO FACES: TATTOOED CHIEF, CAPTAIN BRADFORD,	518
46 MAORI CHILDREN AT PLAY,	521
47 NATIVES OF THE NEW HEBRIDES,	532
48 A SOLOMON ISLANDER,	536
49 CARVED FEATHER BOX,	538
50 PREPARING DINNER,	541
51 A PALM TREE,	545
52 A NATIVÈ PAPUAN,	550
53 MALAY CHILDREN,	554
54 MALAY WOMAN AND CHILD,	555
55 A CELEBES FOREST,	561
56 RESIDENCE OF THE OVERSEER OF COFFEE CULTURE (Full page)	563
57 MANYUEMA WARRIORS,	565
58 VILLAGE OF THE MALAY ARCHIPELAGO, (Full page)	566
59 AN ISLAND FOREST, (Full page)	568
60 HOUSE AT BATAVIA, (Full page)	571
61 SHARK-TOOTH GAUNTLET,	578
62 IDOL, SOLOMON ISLANDS,	579
63 INCLOSURE AND PLANTATION, TONGA,	582
64 DAUGHTER OF A CHIEF,	584
65 INTERIOR OF A DWELLING, TONGA,	587
66 FIJIAN CLUBS, NOS. 1 AND 2,	606
67 FIJIAN CLUBS, NOS. 3, 4, AND 5,	607
68 A BURÉ OR TEMPLE, FIJI,	608
69 ORATOR'S FLAPPER,	610

	PAGE.
70 HAWAIIAN WOMEN, EATING POI, . . . (Full page)	615
71 HAWAIIAN GIRLS AND PIG,	621
72 CHIEF'S HELMET, HAWAII,	625
73 KILAUEA, HAWAII, (Full page)	629
74 WAIKIKI, NEAR HONOLULU, (Full page)	633
75 MAP OF MICRONESIA, (Full page)	641
76 MARSHALL ISLANDERS,	643
77 PRINCESS OPATINIA,	646
78 CAROLINE ISLANDERS,	649
79 A HOME IN MICRONESIA, (Full page)	653
80 A CANOE HOUSE, MAKIRA BAY,	655
81 HEAD-DRESS,	659
82 UNDER THE BANYANS, (Full page)	661
83 CHINESE OF FORMOSA,	664
84 AMOY,	666
85 MALAY CHILDREN, (Full page)	669
86 A YOUNG DYAK GIRL,	672
87 DYAK GIRLS, (Full page)	673
88 A DYAK VILLAGE,	675
89 A VILLAGE SCENE, SUMATRA, (Full page)	677
90 THE BATANG-HARI, NEAR THE JAMBA, (Full page)	681
91 FLOATING HOUSE ON THE JAMBA,	683
92 A BRIDGE OF INDIAN REEDS, (Full page)	685
93 AQUATIC DWELLINGS,	696

A LIST OF THE GROUPS AND ISLANDS MENTIONED IN THIS WORK.

Andaman chain.	Central cluster
Aur group.	Fayal.
Tabual.	Graciosa.
Australasia.	Pico.
Australia.	St. George.
Tasmania.	Terceira.
Albatross.	Western cluster.
Barren.	Corvo.
Bruny.	Flores.
Chappell.	Bahamas.
Clarke.	Andros.
Flinders.	Atwoods Key.
Franklin.	Crooked Cay.
Hunter.	Eluthera.
Maria.	Grand Bahama.
Robbins.	Great Albaco.
Schouten.	Great Exuma.
Three Hummocks.	Great Inagua.
The Needles.	Harbor Island.
Vansittart.	Hog Island.
Walker.	Little Abaco.
New Zealand.	Little Inagua.
New Ulster.	Long Island.
New Munster.	New Providence.
New Leinster.	Rum Cay.
Austral Islands.	San Salvador or Cat Island.
Oparo.	Spanish Wells.
Raivavai.	Turks Island.
Rututua.	Watling Island or Guana-
St. Elmo.	hani.
Azores.	Balearic Islands.
Eastern cluster.	Majorca.
St. Mary.	Bashee Islands.
St. Michael.	Bay of Rio de Janeiro.

Ilha das Cobras.	Babelthuap.
Bermudas.	Corror.
Castle.	Ewakong.
Coopers.	Keil.
Great Bermuda.	Malakau.
Ireland Island.	Pelewlew.
Longbird.	Uruktapel.
Nonesuch.	Palaos group.
Pagets.	Pingelap.
St. David's.	Ponapé.
St. George's.	Ruk or Hogolu.
Smiths.	Uap or Pillula Rap.
Somerset.	Yap.
Bonin Islands.	Chagos group.
North Island.	Clipperton or Sandwich Islands.
Peel.	Clipperton.
Stapleton.	Cocos or Keeling Islands.
Canary Islands.	Compton Rocks.
Ferro.	De Peyster group.
Fuerteventure.	Nukufetau.
Gomera.	Oaitupa.
Grand Canary.	Elice or Ellice Islands.
Lauzarote.	Fanafuta, or Elice's.
Palma.	Falkland Islands.
Teneriffe.	Eagle.
Cape Verde Islands.	East Falkland.
Caribbee or Windward Islands.	Grand Swan.
Barbadoes.	Keppel.
Granada.	Lively.
Martinique.	Pebble.
St. Lucia.	Saunders.
St. Vincent.	Weddell.
Tobago.	West Falkland.
Trinidad.	Fiji Islands.
Caroline Islands.	Leeward group.
Evalouk group.	Bau.
Kusaie.	Gau or Ngau.
Lukunor.	Kadavu.
Mackenzie group.	Moala.
Matelotus group.	Ovalau.
Mortlock Islands.	Taviuni or Somosomo.
Namalouk.	Vanua Levu.
Nougoura group.	Viti Levu.
Oulleai group.	Windward group.
Pelew Islands.	Batiki.
Angaur.	Lakemba.

Rewa.	Molokai.
Galápagos Islands.	Niihau.
Abingdon.	Oahu.
Albemarle.	Hervey or Cook's Islands.
Barrington.	Aitutaki.
Charles.	Anota.
Chatham.	Hull.
Hood's.	Mangaia.
Indefatigable.	Manki.
James.	Manuai.
Narborough.	Mitiero.
Tower.	Raratonga.
Wenman.	Remitera.
Gilbert Islands.	Takutea.
Northern group.	Hoapin su.
Apaiang.	Indian Archipelago.
Butaritari.	Baly.
Maiana or Hall's.	Borneo.
Makin or Pitt.	Celebes.
Marakei or Matthew's.	Flores.
Tarawa or Knox's.	Java.
Kingsmill group.	Lomblue.
Apamama.	Lombok.
Byron.	Madura.
Drummond or Taputeouea.	Singapore.
Koria.	Sumatra.
Maneba.	Banca.
Manouki.	Engano.
Nanouki.	Poggi Islands.
Sydenham.	Pulo Babi or Hog Island.
Great Britain.	Pulo Nias.
Greater Antilles.	Rupat.
Cuba.	Sibiru.
Hayti or San Domingo.	Sipora.
Jamaica.	Sumba.
Puerto Rico.	Sumbawa.
St. Croix.	Timor.
Greenwich group—30 low coral islands.	Japan.
Hawaiian Islands.	Juan Fernandez.
Hawaii.	Juan Fernandez or Mas-á-Terra.
Kahoolawe.	Mas-á-Fuera.
Kauai.	Santa Clara.
Lania.	Keeling or Cocos Islands.
Maui.	Lacardive Islands.
Melokini.	Ladrones.

- | | |
|---------------------------|---------------------------|
| Aguijan. | Mandioly. |
| Asuncion. | Morty. |
| Bird Islands. | Mortir. |
| Guaru. | Oby. |
| Pagon. | Ternate. |
| Rota. | Tidore. |
| Saypou. | Arrus. |
| Tinian. | Kei Isles. |
| — Leeward Islands. | Timor Laut. |
| Loo Choo. | New Caledonia. |
| Loyalty Islands. | New Caledonia. |
| Madeira Islands. | Isle of Pines or Kunie. |
| Desertas. | Walpole. |
| Madeira. | New Hebrides. |
| Porto Santo. | Ambrim. |
| Madjico Sima Islands. | Annatom. |
| Maldive Archipelago. | Aurora (disappeared). |
| ✓ Marquesas Islands. | Banks. |
| Northern cluster. | Erromango. |
| Fatunhu. | Espiritu Santo. |
| Nukahiva or Madison. | Mallicollo. |
| Shotomiti or Franklin. | Tanna. |
| Uahuga or Washington. | Vaté or Sandwich. |
| Uapoa or Adams. | Whitsuntide. |
| Southern cluster. | Nicobar Islands. |
| Fatuhiva or Magdalena. | Orinoco, Delta of the |
| Hiwaoa or Dominican. | Papuian Islands. |
| Motaue. | Admiralty group. |
| Tohuata. | Admiralty or Basco. |
| Marshall Islands. | Matthias. |
| Radaek chain. | Dampier's group. |
| Ralick chain. | Louisiade Archipelago. |
| Ebon. | New Britain. |
| Mulgrave Islands. | New Ireland. |
| Odia. | Hanover. |
| Otdia. | Papua. |
| Molucca or Spice Islands. | Jobie. |
| Ceram group. | Mysory. |
| Amboyña. | Salawaty. |
| Banda Isles. | Waygion. |
| Booro. | ✓ Paumotou. |
| Ceram. | Anaa or Chain Island. |
| Gilolo group. | Aratica or Carlshoff. |
| Batchian. | Arutua or Rurick Islands. |
| Gilolo. | Clermont de Tounerre or |
| Makian. | Minerva. |

Disappointment group.	Saint Felix Islands.
Otooho.	Ambrosia.
Wytoochee.	St. Felix.
Gloucester group.	Samoa or Navigators Islands.
Hau or Bow Island.	Anuu.
Houden, Hénuake, or Dog Island.	Apolima.
Katiu or Sacken.	Manua.
Kawahe or Vincennes.	Manono.
King George's group.	Ofee.
Ahii or Peacock.	Oloosinga.
Manhii.	Savaii.
Oura.	Tutuila.
Tiokea.	Upolu.
Kings Island.	Islets (uninhabited).
Krusenstein's.	Namoa.
Makima.	Niulapo.
Manga Rever or Gambier Is- lands.	Nutali.
Metia or Aurora.	Nuulua.
Nairsa or Dean's.	Rose.
Pitcairn.	Taputapu.
Raraka.	Scilly Islands.
Serle Island.	Seychelle group.
Tetuaroa.	Solomon Islands.
Philippine Islands.	Bougainville.
Bohol.	Choiseul.
Cebú.	Guadalcanar.
Leyte.	Malayta.
Luzon.	New Georgia.
Mindanas.	San Cristoval.
Mindoro.	Santa Isabella.
Negros.	Sooloo Archipelago.
Panay.	Tahiti or Society Islands.
Samar.	Tahitian cluster.
Phoenix Islands.	Eimeo or Moorea.
Arthur.	Maiaoti.
Enderby's.	Maitia.
Hull.	Tahiti.
McKean.	Tetuaroa.
Phoenix.	Society cluster.
Sidney.	Borobora.
Queen Charlotte's or Santa Cruz Islands.	Huahine.
Santa Cruz.	Marua or Maupiti.
Vanikora or Recherche.	Otaha or Tahaa.
	Raiatea.
	Tubai.
	Taiysu group.

Terra del Fuego and Vicinity.	Cumana.
Cape Horn.	Cyprus.
Clarence.	Dawson (north of Marshall's)
Dawson.	Duncan.
Desolation.	Egmout.
Narborough.	Formosa.
St. Inez.	Gallego.
Statenland.	Greenwich.
Terra del Fuego.	Hong-Kong.
Wollaston.	Howlands.
✓ Tonga Islands.	Iceland.
Tonga cluster.	Ireland.
Eooa.	Jarvis (south of the Herveys).
Tonga.	Jervis (near equator).
Harpi cluster.	Johnston.
Haano.	Lisboa.
Lefooga.	Madagascar.
Tefooa.	Maldens.
Vavao cluster.	Malta.
Hoonga.	Mallon.
Vavao.	Mary's Island.
✓ Union group.	Massachusetts.
Bowditch or Duke of Clarence.	Mauritius or Isle of France.
Fakaafu.	Metia.
Gente Hermosa or Swain's.	Newfoundland.
Nukunono.	Niue or Savage Island.
Oatafu or Duke of York.	Ocean Island.
West Indies (see subordinate groups).	Palmyra.
	Ponynipete.
	Quiros.
	Réunion or Bourbon.

SINGLE ISLANDS.

Ady.	Rodriqué.
American Island.	Rose Island.
Amoy.	St. Brandon.
Ann Ete.	St. Helena.
✓ Baker's.	St. Paul's (Atlantic).
✓ Binnie's.	St. Paul's (Pacific).
✓ Bird Island.	St. Pedro.
Bourbon or Réunion.	San Lorenzo.
Candu.	Savage Isle or Niue.
Ceylon.	Sicily.
Cocos.	Solitary Isle.
Cornwallis.	Tracy's or Oaitupu.
	Tromeliu.
	Wilson Island.

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.

AN EMBARRASSING WILL.

The Pierpont Homestead — The "Green," the pride and boast of the University town — The brothers — Their conversation in the library — A perplexing question — An interruption — Warren Worthington — The proposed munificent gift to the University — The conditions — The wanderer — Truman Pierpont's Will. 35

CHAPTER II.

THE QUESTION SOLVED.

Professor Ezekiel Singleton — His pet theory — His solution of the perplexing question — A magnificent offer, and an agreeable condition — The *Albatross* — Captain James Bradford and his first officer, Jasper Morgan — A pleasant visit on board the floating palace — An interview with the owner of the *Albatross* — A sensation in the University world — Aunt Grace envious — The young divinity student and his sisters. . . . 42

CHAPTER III.

THE BERMUDAS.

Getting under way — Misery of the first days at sea — The captain decides to call at Bermuda — The Professor opens his stores of knowledge — Islands named in honor of their discoverer, Juan Bermudez — Visited by Gonzales Oviedo — Bermudez attempts to stock them with hogs — Prevented — The groups never seen by Columbus — Their situation and formation — Coral reefs — First settlements — Wreck of the *Sea Adventure* — Building of the *Deliverance* and the *Patience* — The commemorative cross — Sir George Somers's return to the islands — His untimely death — Panic-stricken colonists abandon the settlement — New attempts to colonize the islands — Search for am-

bergris—Virginia Company's charter extended by King James I. to embrace Bermuda—Islands sold to the London Company—Governor Moor's administration—Scarcity and want—Potatoes and tobacco first cultivated—Islands divided into tribes and shares—Governor Moor recalled—Governor Tucker appointed—An important era—A Frenchman hanged—Discontent and desertion—The first slaves—The slave trade—The first General Assembly. 48

CHAPTER IV.

THE BERMUDAS—CONTINUED.

The climate of Bermuda—A quotation from Tom Moore—The influence of the Gulf Stream on the climate—Rain and fog—Effect of the climate on agricultural produce—The most agreeable season of the year—Winds—Form of government—Population—Party spirit—Fish and fishing—The most esteemed fish—Their brilliant colors—Peculiar fashion of baiting a hook—A "full bait"—The fisherman taking it easy—Some curious fish—Description of Bermuda—The number of islands—Names of the more important—Eight "tribes"—Hamilton and its general aspect—The stores—The dwellings in the suburbs—The heights beyond the town—Mount Longton—The Government House—Public buildings—"Land, ho!" . . . 59

CHAPTER V.

THE BERMUDAS—CONCLUDED. THE BAHAMAS.

Innumerable isles and islets—A scene of rare and wondrous beauty—The harbor of Hamilton—The signal flag—A multitudinous welcome—Front street—First impressions—"No haekmen about"—The Hamilton Hotel—St. George—A fine harbor—Narrow streets—A delightfully insane old place—The ocean drive—Harrington sound—The Devil's Hole—Plenty of fish—Farewell to Bermuda—The run to the Bahamas—The island of New Providence—Nassau—The Northerner's affection for the "honest town"—The number of the Bahamas—The more important—Their area—Population—Products—Climate—Government—Guanahani or Cat Island—The Aborigines—Their treatment by the Spaniards—Struggle between Spain and England for the possession of the group—Coming to anchor—A natural breakwater—A safe harbor—The sail to the town—Streets of Nassau—Poor taste of the

citizens — The Royal Victoria Hotel — A grand excursion — Return to Nassau — The Government House — Statue of Columbus — The silk-cotton tree — Negroes — Their employment — The public library — Pirates — American Tories — Nassau during the Rebellion — England made to pay — A case of special providence — The sponge yard — Hopetown, the home of the descendants of the buccaneers — The Greater Antilles — The Windward Islands — The Leeward Islands — Is Guanahani, or Watling's Island, the true San Salvador? — The professor wants time to decide. 71

CHAPTER VI.

MARTINIQUE — BARBADOES.

Course laid for the Lesser Antilles — Martinique — The isle of romance — Wild and savage scenery — Origin — Mont Pelée — Earthquakes — Area — Productiveness — Climate — Population — Trade controlled by France — Government — Railway — Island discovered by Columbus — Beautiful St. Pierre — The view from the sea — Canals in the streets — A negro's gift — A strange freak — A fountain that discharges wine and fish — An extraordinary sight — The Jarden des Plantes — The dreaded "iron lance" — The mango d'or — The old jail — A corpse wills property to the city — Shrewd officials — Honest people — Strange customs — High-toned society — Fort de France — Statue of the Empress Josephine — Trois Isles — Traditions — Aimée Dubuc de Rivery — Her romantic story — A slave and a sultana — The Obeah superstition — Barbadoes — Its importance — Situation — Climate — Productiveness — Mont Hillaby — Area — Population denser than any country but Malta — Rapid increase of the blacks — White population at a stand-still — Petroleum — Carlisle Bay — Coral reefs — Fearful hurricanes — Bridgetown — King James's gift — Jamestown — Government — Discovery of the island — When first settled — Plots to seize the island — Off for Rio de Janeiro — Plans for the future — The professor takes to his studies, and the brothers to books and charts — At the entrance to the Bay of Rio. 87

CHAPTER VII.

RIO DE JANEIRO — THE FALKLAND ISLANDS.

The Bay of Rio — Fleets from all nations — Food for reflection for Americans — One of the finest harbors in the world — United States Minister — Letters from home — Important news — City

of Rio de Janeiro—Fine streets—Public buildings—The Imperial Library—The sea wall—Dry docks—Avenue of Palms—Commerce—Population—Off for the Strait of Magellan—The Falkland Islands—Their number—Bays, inlets, and rivers—Climate—No trees—Products—The warrah or wolf fox—Wild animals—Stanley, the only settlement—The discoverer—Darwin's opinion—Trouble with the United States—Killing wild cattle—*Carne con cuero*—Fuel—Starting a fire—"Dinner is ready." 103

CHAPTER VIII.

STRAIT OF MAGELLAN AND TERRA DEL FUEGO—JUAN FERNANDEZ.

The voyage down the South American coast—At the head of the strait—The passage invaluable for steamers—Its length—Fish and game—Grand and gloomy scenery—Terra del Fuego—The Fuegians—Naked and miserable—A feast of whale blubber—Eating their old women—The peninsula of Brunswick—Dawson Island—Clarence Island—Mount Taru—Port Famine—Cape Froward—Mount Sarmiento—Cape Horn—Desolation Island—Trading posts—Cape Tamar—The Narborough Islands—Cape Pilaes—The Pacific Ocean—Juan Fernandez—Size—Santa Clara—Mas-á-Fuera—Origin of the islands—El Yanque—Picturesque appearance of Juan Fernandez—Cumberland Bay—The settlement—Goats—The buccaneers—Wild hogs—Fruit, vegetables, and poultry—Wild horses and asses—Horned cattle and sheep—No reptiles—Robinson Crusoe's cave—Alexander Selkirk's story—His lookout—The tablet—Selkirk not the first man left alone on the island—Returning to the settlement—Replenishing the yacht's larder—Farewell to Robinson Crusoe's island—St. Felix and Ambrosia—San Lorenzo—Callao—Visit to the United States consul—Stephen Wayland—Tidings of Lyman Pierpont—Parting from new friends—Off for the Galapagos Islands. 119

CHAPTER IX.

THE GALAPAGOS GROUP.

Once more on the quarter-deck—The Galapagos—Owned by Ecuador—Discovered by the Spaniards—The name—Albermarle—The other islands—All volcanic—No active volcanoes—Craters seen in action—Recent formation of the group—

Some islands formed later than others — Climate Effects of the Peruvian current — Curious phenomenon — Droughts — Inhabitants — Floriania — Loss of trade — The cause — Animal and vegetable forms peculiar to the islands — Problem presented — Domestic animals — Birds — Their extreme tameness — Curious reptiles — The land tortoises — Their great size — Lizards — The only marine saurian of our epoch — Porter's description of the great land tortoise — Eugene's disgust — Charles Island — The governor — Fresh tidings of Lyman Pierpont — The turtle pen — The conference — The decision — Visit to the settlement — Sweet potatoes and bananas — Pigs and goats — The governor's lament — Return to the yacht — The professor's delight — Snakes — Few insects — Shells — No coral reefs — Remarkable vegetation — Turtle soup and turtle steaks — No signs of the *Rover* — Chatham Island — The brothers meet several monster tortoises — Eugene's queer ride — His fall — Indefatigable and Albermarle Islands — Great Amblyrhynchus — The two species — A fruitless search — Return to Charles Island — News of the *Rover* — The governor made happy — The start for Nukahiva — Eugene eats land tortoise and likes it. . . . 137

CHAPTER X.

THE BROAD PACIFIC — THE MARQUESAS ISLANDS.

Eugene studies the chart of the Pacific — Course of the *Albatross* — Three islands : Gallego, Duncan, and Clipperton — A vast expanse of ocean — St. Paul's Island — The captain's promise — The Marquesas — Their situation — Two clusters — Their number — Population — Names — Formation — General description — Climate — Rainy season — Droughts — Vegetation — Fauna — Birds — Mussels — The people — Are they a branch of the Caucasian race ? — Their appearance — Size and strength of the men — Artificial complexion of the women — Tattooing — Social organization — The taboo — The privileged classes — Polyandry — Conjugal affection — Cannibalism — Kava — Its bad effects — Healthfulness of the people — Most prevalent diseases — Dress — Houses — Regard for the dead — No history — Possession claimed by France — Chester finds a bit of history — A profusion of names — A beautiful picture — Commodore Porter's story — Uahuga — Naked natives — Trading — Value of iron hoops — Surprise at first sight of large animals — The Galapagos tortoise — Old men compared to highly wrought old mahogany — Professional tattooers — Beautiful girls — Their modesty — "Sail ho !" 152

CHAPTER XI.

NUKAHIVA—A BATTLE WITH A NATIVE TRIBE.

Again on the quarter deck—Porter's story continued—Reaches Nukahiva—Massachusetts Bay—Joined by the *Essex Junior*—Three white men come aboard—An Englishman turned Polynesian—Appointed interpreter—Porter lands with marines and sailors—Natives' pleasure at the sound of drums—Astonishment at the regular movements of the men—Effect of the sound of fire-arms—War between the tribes—Destroying property and bread-fruit trees—Convenient messengers—The Happahs warned—An understanding with the Tayehs—The princess Piteenee—The chief Gattanewa—Manner of fortifying a place—The women take possession of the boats and ship—Bedlam—The object of the greatest value in the Marquesas group—Astonishing statement—Sandal-wood—Its value—Gattanewa visits the *Essex*—His appearance—A victim to Kava—Not impressed by Porter's force—Roused from his lethargy by the sight of a whale's tooth—Receives one as a present—Porter exchanges names with him—Begs the Commodore's assistance in his war with the Happahs—His sophistry—The Commodore takes up his quarters on shore—The Happahs' insulting message—The six-pounder—The Tayehs hug and caress the gun for joy—Work on the ship—Mouina the war chief—His satisfaction at the effects of musketry—The Happah's still bent on war—A force ordered against them—The battle in the mountains—Capture of the fortress—The dead Happahs—Gattanewa's astonishment—The taboo—Cannibalism—Gattanewa's wife—Terrified women—Porter re-assures them—He receives a remarkable piece of information. . . . 169

CHAPTER XII.

THE VALLEY OF TIEUHOY—THE TYPEES.

The story resumed—Rejoicing over the victory—Eating raw fish—Language of the Marquesans—A tradition—Inability to pronounce English names—Cocoanut trees—Gathering the fruit—Taro—Sugar-cane—More about Kava—The bread-fruit tree—Its uses and importance—Treaty with the Happahs and other tribes—They build a village for Porter—He and his men live in plenty—The Typees and their allies—Their defiance—War resolved on—Porter builds a fort—Takes possession of the island for the United States and calls it Madison Island—

Gives names to important points — An excursion — A village — The public square — Women and young girls — Their appearance — Remarkable complexion and great beauty — Their attentions to the guests — Urged to remain — Songs and dances — The return to the ship — Ready for war — The departure for the valley of Viechee or Oomi — Arrival — The Typees and their allies in force — The landing and advance — Skirmishing — Lieutenant Downes wounded — The Typees make a bold stand — Serious obstructions — A grave situation — A feint — A slight advantage — The retreat — The Typees elated — The Commodore resolves on a new line of action — The night march — On the mountain tops — Rain — An anxious night — Daylight. . 185

CHAPTER XIII.

THE WAR WITH THE TYPEES.

A volley from the mountain top — Astonishment of the Typees — The Happah village — Suspicious actions of the Happahs — Summary measures — Friendship reestablished — Taking up the line of march — The beautiful valley as seen from the mountain — A delightful scene — The descent — Meeting the enemy — A village captured — More fighting — A brave people — Burning villages — The capital taken and destroyed — The march down the valley — Plunder — Skirmishing — Wonderful fortresses — At the beach — Tribes send in their submission — Returning to the Happah village — A friendly reception — Gatanewa's emotion — Another view of the valley — A long line of smoking ruins — Desolation and horror — Return to the valley of Tieuhoy — The Typees come to terms — A profusion of presents — Peace established throughout the island — Excursions — Distributing seeds — Partiality for wheat — Other gifts — Chief place of worship — An astonishing god — Marquesans idea of a future state — Selling their gods and the bones of their relatives — Children in religion — Porter tabooed — Tattooing — Each tribe tattooed after a different fashion — Preparing for sea — Stooping liberty — Discontent of the men — Grief of the girls — Porter sails with two ships — A part of his force left behind — What happened after he left — His defeat — His reception at home — "The Hero of the Pacific." . . . 206

CHAPTER XIV.

UAHUGA—NUKAHIVA.

The professor finds many corroborations of Porter's statements—
 The *Vincennes'* visit to the group—Uahuga—Description—
 Sudden appearance of the natives—Their excitement—A scene
 of wild and picturesque beauty—Invitations to land—Music
 by the band—Its wonderful effects on the islanders—The ap-
 proach to Nukahiva—Tower Bluff—Bay and valley of Oomi,
 the home of the Typees—A visit from the Happaes—At war
 with the Typees, as usual—The new-comers invited to espouse
 their cause—Valley of Tienhoy—Its great beauty—Grandeur
 of the mountain scenery—Site of Porter's encampment—
 Swarms of natives—Arrival of the chieftains—Prince Moana
 —The regent Haapé—The chief Piaroro—His striking appear-
 ance—"Music hath charms"—The Captain's taboo—Sur-
 prised women—A strange ship—The regent's house—Habi-
 tations of the people—Their bleached thatching—Its remarkable
 appearance—The wife of Haapé—His female relatives—The
 bed of the whole family—Other furniture—Eager for presents—
 An excursion—A profusion of useful trees—A *tahua* or am-
 phitheatre—A *meae* or temple—The chaplain followed by ad-
 miring crowds—Effects of the taboo on the women and common
 people—Tabooed food—The tabooed class jealous of their
 dignity—Strange cause for deadly vengeance—Nice distinc-
 tions. 227

CHAPTER XV.

THE MARQUESANS: THEIR HABITS AND AMUSEMENTS.

The *Tahuas*—Dancing and the dancers—Strange customs—A
 scene such as Cook beheld—Gracefulness and taste of the na-
 tives—The favorite hue—Turbans—Dress of the females—
 Their beauty—Their wonderful complexion—Drums—Male
 singers—A Marquesan Adonis—His dress—Boy dancers—
 Their strange dress—Female singers—*Koika*—Passion of the
 people for amusements—*Kaioi*—The chaplain retires from the
tahua in disgust—Pure heathenism—Traditions—Origin of
 the islands—Origin of men and fish—Knowledge of other isl-
 ands—Introduction of the cocoanut tree—Americans and Eu-
 ropeans regarded as gods—Porter a very great god—Not a
 trace of his occupation to be found—Visit to the Typees—

Suspicious of the strangers—The cause—Messenger of peace—Good feelings established—"The chief of the gods"—His compeer in civil life—A false rumor—Good advice: Cultivate the art of peace—"With Opotee it was all fight"—An interesting scene—Confidence of the Typees won—They sleep on board the ship—A visit on shore—Much ceremony—The Tana's house—Fair promises—A *meae*—A doubled-face god—A study for an artist—Another interesting scene—A walk inland—Manifestations of ill will—Flight to the shore—A mystery—The Bay of Oomi—Valley of Hakapoa—Visit to Tanatini, the prophet of the Happaahs—Sail ho!—"It is a schooner, and American built!" 245

CHAPTER XVI.

CORALS—ATOLLS.

The chase—The *Columbia*—News of the *Rover*—Good advice—Uahuga in sight—The Bay of Tieuhoy again—Natives and Frenchmen—Mr. Clark—A week on the island—Few signs of advancement among the natives—The lack of progress due to the French—Influence of American missionaries for good—The United States and England to blame for having suffered France to gain such a foothold in the Pacific—Among the Typees—Startling news from the yacht—The hasty return—Flight of the *Rover*—The pursuit—Among the Marquesans—The truth flashes on Eugene—A perfidious Frenchman—Heading for the Paumotous—Corals—Many species—Variety of forms and hues—"Nothing but limestone"—The red coral of the Mediterranean and Red seas—Black coral—Millepora—Fernante Imperato—Peyssonnel—Coral blossoms belong to the animal, and not the vegetable kingdom—A zoöthome—A polyp—Coral the stony frame of the polyps—How the polyps are reproduced—Brain coral—Star coral—Other varieties—In many corals the living portion is but a thin outer part of the mass—Corals widely distributed—Limits of coral reefs—Range in depth of reef-forming corals—Coral found thousands of feet below the surface of the sea—Darwin's theory—Darwin supported by Dana—The bottom of the ocean slowly subsiding—The hint given by the Gambier Island—How reefs and atolls are formed—Captain Herandeen's evidence—Ponynipete Island—Evidences of a lost race—Stone walls, temples, and forts sinking out of sight—An ancient stone quarry—Heedless of the flight of time. 264

CHAPTER XVII.

KUSAIE—COMPLETED ATOLLS.

Kusaie—The small island—Ancient canals—Remarkable stone walls—Wonderful ruins—Ignorance of the natives on the subject—Captain Bradford's theory—The ancient stronghold of pirates—A reasonable explanation—How coral islands become nearly circular and filled in—Swain's Island—Jarvis's Island—Dead reefs—Barrier reefs—Paumotou a vast island cemetery—The completed atoll—Coral-made land literally *sea-born*—A model atoll—The inhabitants of atolls—Fakaafu or Bowditch Island—A type of a large part of the coral islands—Among the last discovered—Islanders ignorant of any other land or people—The whites taken for gods from the sun—Dread of the natives—Soon become familiar—Primitive fashion of dress—The sacred house—The Deity—Oatafu or Duke of York's Island—The inhabitants—Their chief village—Houses—Quays—Duke of Clarence Island—Henuake or Dog Island—A fascinating description—Tame birds—Droll sights—Hermit or soldier crabs—Chester gets the soldier and the robber crab mixed—The Professor corrects him—He appeals to Darwin—Acknowledges defeat. 284

CHAPTER XVIII.

THE PAUMOTOU ARCHIPELAGO.

The French interest in Paumotou—Catholic mission at Maugareva—Population of the group—Anaa or Chain Island—Its dense population—How acquired—Abundance of food—Influence of the missionaries—"Out of darkness into light"—Distributing presents—Shaved heads—Cleanliness next to godliness—Fine children—The bane of the islanders—A comical old chief—His munificent present—Mysterious sickness—The chief's brother-in-law—A deep lagoon—Amusing leave-taking—Some islands of the group—Tetuaroa—Metia or Aurora—An uplifted island—Wonderful caverns—Meager history of the Paumotous—Hau or Bow Island—The ambitious Tomatiti—Advance in civilization—Few advantages for trade—The pearl fishery—Native divers—First sight of a coral island—King George's Island—Mauhil—Ahii—Course laid for Tahiti. 307

CHAPTER XIX.

THE GILBERT ISLANDS.

Ellice's group — Its appearance — Size — Native name — Inhabitants — De Pyster Islands — Tracy's Island — The Union group — The Gilbert Islands — Character of the inhabitants — Mr. Bingham's testimony — Gilbert Island warriors — Their weapons and armor — Apaiang — Reception of the first missionaries — "Happy Home" and its surroundings — Sailing on the lagoon — Preaching in the maneabas — Interruptions — Women and their dead — A skull as a constant companion — Strange burial place — Effects of toddy — The first church — Sunday morning on Apaiang — Climbing cocoanut trees — The Pandanus tree — Papai — Native houses — The Surf-boat — Tarawa — A tempest — A perilous feat — Marakei — A lovely coral isle — A printing press — Its good work — A Gilbert Island boy — His astonishment at the sight of mountains and streams — His ruin — The deadly effect of the climate — The Gilbert Islands of to-day — A grain of comfort — The southern cluster or Kingsmill Islands — The inhabitants — Madin or Pitt Island — Houses — Maneabas — War and weapons of war — Dress — Powers and privileges of the chiefs — Eating an enemy — Preserving skulls. 323

CHAPTER XX.

THE KINGSMILLS AND OTHER CORAL ISLANDS.

Taputeouea or Drummond Island — The inhabitants — Great thieves — Sometimes eat human flesh — Weapons — Jealous women — Some good points — A Gilbert Island gentleman — Vegetation of coral islands — The cocoanut palm — Its many uses — Not found on coral islands never inhabited — The Pandanus — The Pisonia — Other trees and plants — Rose Island — Other Islands — Drinking water on coral islands — Wells fenced with special care — Curious water cavern on Ocean Island — Strange superstition — Water famines — Pumpkins — A beautiful island — Water on the Gilbert Islands — Taro plantations — Fresh-water fish — Otdia — Tabual — Rain the source of water supply — Birds — Their fearlessness — Their habits — Their vast numbers — Service sometimes required of the tropic bird — Game birds — Social habits of the birds — Fish — Drift logs — Stones brought in roots — Pumice and resin — Volcanic ashes — A coral island

a poor place for human development—Limited productions and poverty of language—Speculations—The one mineral—Earthquakes and storms—Houses secured to trees and stakes—Dividing a storm—Thanks. 349

CHAPTER XXI.

TAHITI OR SOCIETY ISLANDS.

Discovery—The name of the group—Names of the several islands—Their mountainous character—Picturesqueness—Delightful streams—Habitations of the islanders—Climate—Fruits and vegetables—Botanic garden—Cotton and coffee—Natives averse to work—Animals—Birds—Domestic fowl—Origin of the natives—Beauty of the women—Appearance of the men—Population—Foreigners—Tattooing no longer practiced—Importations and exportations—Papiete—Public buildings—Harbor—Early history of Tahiti—Pomare II.—Missionaries—Queen Pomare—French Catholic priests expelled—Arrival of the French man-of-war—Unjust and arbitrary proceedings—Flight of the queen—The French firmly established—Death of the Queen—Last king of Tahiti—The annexation to France—Brilliant festival—The Areoi society—What is known of it—Original character—Belief—Pernicious effect on the people—Convenient fictions—Only redeeming point—Human sacrifices—The ceremonies. 369

CHAPTER XXII.

TAHITI—SAVAGE ISLAND.

First glimpse of Eimeo—Tahiti—Papiete harbor—The American consul—Captain Joseph Beach—The ladies at the consulate—News of the *Rover*—The excursion party—The start—The manebas or district houses—Appearance of the country—A glimpse of Eimeo—A lovely village—Crystalline streams—The village girls—Their sweet singing—Tender adieus—Coffee and cotton plantations—The wild guava—Mango trees—Some credit due the French—A stroll in the orange groves—Bathing with lady assistants—A fish dinner—Crayfish—A bamboo cage—The peninsula—A delightful drive—A ball—Arrival of the *Rover*—Daniel Kirby the mate—Another disappointment—Niue or Savage Island—Situation—The Niuanas—Former reputation—A terrible law—The fate

of all travelers — Paint — Appearance — Dress — Ornaments — Weapons — Warlike, but not conquerors — Fate of invaders — Not cannibals — Temperate — Polygamy — Work of the missionaries — Morals — Punishments — Good sailors — Dwellings — Disposing of the dead — Caverns — Fresh water — Character of the island — Traditions — Dinner. 394

CHAPTER XXIII.

THE HERVY GROUP — THE SAMOAN ISLANDS.

Captain Beach makes a proposition — An excursion to Eimeo — Wonderful beauty of the island — Tree-ferns — A tamanu grove — Great changes — Farewell to Tahiti — The Hervey group — The several islands — Raratonga — The natives — The Captain's experience — Missionaries — John Williams — His unhappy death — The Australs — The Samoan Islands — The daughters of Samoa — Why called Navigators — The isles of the group — Area — Situation — Sudden appearing and disappearing of a volcano — Great age of the Islands — Ancient ruins — A stone quarry — Wonderful caverns — Remarkable springs and lakes — Quiros Island — Climate and vegetation — Appearance of the isles from the sea — Trees — The banyan — Other trees — The paper mulberry — Cloth making — Ava and ava drinking — Shrubs and flowers — Climbing ferns — Fruits and vegetables — Their abundance — Bread-fruit — Yams — Taro — Indigo — Nutmeg — Animals — Birds — The dodo — Pigeons — Kingfisher — Vampire bat — Reptiles — The crowing snake. 416

CHAPTER XXIV.

THE SAMOAN ISLAND — CONTINUED.

The Samoans — A high type of their race — Fine appearance of the men — Beauty of some of the women — Not warlike — Averse to labor — Not ambitious for wealth — Caste — The chief of Apia — Fantulia, his wife — Politeness — Women in time of war — The maid of the village — A virtuous people — Night dances — Polygamy — Dress — Tattooing — Samoan Houses — Water-crafts — Bonito fishing — "Great Days," and taking the palolo — Language of the Samoans — Traditions — Discovery — La Perouse, and the tragedy near Massacre Bay — Effects — The martyr Williams, again — Population — Church

relations — “Fine mats” — Manue — Mammoth cocoanuts — Rose Island — Tutila — Pago-Pago — Its importance — Ceded to the United States — Nopolu — Apia — Its fine harbor — The white population — A glimpse of Tutuila — Island villages — In the harbor of Apia — Many Americans — Morris Davis — The U. S. consul — News from home — A tender epistle — Germany wants Samoa — The triple agreement — England growing suspicious — Bismarck’s policy — On the track of “George Thompson” — Meeting with old friends — Prof. Gregory prepares to give some account of his travels. 445

CHAPTER XXV.

AUSTRALIA — TASMANIA.

Australia — What is comprehended by the term — Port Philip — Melbourne — Fine streets — Fine public and private buildings — The University — Water-works — Public gardens — Railways — The Yarra-Yarra — Vineyards at St. Hubert’s — Sydney — The colleges and university schools — Museum — Library — Port Jackson — An excursion — Country towns — Fine roads — Appearance of the country — The Eucalypti — Wonderful groves — Peculiarities of the Eucalypti — Road through the gum trees — Silence of the forests — Parrots, parrakeets, and cockatoos — The harlequin — Bronzewing — Other birds — Animals — The dingo — The kangaroo — Other pouched animals — The duck-bill — The aborigines — Their habits — Rapidly diminishing — Queensland — The bottle-tree — South Australia — Adelaide — Its beauty and prosperity — Almost ruined by gold — The botanical garden — Wool — A hairy Australian — Sheep-runs and cattle stations — A lonely life — Tasmania — Bass Strait — Area — Bays and harbors — Mountains — Rivers and lakes — Soil — Climate — Fruit and vegetables — Timber — Tree-ferns — Minerals — Animals — Government — Population — Adjacent Islands — History — Importance of wool — Convicts — Aborigines — Their removal and extermination — Good-night. . 472

CHAPTER XXVI.

NEW ZEALAND — OTHER GROUPS AND ISLANDS.

Still no signs of the missing relative — Visit to the shore — Seth left in charge of the yacht — Under the breadfruit trees — New Zealand — New Ulster — Wellington — Auckland — A very Eng-

lish town—Public buildings—The Museum—Maori curiosities—Green jade tools and weapons—Carved feather-box—The *huia*—The *moa*—Drinking-places in Auckland—Various islands of the group—Area—Mountains and volcanoes—Minerals—Vegetation—Animals—The missionaries' work—Government—The Maoris—Physical and mental qualities—Two faces—The dark natives—Tattooing—Affectionate parents—Children's games—Pahs—Their use—Wars—Sea fights—Girls and married women—Polygamy—Changes—Funny incidents—A picnic under the breadfruit trees—Norfolk Island—The group—Area—Features of the country—Soil—Products—Mount Pitt—Animals—Convicts—The Pitcairn Islanders—Isle of Pines—Rich soil and restless natives—Their habits and disposition—Use they made of firearms—A change for the better—Dressing the hair—Strange custom among the women—Their place in society—New Caledonia—Numea—The Paris of the Pacific—Wonderful ruins—Cannibalism—Salt water as a beverage—The women—Dress—War-canocs—Weapons—The French establishment—Loyalty Islands—The New Hebrides—Erromango—The most important islands—Port Sandwich—Disappearance of Aurora—Volcano—Surface of the islands—Vegetation—Fruit and vegetables—Animals—A diminutive pig—Natives—Customs and dress—The betel nut—Not navigators—Discovery—Queen Charlotte's group—Vanikova—Scene of La Perouse's disaster—Solomon Islands—Treacherous natives—Their love of human flesh—Tortoise-shell—Manner of trading—Appearance—The most important of the islands—Their beauty and fertility—Abundance of fruit and spices—Discovery—A pious fraud that did not work—Mendaña—His death—Tom Grayson appears. 509

CHAPTER XXVII.

PAPUA.—THE MOLUCCA ISLANDS.

The *Rover* in port—The party adjourn to the yacht—Under the awning—Tambora or New Ireland—Area—Mountains and forests—Harbors—Productions—Natives—A thrifty people—Attractive villages—Preparing dinner—Animals—Sirara or New Britain—Productions—Inhabitants—Louisiade archipelago—Dampier's groups—Admiralty Islands—Papua—Size—Little known—The coast—Dutch possessions—Mountain ranges—Rivers—Forests—Palms—Birds of Paradise—

Many species — Birds' dancing parties — Native hunters — The Papuan race — Native villages — Molucca Islands — Situation — Clusters — Volcanic — Productions — Inhabitants — The Malay race — Disposition — History of the Spice Isles — The treacherous Dutch — Amboyna — Wonderful productiveness — Importance to the Dutch — Trickery — Banda or Nutmeg Isles — Timor — Productions and inhabitants — Celebes — Its outline and immense sea-coast — Size and population — Animals — Forests — Fruits — Rice and coffee — Gold — Inhabitants — The Bughis — The Manyemas — The Mandhars — Seaports — Sunda Islands — Malay villages — Java — Area — Population — Fertility — Mountain ranges — Lovely valleys — Lakes and rivers — Forests — Earthquakes — Products — Domestic animals — Climate — The Dutch masters of the isle — Batavia — Its wealth and population — Wild game of Java — Black tigers — Rhinoceros — White eagles — Portuguese — Natives — Ruins of ancient temples — Mammoth bats — Reflections — An interruption — The *Unrest* — Lyman Pierpont again gives his pursuers the slip — Shark's-tooth gauntlet — Farewell to Samoa. . . . 539

CHAPTER XXVIII.

TONGA — FIJI ISLANDS.

Tonga discovered by Tasman — Visited by Cook — A misnomer — Number of the isles — Of coral and volcanic formation — Climate — Natives — Fruits and vegetables — Animals — The sacred isle — Captain Croker's defeat — No exports but cocoanut oil — Port Refuge — Fine appearance of the natives — Complexion — Beautiful women — Women well treated — Dwellings — Dress — Government — Love of war — Mythology — Bulotu — Work of the missionaries — French Catholics — A storm — The Captain's apprehensions — Tonga — No *Unrest* — A cromlech — Vavao — Port Refuge — A warm reception — The chief Talo — News of the *Unrest* — Visit to the king — Invitation to a shooting party — Rat shooting — Pleasant sport — Description of the game — A famous cavern with a submarine entrance — Return to the yacht — Strangers from Hapai — Disagreeable news — Visit from the king and his friends — Under way for Fiji — Number of the Fiji islands — Belong to England — Declined by the United States — Population — Viti Levu — Suva harbor — Towns — Vanua Levu — Bay of Nasavusavu — Mountains and streams — Taviuni — Great eels — Ovalau — Its beauty and fertility — Levuka — Its population and buildings — Bau —

Lakemba — Vegetation of Fiji — Cotton — Coffee — Fish — The natives — Appearance and habits — Dress — Ear ornaments — Red paint and oil — Early marriages — Strange customs — Pagans and pagan chiefs — Cannibalism — Fijian weapons — Burés or temples — Speech-making — Orators' Flappers — Supper. 580

CHAPTER XXIX.

HAWAIIAN ISLANDS.

Islands on every hand — Suva harbor — No signs of the *Unrest* — Bau — A week among the Fiji Islands — Course laid for the Hawaiian group — Maui — A great sugar plantation — 10,000 acres of sugar-cane — Twenty miles of ditches — Thousands of laborers — Sugar by the ton — "Tired" natives — Imported labor — Population — Fine appearance of the natives — Beauty of the women — A vision of loveliness — Dress — Ornaments — Pets — Tender care for a pig — Women industrious and hospitable — Fish ponds — *Poi* — Physical condition — Educated Hawaiian ladies — Helmets — Volcanoes — Kilauea — Mauna Loa — Living in a state of uncertainty — A narrow escape — Honolulu — Climate — Waikiki — Valley of Nuuanu — Manoa — Fish markets — Harbor of Lahaina — The *Unrest* in port — A visit to the yacht — The town — Meeting with Lyman Pierpont — His agreeable announcement — Departure for Honolulu — Kauai — Niihau — Other isles — Off for China. 611

CHAPTER XXX.

MICRONESIA.

Once more on the quarter-deck — Isolated isles — The Marshall group — Annexed to Germany — Result — Two clusters — Appearance of the natives — Tattooing — Clothing — Caroline archipelago — Vast extent — High islands — Inhabitants — Of mixed origin — The more important isle — Bad influences — Work of the missionaries — Princess Opatinia — The Motlocks — Ruk — Great changes there — Many governments in the Carolines — Ponapé — Yap — Oulleai — The Evalouks — The two races of Ruk — Nongoura — A fine race of people — Well informed — Their religion — Rats — Greenwich group — Inhabitants — The Pelew Islands — Facts concerning them — The Matelotus — The Mackenzie group — Canoe houses at Makira Bay — The Ladrões — Other groups of the same name — Bonin Islands — The Loo Choo group — Banyans. 640

CHAPTER XXXI.

THE CHINA SEA AND INDIAN OCEAN.

Groups of Chinese isles — Formosa — Mineral wealth — Exports and imports — Dutch settlements — Chinese of Formosa — Barbarians of the mountains — Amoy — Its importance — Hong-Kong — The Philippines — History — Typhoons — Borneo — Great size — Physical features — High mountains — Climate and productions — The wonderful pitcher plant — Durions — Sarawak — Inhabitants — Chinese — Malays — The Dyaks — Land Dyaks — Sea Dyaks — Head-hunters — Fine looking men — Beautiful women — Young Dyak girls — Old at thirty — Architecture — A Dyak village — Sumatra — Picturesque villages — Homes in trees — Bamboo houses — The Dutch — Volcanic mountains — Great plains — Wild animals — Birds and insects — Productions — Minerals — Gold and precious stones — Rivers — Floating villages — Floating houses on the Jambi — The aborigines — Malays — Other races — Few Europeans — Dutch wisdom — Tree ferns — Indian reeds — Bridges of reeds — Native rulers — Singapore — The island — Size — Physical features — Productions — Magnificent climate — Tigers and Chinamen — Population — The city — Chinese quarter — Public buildings — Malay quarter — Pearl Hill — Government house — The suburbs — Drives — Botanical garden — Immense commerce — Strait of Malacca — Course laid for Cape of Good Hope — History of Singapore — Purchase of the island by Great Britain — Groups and islands of the Indian Ocean — Ceylon — Its great importance — Physical features — Adam's Peak — Last trace of Buddha on earth — Animals — Elephants — History — Population — Mauritius — The scene of St. Pierre's "Paul and Virginia" — Beauty of the isle — Bold and grand mountain outlines — Its relations to Réunion — Products — Exports — Population — Races — History — Madagascar — The late war with France — Results — Beautiful appearance of the island — Wonderful vegetation — Curious plants — Immense forests — Cape Town — Table Bay — Attractions of the city — Botanical garden — Public buildings — Canals — Table Mountain — The yacht's head turned homeward — St. Helena — Ascension Island — St. Paul — Cape Verdes — The Canaries — Madeira Islands — The Azores — Off the Caribbees — Isles of the delta of the Oronoco — Aquatic dwellings — Their inhabitants — The voyage home — In the harbor of the university town — Friends flock to the yacht — Gracie Richards — Miss Kilborne — Words of praise from Warren Worthington and the president — Eugene's apt reply — Finis. 663

THE ISLES OF THE SEA.

CHAPTER I.

AN EMBARRASSING WILL.

A LARGE frame house, of a somewhat antiquated style of architecture, fronting on a neatly-kept public square,—the “green,” as it was called,—the pride and boast of the university town. In this house a pleasant room, with a window opening to the south and commanding a fine view of the green; and on the east side, and projecting into a garden, a deep bay, which contained an arm-chair, a book-rest, and a globe.

This room was the library—not only in name but in fact, as the hundreds of tomes which lined its walls sufficiently attested.

In the center of the apartment was a table, on which was spread an official map of Polynesia; and bending over the table, and carefully following the tracks of certain famous navigators, as laid down on the chart, were two young men, evidently brothers.

“Well, Eugene,” said the elder, presently looking up, while the point of the pencil he held rested on one of the Hawaiian group of islands, “I don’t see but that our best plan will be to go directly to Kanai after all; and we can be guided afterwards by the information we obtain there.”

“Then you really think we shall be able to learn something at Kanai, Chester?” asked the younger.

"Undoubtedly," was the reply. "Uncle Lyman, from all accounts, was a man to be remembered; and even if he has been gone from the island for years, more than one of the natives will be able to tell us something about him. And then, for anything we know, he may be there still."

"That's hardly likely," said Eugene, with an emphatic shake of the head; "if he were there, we should have heard from him in some way before this."

"I don't see as that necessarily follows," rejoined his brother.

"Wouldn't he have answered some of our letters — and on such an important subject, too?"

"I'm not at all sure that he would."

"He used to write to father sometimes; and to Uncle Timothy," said Eugene.

"Yes," replied Chester; "but father had not received a letter from him for some time before his death, and it is years since he has written to Uncle Timothy."

"Still," persisted Eugene, "I must believe he would answer Aunt Grace's urgent letters, and you know Uncle Timothy, and even Uncle Richards have written him about this matter."

"Yes, I know; but he never liked his sister Grace very well, and for that reason is not likely to pay any attention to her letters or those of her husband."

"But Uncle Timothy, he always liked him?"

"True; but he would see that by obliging him he would at the same time be obliging Aunt Grace, and perhaps he has good reasons for not wishing to do that."

"But he ought not to spite *us*, *we* never did him any harm," exclaimed Eugene, almost indignantly.

"Of course not," smiled his brother; "but what interest can he feel in us, never having seen us?"

"We are our father's sons, and our father was always his best friend."

"You are right, Eugene; but for all that, I am inclined to believe Lyman Pierpont may still be on the island of Kanai."

"How do you expect to get there, Chester?" asked the younger, after a moment's pause.

"Nothing easier," was the reply. "Take the rail to San Francisco, then the steamer to Honolulu. From thence it is not more than one hundred and fifty miles to Waimea, in Kanai, and we shall find sailing vessels making the trip every few days."

"Ah! but if we don't find him there, nor any traces of him, what then?"

"Hum, we shall have to look for him elsewhere, I suppose. He's somewhere among all these islands, of that I am confident," and with a comprehensive gesture, he indicated the several groups that go to make up what is known as Polynesia.

"There is little doubt of that, I think — if he's alive," said Eugene.

"Of course, if he's alive. But if he's dead we can obtain proof of the fact, and that will be quite as satisfactory to Mr. Worthington and to the college."

"But if he married, and has left a widow and children?"

"Then, if it was such a marriage as would hold good in our courts, they must sign the deed."

"But, Chester, how are we to get around among all these islands,—provided, of course, it should prove necessary to do so?"

"There'll be no great trouble in visiting all of the Hawaiian group."

"Of course not; and the others?"

"That would be more difficult. We should be obliged to trust to chance vessels — whalers and the like."

"In that case, it might take years to find out what we want to know, and Mr. Worthington would not be willing to submit to any such delay."

“ You are right, Eugene ; but I don’t see — ”

At that moment there was a ring at the front-door bell, and a little later Professor Ezekiel Singleton was announced, and shown into the room.

Warren Worthington, the person mentioned by the brothers in the conversation just related, was a man somewhat advanced in life, having just entered his sixty-seventh year. He had made an immense fortune in mining operations, on the Pacific coast ; and having settled up his business affairs, had come East to spend the evening of life, and to carry out a long-cherished plan—to found in his native State some institution, which should not only prove a blessing to his fellow-men, but at the same time serve to perpetuate his own memory.

He established himself in the university town—his native place—and soon the needs of the ancient college engaged his attention. After giving the matter due consideration, he announced that, on certain conditions, he would give \$1,500,000 to establish a post-graduate department,—something the president and fellows had very much at heart.

The conditions he named were these : that a certain plot of ground, contiguous to the land already owned by the college, and occupying a little more than half a square, should be secured, and the title to every inch of it be pronounced perfect by three leading members of the county bar ; that the buildings to be erected on this plot should be after plans and elevations which had received his unqualified approval ; and finally, that the new department should receive his name.

So far as it could do so, the corporation accepted the conditions ; but just here came the first great difficulty : The plot of ground designated by Mr. Worthington belonged to the heirs of Trueman Pierpont, who had

owned the whole block, the property having come to him by direct inheritance from his great ancestor, Noah Pierpont, the friend and associate of Davenport, who, with his little company, had first settled the place. He had disposed of a part of it to the college in his lifetime, with the understanding that at least one of his sons should have an honorable position among the faculty, and Leonard, and later, Timothy, was endowed with a professorship.

Trueman Pierpont left four children: Leonard, the father of Chester and Eugene, who had now been dead some ten years; Timothy, a doctor of divinity, and professor of Sacred Literature in the Department of Theology; Grace, the wife of Rev. Samuel Richards, D.D., professor of the Greek Language and Literature in the same department; and Lyman, who, having taken offense at his father's evident partiality for his other and more serious-minded children, had, at the age of eighteen, suddenly taken his departure from his father's house, and was next heard of as a favorite at the court of the "king of the Cannibal Islands."

Years passed; the king died, and another reigned in his stead, "who knew not Lyman," and the ex-counselor and favorite withdrew to a plantation on the island of Kanai, a gift of his friend the late king. From this point, from time to time, he wrote to his brothers, Leonard and Timothy, with whom he had no quarrel; but suddenly, a few years before Leonard's death, his letters ceased to arrive, and from that time nothing more was heard of him.

To the great disgust of his sister Grace, who had never treated him fairly, and who in consequence was always his aversion, their father, while on his death-bed, made a new will, dividing his property, both real and personal, into four equal parts, one part to go to the heirs of Leonard, a second to Timothy and his heirs forever, a third to

Grace and her interesting family, and the last to Lyman, or, in the event of his death, to his lawful heirs and representatives. The will, moreover, further provided that the real estate should never be sold without the full consent of Lyman, or until conclusive evidence had been obtained that he had died without issue and intestate.

Under these conditions, what was to be done? Warren Worthington offered one million dollars for the land, but he would not give a single dollar unless he could have a perfect title—one which no lawyer could question. Mrs. Richards was most anxious to dispose of her interest, “for the sake of her dear children,”—a son and two daughters, aged twenty-five, twenty-two, and twenty, respectively. Doctor Timothy could not but wish to oblige his college, and Chester and Eugene were no less anxious to favor their *alma mater*. But there were the disagreeable facts: Lyman Pierpont was somewhere in the vast Pacific Ocean, and a clear title could not be given without his signature, or proof positive that he was dead, without issue.

Aunt Grace wrote many letters to her absent brother, and bemoaned her hard lot, not once thinking that to her disagreeable ways and baneful influence with her father was due, more than to any other cause, his absence and continued silence. Doctor Timothy cogitated over the problem helplessly, while at last Chester and Eugene solved it.

It was one day while the brothers were in the library together. Eugene was seated before the open grate, cutting the leaves of the *Atlantic Monthly*. Chester was standing in the bay, thoughtfully turning the globe with the tip of his finger. At length, as his eye rested on the word “Kanai,” he stopped. He noted the distance between that island and the others of the group, and then the space that separated them from the American continent.

"Eugene," he said, suddenly, "why not go to Hawaii — you and I — and find this lost uncle of ours?"

"That *is* an idea!" exclaimed Eugene, throwing down his book and starting to his feet; "and practical, too, I should think."

"Of course."

"Let's go and talk it over with Uncle Timothy."

They went. Uncle Timothy, in a state of great excitement, hurried them into the presence of the president. The president was evidently pleased, and asked them to call again the next day. Meantime he had a talk with the several members of the corporation, and also with Mr. Worthington.

"Let them go," said the latter; "my offer shall hold good for two years. If at the end of that time a good and sufficient deed is not forthcoming — well, we shall see."

It was now more than two weeks since the young men had first visited the president. They had had many talks in the meantime, and as certain rumors had reached them to the effect that Lyman Pierpont had been seen at Upola, at Tongataboa, at Nukahiva, one of the Marquesas group, and at other points in Polynesia, they had thought it might be well to go first to the Samoan group; but at last, as we have seen, Chester decided that it would be best to go to Kanai in the first place, and take that as a starting point.

But the serious question had arisen, what means should they employ to explore all Polynesia, and perhaps Micronesia and Melanesia, in case they should be baffled in their search through the Hawaiian group. They had but two years to work in. They must make the most of that time. Things were looking serious, when Professor Singleton entered the room.

CHAPTER II.

THE QUESTION SOLVED.

PROFESSOR EZEKIEL SINGLETON was a remarkable-looking man. He was forty-eight years of age, and appeared at least ten years older. He was tall and lank, with a face and expression very like Abraham Lincoln's before he became president and allowed his beard to grow. Indeed, his whole appearance reminded one of Lincoln, so much did he resemble that distinguished statesman.

Ezekiel Singleton was professor of palæontology, and an enthusiast in his chosen line of inquiry. He had also made a thorough study of geology and mineralogy, and conducted one division of a class in those sciences. He was a great favorite with the students, and whenever he started out on one of his excursions, a swarm of them accompanied him.

It had long been his desire to visit Polynesia. He had a theory in connection with that portion of the globe which he thought a personal visit could not fail to establish. His wishes on this subject were well known to the president and others connected with the university; and Warren Worthington, who had formed his acquaintance soon after making the university town his home, and who liked him exceedingly, was not unacquainted with them.

"Take a seat, Professor," said Chester, cordially, as the palæontologist walked nervously about the room.

"Don't think I have time to sit down, thank you," said the Professor, casting a hasty glance at the map on the table, then hurrying across to the bay, and twirling the

globe around until the Pacific, with its myriads of islands, was uppermost. "A fine globe, this, my friends. By the way, are you much interested in map projection? It would pay you to attend one of Prof. Phillips's lectures on the subject, particularly if you are going to make a long ocean voyage."

"A long ocean voyage! That was the subject we were discussing when you came in," said Eugene.

"I can well believe it," smiled the Professor. "And what conclusion did you arrive at? How will you get to these islands here, for instance"—placing his finger on the Kingsmill group—"in case it should become necessary to visit them?"

"That was *just* the question we were considering," responded Eugene, "and to which we have not yet found an answer."

"I have brought you the answer," said the Professor, quietly.

"You?" And both the young men started toward him with eager, expectant faces.

"Doubtless; and what do you think it is?"

"I cannot guess," said Chester.

"I give it up," smiled Eugene.

"An elegant, I may even say sumptuous, steam-yacht, of three hundred and twenty tons burden; brig rigged—at least, I believe that is the term where they have two masts, and use yards and square sails."

"Exactly," said Eugene, impatiently; "and her name?"

"The *Albatross*."

"*What!* Warren Worthington's favorite yacht?"

"The same."

"And to what do we owe this rare piece of good luck?" asked Eugene.

"And on what terms does he let us have it?" inquired Chester.

"You owe your good luck," said the Professor, addressing Eugene, "to Mr. Worthington's desire to have the search made in the shortest possible time." Then turning to Chester, "And, as you suspect, there is a condition attached to the offer."

"And that condition?" asked the brothers, eagerly.

"Is that you take me with you?"

"Hurrah!" shouted Eugene, excitedly; "there could n't be anything better. Why, Professor, we'd rather have you along than any other man that could be named; would n't we, Chet?"

"Of course we would," was the hearty reply.

"No, really, do you mean it, young gentlemen?" asked the modest Professor, flushing with pleasure.

"You may be sure of it," they both exclaimed in a breath.

"Then, if you are not too much engaged, I would like to take you aboard and introduce you to the officers. They are a fine set of fellows, I promise you."

"Engaged! This thing is our real business, now, and we will accompany you at once."

"I am glad to hear it," exclaimed the Professor, with alacrity, and a few minutes later the trio left the house.

Taking a horse-car at the nearest corner, they rode to Bell Dock; and as the *Albatross* lay but a short distance off in the channel, and as one of her boats was awaiting them at the wharf, they were soon alongside. Two gentlemen standing at the gangway helped to land them safely on the steamer's deck, and to one of these the professor immediately addressed himself.

"Captain Bradford," said he, "permit me to make you acquainted with our fellow voyagers — Mr. Chester Pierpont, and his brother, Mr. Eugene Pierpont. Gentlemen, Captain James Bradford, the worthy commander of the *Albatross*." Then turning to the other officer, "And this is Mr. Morgan, our first mate."

The introductions over, Captain Bradford offered to give his guests some idea of their future home. Nothing could have pleased them more; and with him for a guide, they visited every part of the beautiful yacht. They found it as near perfection as possible,—as, indeed, was everything with which Warren Worthington had anything to do; and the brothers were unstinted in their praise.

While seated in the saloon, partaking of the refreshments the captain had thoughtfully ordered to be prepared for them, Eugene, the impetuous, asked:

“How long before you will be ready for sea, Captain?”

“Ten days,” was the answer.

“Good! In ten days we will be on board.”

“I like that,” said the Captain, approvingly; “I was afraid you would require more time.”

“Not another day—not another hour,” exclaimed Eugene, “unless, indeed, Professor Singleton—”

“Not I, young gentlemen,” interrupted the Professor, quickly; “if the Captain only says the word, I can be ready in five days.”

“Then it is fully understood,” said the Captain, “that, Providence permitting, we will sail on the morning of the eighth of April—ten days hence?”

“Yes, on the morning of the eighth of April!” echoed his prospective passengers, as they started to their feet. “And now,” added Chester, “we must leave you.”

As in duty bound, Chester and Eugene took an early opportunity to wait upon Warren Worthington and thank him for his kindness in placing the *Albatross* at their disposal.

“Pooh!” exclaimed the millionaire, “that’s nothing, or at least, it was inspired by a selfish motive. Remember, I have lived on the Pacific coast, and know something

of the vexations and delays in getting from one group of South Sea islands to another, if you don't happen to have a vessel of your own at your command. And you know, young gentlemen, I am getting old, and if I am to see the buildings of the post-graduate department erected, I must do all I can to hasten the day when the foundations may be laid."

"It was none the less kind of you to deal so liberally with us," said Eugene warmly; "and I only wish you were to make one of our party."

"I might do that," returned Mr. Worthington, with some animation. "But no, I must remain here to consult with the architects. You must know," he continued, after a moment's pause, "that I intend to have them go ahead with the plans exactly as though I knew you would be successful in your search, — as, indeed, I think you will be. And so, when I receive word that your uncle is found and has signed a proper deed, or that he is dead, I can give orders for the workmen to break ground at once."

"I can understand and appreciate your feelings, sir," said Chester, "and I sincerely trust all your hopes may be realized."

Mr. Worthington's liberal action was soon known throughout the university world, and as a matter of course, created quite a sensation, but nowhere greater than at the Richards's fireside.

"Brother Leonard's boys manage to get a great deal of notice taken of them, somehow," said Aunt Grace, discontentedly. "Now, why should they go to Hawaii, and perhaps cruise all over the South Seas in Warren Worthington's beautiful yacht, *and* at his expense, in preference to our Leonard Bacon, I should like to know?"

"Or, in preference to us girls," spoke up Miss Nora, the younger daughter, with a mischievous twinkle of the

eye. "For my part, I should like very much to make a voyage to the South Seas; and I dare say Gracie would, too."

"I don't know that I would object," admitted her sister, while a slight blush suffused her cheeks.

"Can't say that I should care much about it," said Leonard Bacon Richards, who was a somewhat effeminate individual, with light-blue eyes, very light hair, and feeble side-whiskers; and who had very little of that energy which belonged to the eminent divine to whom he was indebted for his name, and in whose calling he expected one day to be a great and shining light.

"And you might add," said his father, gravely, "that it would be highly imprudent for you to go, in any event. You are so nearly through at the seminary now, that it would not be well to leave your studies until after you are ordained."

"Hum, and I fancy then will be the time, if ever, when he'll want to go at them in dead earnest," said Nora, somewhat sarcastically.

"True," rejoined her father, taking the remark in good faith, "a clergyman's life is, or should be, one of study, and from the very outset he should be diligent."

"You hear, Leonard?" said his sister, sharply.

"Yes, I hear," drawled the young man.

"Well, I trust you will profit by father's words."

Her brother looked at her doubtfully.

"It's hard to tell just what you are driving at, sometimes," he said, at length.

"Is it?" she laughed. "I thought I spoke plainly enough then."

Nora Richards had not an exalted opinion of her brother's abilities.

CHAPTER III.

THE BERMUDAS.

“**T**IME and tide wait for no man,” and spite of envious feelings, spite of disappointments and regrets, spite of all possible mishaps, the morning of the eighth of April arrived; and with it Professor Singleton and the brothers arrived on board the *Albatross*.

The order was soon given to weigh anchor, and a little later, their last friends having left them, the yacht steamed down the harbor and headed toward the broad Atlantic.

For fully twenty-four hours after they were “out on the ocean deep,” our travelers realized the fact that there is much misery connected with the early part of an ocean voyage. But on the evening of the second day, the weather being fine, first Eugene, then Chester, and at length the Professor made his appearance on the quarter-deck, and all drank in the bracing sea air with evident enjoyment.

“This is delightful,” exclaimed the Professor, complacently seating himself on a camp-stool and wrapping a shawl about him. “I trust this agreeable weather will last. We shall be in the Gulf Stream to-morrow. Pray, Mr. Pierpont, have you ever given any attention to the surface life of the Gulf Stream?”

“Not a great deal, I confess,” answered Chester.

“Then you are wrong, and I recommend you to repair the error.”

At this moment Captain Bradford joined them.

"Have you ever visited the Bermudas, Professor?" he asked.

"The storm-vexed Bermudas?" Yes, on one memorable occasion I did so; but I should like to repeat the visit, I assure you."

"And you, gentlemen?" turning to the brothers.

"I have never seen the islands," said Chester.

"Nor I," added Eugene; "but I would n't object to repairing the error, as the Professor would say."

"Then, as there are certain reasons why I should like to call at Hamilton, and as the delay will be more than counterbalanced by the benefits obtained, we will stop there."

"We applaud your decision, Captain," said Eugene. "When shall we get into port?"

"In less than thirty-six hours, I hope."

"All right, I must brush up what little knowledge I possess of the islands, so that I may pass muster with the natives. Professor, can't you help me?"

"I endeavored to make the best use of my time while I was there," answered the Professor, "and I have given the subject some attention since. Whatever I know is very much at your service."

"I'll warrant it is a great deal more than I can take in; but, in the first place, from what source does the group derive its name?"

"It was named in honor of Juan Bermudez, who, in 1522, when the discovery of insular America had become well known in the old world, first visited the group in the Spanish ship *La Garza*, of which he was the commander, while on a voyage from Spain to Cuba with a cargo of hogs. And I may add, that the same year the islands were visited by that illustrious historian of the Indies, Gonzales Oviedo."

"A cargo of hogs, eh?" exclaimed Eugene, "they

ought to have put a few ashore on the newly-discovered isles."

"That was Bermudez's intention; his idea being that they would breed and be useful afterwards. But his benevolent design was frustrated, on the eve of their debarking, by the springing up of a strong gale, which obliged them to steer off, and be contented with only a partial view, as they thought, of a single island."

"Let me see," said Chester, inquiringly, "Columbus never saw the Bermudas?"

"In searching into the scanty records of the voyages of Columbus," answered the Professor, "I find no evidence of his having done so. And I am fully satisfied that he never did."

"A little out of his track, I fancy," remarked Eugene. "But just how are they situated? and what is the general formation of the group?"

"It is a cluster of small islands," replied the Professor, "situated, as you must know, in the latitude of Charleston, South Carolina, and five hundred and eighty miles distant from Cape Hatteras, which is the nearest point on the American coast. The islands are of calcareous formation, due entirely, I am satisfied, to the action of the wind in blowing up sand made by the disintegration of coral reefs. They present but one mass of animal remains in various stages of comminution and disintegration. The varieties of rock are irregularly associated, and without any order of super-position. Nearly every shell now known in the surrounding sea may be found in the rock, quite perfect, except with regard to color. That portion of the coast which looks to the east and to the south is in general shelving toward the sea, with a flat, shallow beach; while the western and northern shores rise almost perpendicularly from the ocean to a height of from twenty to thirty feet; and except in some of the

small creeks, where steep, sandy beaches occur, under the rocky cliffs, the water is deep close to the shore. The southeastern coast, to the extent of six or eight miles, exhibits a mixed character, the low land sinking very gradually under the sea, and the rugged and conical hills terminating, not in wall-like precipices, but sloping abruptly to a flat, extended beach."

"The islands are encircled by dangerous coral reefs, are they not?" asked Chester.

"Yes; and many of them extend a considerable distance from the land; but the greater part of them lie under the surface of the water, at no great distance from the shore."

"When were the islands first settled?" asked Eugene.

"Ferdinand Camelo took formal possession of them in 1543," answered the Professor; "and is stated to have cut his name on a rock still known as the 'Spanish Rock,' on the south side of the main island. On the 7th of December, 1593, Barbotière, a French captain, was shipwrecked off the coast, and with twenty-six, out of fifty composing the crew, escaped to the shore. Among them was Henry May, an Englishman, who afterwards published an account of the shipwreck. Again, it was not until after an English vessel was wrecked here, being one of an expedition consisting of nine ships and five hundred men, on their way to Virginia, and the capabilities of Bermuda were examined into, that the islands excited any attention in Europe.

"The expedition, after a favorable run to the Gulf of Bahama, encountered a severe hurricane. The vessels were each driven in a different direction, and the crew of the principal one, the *Sea Adventure*, with whom were Sir Thomas Gates, Admiral Sir George Somers, and Captain Newport — the first-mentioned to act as deputy governor under Lord Delaware — were miraculously pre-

served from a watery grave, by the vessel being wedged between two rocks at the east end of Bermuda, and by means of a boat and skiff, the whole, to the number of one hundred and fifty men, with a great portion of the provisions and tackling, were landed."

"And the shore is now called, from the name of the ship, Sea Adventure Flat," remarked Captain Bradford.

"Right, Captain," nodded the Professor, and then continued: "With as little delay as possible after their sad disaster, the crew of the ill-fated vessel got in readiness and dispatched the long-boat, with Raven, the mate, and eight men, to Virginia, to bring shipping for their conveyance; but after eight months had elapsed, no tidings of the boat's crew arrived, and Sir George and his men built two cedar vessels, one of eighty tons, the *Deliverance*, and the other of thirty tons, the *Patience*. There was but one bolt of iron in Sir George's vessel, and that was in her keel. The seams of both vessels were closed up with a mixture of lime and oil, for the purpose of making them water-tight.

"In commemoration of the unfortunate shipwreck, Gates attached a wooden cross to a large cedar tree, and placed a silver coin, together with an inscription on a copper plate, in the middle of it, which ran about as follows: 'That the cross was the remains of a ship of three hundred tons, called the *Sea Adventure*, bound, with eight more, to Virginia. That she contained two knights—Sir Thomas Gates, Governor of the Colony, and Sir George Somers, Admiral of the Seas—who, together with her captain, Christopher Newport, and one hundred and fifty mariners and passengers besides, had got safe ashore when she was lost, 28th July, 1609.'

"Gates and Somers left Bermuda for Virginia on the 10th of May, 1610, in their cedar vessels, having left two men behind; and they arrived at Jamestown on the 23d

of May. Sir George, after remaining but a short time at Jamestown, left that place for Bermuda, in company with Captain Argall, afterwards Governor of Virginia. They were driven northward by contrary winds, nearly to Cape Cod, where they were enveloped in such dense fogs that the two vessels were separated, and Argall returned to his station. Somers, whose name the islands then bore, though the original one of Bermuda has since prevailed, pushed steadily on, and arrived at Bermuda on the 19th of June; but from age and fatigue of the voyage, he survived only a short time. His body was embalmed, and the colonists, alarmed at the untimely fate of their energetic commander, disregarded his dying exhortation to use their utmost endeavors for the benefit of the plantations and to return to Virginia, sailed for England with his remains, in the little vessel of thirty tons, and shortly after their arrival the embalmed body of their hero was buried in White Church, Dorsetshire.

“Attempts were now seriously made by England to colonize Bermuda, and on the 11th of July, 1612, a vessel with sixty emigrants arrived, and was conducted into harbor by three men who had been left on the island. They were attracted hither by the hope of finding ambergris.

“The attention of England was now roused in favor of Bermuda, by the report of Captain Matthew Somers, the nephew and heir of Sir George. Publicity was given to highly-colored statements and great exaggerations, in contrast with the dark ideas formerly prevalent. Jourdan remarks that ‘this prodigious and enchanted place, which had been shunned as a Scylla and Charybdis, and where no one had ever landed but against his will, was really the richest, healthfulest, and most pleasing land ever man set foot on.’ Strachy sums up his pithy remark by saying that the company ‘liked it very well.’

“The Virginia Company, after having bestirred themselves in representations to King James I, showing the vast importance and the proximity of Bermuda to his Majesty’s ‘plantation’ of Virginia, succeeded in procuring an extension of their charter, on the 12th of March, 1612, to embrace Bermuda in their boundaries, for the purpose of trade with the mother country and British America; and England was now actively engaged in fostering it. Shortly afterwards the islands were sold by that company to one hundred and twenty gentlemen, who formed a company of their own, under the name and style of the Governor and Company of the City of London, for the ‘plantation’ of the Somer Islands.

“Amidst all this additional strength to its resources, Richard Moor was sent out as governor for Bermuda. Governor Moor’s administration was an active one; he laid the foundation of eight or nine forts, and had everything placed in readiness in case of hostilities or aggression. He removed the seat of government from Smith Island to St. George’s, and having built a cabin, which he thatched with palmetto leaves, as a residence, the rest of the colonists soon followed his example. He built also a church of cedar, which was in time destroyed by a tempest, and he afterward directed another to be built of palmetto branches, in a place better sheltered from the weather.

“Scarcity and want prevailed for two years, to an alarming extent, and the colony was covered with a veil of gloom and despondency, which was increased by a fatal sickness, of which many died. Sometime after, the ship *Welcome* arrived with stores, which afforded relief to the people. About this time the potato and tobacco were first cultivated. During Governor Moor’s administration, the company employed Richard Norwood in dividing the island into tribes and shares, fifty shares

being allotted to each tribe. Moor displeased the company by opposing their projected division of the colony into shares, in which he insisted that neither his own interest nor that of the colonists was duly considered. This displeasure of the company was followed by Moor's recall, and the ship *Welcome* took him home, leaving the administration in charge of six persons, who were to rule, each in turn, one month. Governor Moor was indefatigable in his exertions for the benefit of the colony. He was a man of ordinary condition, a carpenter by trade, but by his firmness, prudence, and popular manners, he soon silenced all impertinence, and shamed all attempts at opposition in England.

"He was succeeded by Daniel Tucker, in May, 1616, when a very important era dawned upon the islands, as a court of general assize was held at St. George in the second month of Tucker's administration, being the first real attempt to establish law and justice in the group.

"This measure met with the usual opposition, and a Frenchman was hanged for speaking 'many distasteful and mutinous speeches against the governor.' The discouraging and afflicting circumstances of the state of society at this period naturally required a remedy, and it was thought necessary by Tucker to make an example of the first culprit for the suppression of the mutiny."

"Strange that the first culprit should have been a Frenchman," mused Eugene.

"Ah, you think the culprit may have been a victim!" exclaimed the Professor. "Well, I must say, that while Tucker appears to have been a most persevering and painstaking governor, and thoroughly initiated into the mysteries of his duties, yet, in attempting to establish order among the boisterous colonists, and to correct the mutinous spirit which then existed among them, he appears to have adopted high-handed measures. The

islands underwent many convulsions, and society was in a wretched condition, owing to the constant animosity between the governor and the settlers; the latter being still held in check by the absurd policy of the governor. The cruel discipline and severe labor which he exacted of them created great disgust, and at length excited many to attempt desperate means to escape from the islands. Five persons succeeded in building a boat of three tons, under the pretence of its being for the use of the governor; and previous to their departure for England, one of the party borrowed a compass of Rev. Mr. Hughes, for whom he left a very ludicrous note, recommending patience under the loss."

"Ah, I remember reading of that," said Chester, "Mr. Hughes had preached several sermons on patience about that time."

"Yes, and so I suppose they thought they would give him a chance to exercise the virtue," said the Professor. "Three weeks after they sailed, they encountered a strong gale, but their little craft was fortunate in her contest with the winds and the waves, and after great privations the bold-hearted sailors arrived in Ireland; there their cruise was held to be so marvelous that the Earl of Thomond ordered that they should be received and entertained, and their brave little bark hung up as a monument of the extraordinary voyage. The governor was highly enraged at their escape, and threatened to hang the whole if they returned.

"Shortly after Governor Tucker's arrival he was successful, as we are told, in obtaining from the West Indies 'Figgs, Pynes, an Indian, and a Negar.' These were the first slaves brought to the islands; but slavery became very general as early as 1632.

"The ship *Diana* arrived from Europe with a supply of stores and men, and after remaining a few weeks,

returned to England with 30,000 pounds of tobacco, which gave great satisfaction to the proprietors. Great complaints of Tucker's cruelty were forwarded by this ship, and, to justify himself, he went home in December, 1618, leaving the government in charge of Captain Kendall.

"The company did not think fit to send him back, but appointed in his place Captain Nathaniel Butler, who sailed in July, 1619, and arrived in October, with four ships and five hundred men; this doubled the number already in the colony. Butler gave great satisfaction, by modeling his administration on the principle of the home government."

After a brief pause the Professor continued:

"We have seen that disputes, while as yet their numbers scarcely amounted to hundreds, composed the chief portion of the early history of the colonists. The first cultivators of the soil, being white laborers, were soon found unequal to the fatigues of agriculture in a warm climate, and it therefore became necessary to procure Africans. These, at the time of their first importation, were actually considered an intermediate race between man and monkey. Such a doctrine, I believe, was really promulgated, for the purpose of removing somewhat of the disgust which had come to prevail against the traffic of buying and selling our fellow-creatures. There were at this time, and long afterwards, as is well known, monsters in human shape, who sailed the seas, and made it their chief business to steal the helpless and unwary from the shores of England; whole villages were laid desolate, and the inhabitants carried off and sold in the colonies. No animal more savage than such men. But the curse of God was upon these pirates and man-stealers.

"The colonists refused to purchase their Christian brethren, or to receive their fellow-creatures into slavery

from their kidnappers ; and hence it became necessary, as I suppose, for the traders to assert that the negro was only half human. You may smile at this assertion ; but the subject was seriously discussed, both in England and in the colonies, and it was decided at one time that they were unworthy of baptism, and ought not to be allowed to enter where the word of God was preached.

“The first general assembly for the despatch of public business was held at St. George’s, according to instructions from England, on the 1st of August, 1620. The assembly was composed of the governor, council, bailiffs, burgesses, and a secretary, numbering thirty-two in all ; and during the session fifteen acts were passed, and approved by the proprietors in England. Butler divided the islands into parcels, which were soon peopled ; for, in 1623, there were more than three hundred English inhabitants. After that time the population was increased by blacks, who now form more than one-half of the entire population.

“The group continued to enjoy a high reputation, and at the period of civil commotion in England, along with Virginia, was the resort of distinguished emigrants. The archives of the colony present nothing, so far as I could find, worthy of notice after the civil wars in the old country, when many sought a refuge from the tyranny of the ruling party in the distant sanctuary ; tradition only handing down a succession of quarrels between the governor and the people. But really, my young friends, I fear I am wearying you, then, too, as our Captain would say, it’s high time to turn in,” and so the Professor’s lecture was over for the night.

CHAPTER IV.

THE BERMUDAS — CONTINUED.

AFTER breakfast the next morning, the Professor and the brothers met again on the quarter-deck, where Captain Bradford speedily joined them. The Professor had hardly seated himself in the comfortable cane-seat chair which had been provided since the evening before, when Eugene exclaimed :

“Here we are, all ready for a second installment of Bermuda. I hope you are not weary of the subject, Professor?”

“Oh, not at all,” was the cheerful answer; “we shall all enjoy our visit there the more by giving the matter a little attention now.”

“The climate of the islands has been greatly extolled, and justly, I believe,” remarked Chester.

“Ah, the climate!” exclaimed the Professor, with animation. “It has a mean temperature between that of the West Indies and British North America, partaking neither of the extreme heat of the one, nor the excessive cold of the other. It is greatly improved by the warmth of the Gulf Stream, which sweeps along between Bermuda and the American continent; the winter months resembling the early part of October in southern New England, but without its frosts. The sweet strains of the Bard of Erin have sounded the praises of the cedar-groves and wood-nymphs of the ‘Fairy Isles,’ as the Bermudas have been styled by Shakspeare. Let me see — how does it run? I am not good at remembering poetry.”

"Is this it?" and clearing his throat, Eugene began:

" 'No: ne'er did the wave in its element steep
An island of lovelier charms;
It blooms in the giant embrace of the deep,
Like Hebe in Hercules' arms;
The blush of your bowers is light to the eye,
And their melody balm to the ear;
But the fiery planet of day is too nigh,
And the Snow Spirit never comes here.' "

"That's it, my young friend. Thank you, very much, indeed. You see, according to the poet, the only drawback is, 'the fiery planet of day is too nigh.' "

"Is there much sickness, then, in the summer season?" asked Chester.

"No," rejoined the Professor; "Bermuda is not at any time so much subject to diseases as are the more northern climates. Epidemics are of unfrequent occurrence, and the death rate is very low."

"I suppose the Gulf Stream has a great influence on the climate," said Chester.

"You are right," was the reply. "The effects of the Gulf Stream on the climate of Bermuda are very manifest. This powerful current, after rising under the tropic, and flowing from the Gulf of Mexico through the Straits of Bahama, runs in a northeasterly direction along the American coast, washing the Great Bank of Newfoundland, and, after flowing upwards of 3,000 miles, finally reaches the Azores, and even the Bay of Biscay. The temperature of the water of this current is eight degrees above that of the surrounding sea at the Great Bank, and five degrees above the temperature of the sea at the Azores. Rennel estimates the dimensions of the current and the track that receives it at 2,000 miles in length, and 350 in breadth. Both are marked by the seaweed, and are well known to mariners.' By this cauldron of

warm water the icebergs from the north are dissolved; the surrounding waters and superincumbent atmosphere are warmed, and the temperature of the neighboring continent elevated. A proper retreat is also afforded to the various kinds of fish after their season of spawning has passed, and while the severity of the frost drives them from the shores. Such are some of the leading operations perceived in the economy of nature in this part of the world."

The speaker paused, and Eugene presently said:

"The Bermudans have plenty of rain and fog, I believe, Professor?"

"Yes," was the reply; "the atmosphere brought over the land from the southwest, being loaded with vapor given off from the warm sea surface, is frequently charged with rain; and the condensation carried on by the cooler land surface along the coast in the spring, produces fogs. The atmosphere over the interior lands, however, soon acquires the temperature necessary to dispel these fogs, and therefore, while some of the shores are obscured by them, the inland districts enjoy a clear sky. From the proximity of Bermuda to the Gulf Stream, it enjoys the improved climate thus produced in the highest degree."

"The climate, so improved," said Chester, "must have a good effect on the products of the islands."

"The effects of the climate upon the agricultural produce are more favorable than in other countries under the same mean annual temperature. Besides many of the fruits of the temperate regions, the heat of summer permits those of a tropical character to flourish; hence a greater variety may be produced than in any other part of the world. The season for vegetation is sufficiently extended to ripen a great many kinds of grain, vegetables, and fruit."

"Which is the most agreeable season at Bermuda?" asked Eugene.

"The most agreeable season," responded the Professor, "is the winter, or cold season, which lasts from November to March, the mean temperature being 60° . The prevailing winds are then from the westward; but if from the northwest, fine, hard weather, with a clear sky, accompanies them, the thermometer varying from 50° to 56° . This weather often terminates in a very fine, bright day, with a very slight wind and partial calms; afterwards, the wind invariably changes to the southwest, and the weather becomes hazy, damp, and attended with heavy rains and gales, the thermometer rising to 66° and 70° ."

"These alternate northwesterly and southwesterly winds prevail during the greater part of the year, do they not?" asked Chester.

"Yes, for nine months, when the wind remains at no other point for any length of time. The change is shown by a difference of 14° in the temperature."

"With regard to the form of government, Professor, can you give us an idea?" asked Eugene, who had had quite enough of the climate and winds.

"On that head it is hardly worth while to say more than a word," responded the palæontologist. "Bermuda, and, indeed, most of the West Indian colonies, appear externally to be governed on the model of England; but in reality they only possess in a small degree the genuine spirit of the mother country. They are practical republics, and present as faithful a picture of the petty States of old Greece as the change of manners and religion will allow. There is the same equality among them, the same undue conception of their own importance, the same irritability of temper, which has ever been the characteristic curse of all little commonwealths."

"Perhaps one trouble is, that the model they have patterned after is too large," laughed Eugene.

"You are right," said the Professor, "the forms of

the English Parliament are indeed too gigantic for the capacities of little islands; the colonists, as has been well said, are not elevated by the size, but lost in the folds of the mighty robe, which was never destined for their use.

“In Bermuda the Legislature consists of three branches—the governor, who is the Queen’s representative; the legislative council, consisting of a limited number, appointed by the Queen; and the general assembly, consisting of thirty-six members, elected by the people. The members of the assembly and council are each paid eight shillings sterling per diem when on duty; this sum is voted annually, and entails on the colony a considerable expense.

“The three branches of the Legislature enact laws in a way similar to the Queen, Lords, and Commons in England; but any act may be set aside by the Queen’s disallowing it.”

“You say the House is composed of thirty-six members,” observed Chester; “what population do they represent?”

“Not more than 12,000,” was the reply.

“Good gracious! then there is one representative to every 333 of the inhabitants?”

“Yes; and at no time does party spirit run so high as at the election of a member. Upon such occasions the whole island is in a ferment. As with us, to be a voter, is to stamp a man of one party or the other.”

“So party spirit really runs high among the Bermudans?”

“It is utterly impossible for any one who has not visited the islands to form an idea of the length to which it is carried. It enters into the most private relations of life. A tory and a radical are as distinct, and have as little in common between them, as if they were men not only of different countries, but of countries

hostile to each other. The most admirable proposition that united wisdom and patriotism ever contrived, if emanating from one party, would be received with coolness by the other. In private society, too, the distinction is very strongly marked; families of different parties do not mingle; and even tradesmen find their custom affected in a considerable degree by these political divisions.

"Although this party spirit is in itself so thoroughly unimportant and contemptible—to all, excepting those who are under its influence—yet it deserves notice in as far as it influences the state of society, in impeding the progress of civilization and the march of improvement. It has extinguished public spirit, which exists only among a few; for the petty triumph of party is preferred, at all times, to the public good. All persons of intelligence must allow that—the natural advantages of climate and productions of the islands being so great—if there were a government, however severe, which had the will and power to insure protection to capital and investment, and to suppress the evils attending on the periodical elections to the house of assembly, Bermuda would become one of the richest colonies of the world."

"Let's hope that they'll soon have less politics and better government," said Eugene. "I wish we were there now."

"But what can we do to amuse ourselves when we get there?" asked Chester.

"I'll tell you one thing you must do, gentlemen, while we are in port," said Captain Bradford, with animation, "you must go a fishing."

"Ah! so there is good fishing at Bermuda?" exclaimed Eugene.

"I should say so!" rejoined the Captain.

"How's that, Professor?" asked Chester, turning to the palæontologist, with a smile.

"There is no part of the globe in which a greater variety and excellence of fish abound, than in the waters bordering on the shores of Bermuda," answered the Professor, emphatically.

"Tell us about some of them."

"Well, among the most delicate, I may mention the angel-fish, the chub, the grouper, and the rock-fish. These are considered by connoisseurs to be the most esteemed fish for the table. The most common descriptions are the snappers, yellowtails, hinds, the grunts, and the squirrels. Many of these are of brilliant colors. The yellowtail, for example, is pale azure on the back, and pearly white below, with a broad band of the richest yellow along each side, which is the hue also of the dorsal and caudal fins. The spotted snapper is white, traversed by longitudinal lines of yellow; the dorsal and caudal fins have borders of rose-pink, and there is a large oval black spot on each flank. The hind is a handsome fish. It is studded with scarlet spots on a grayish ground; the fins are yellow, especially the caudal, with black borders, having a narrow white edge. Sometimes the pectorals are brilliantly scarlet.

"But those just named yield to the different species of *Hæmulon*, which, under the name of grunts, are well-known and highly esteemed throughout Bermuda. Their characteristic markings and hues are oblique parallel lines of gold, on a silver or metallic azure ground, with delicately tinted fins, and sometimes spots of peculiarly intense luster; the whole interior of their mouth is generally of the finest scarlet."

"And we can really catch some of these beauties, can we?" asked Eugene, eagerly.

"Yes, all of them are taken with the line, as well as with the seine, and in pots."

“Which are considered the best eating?”

“The snappers are perhaps more highly esteemed than the grunts, but both are excellent.”

“Where are these fish found in greatest abundance — that is, where is the best fishing?”

“They chiefly frequent what is called ‘broken ground,’ where patches of white sand alternate with masses of rough rock and fields of grass-like weeds. They range from deep water to the rocky shore; are taken abundantly with the seine, and bite freely at a bait of pilchard; but only fish of small and middling size are commonly caught in pots. The fish of large dimensions (of two feet and a half) will rarely bite at a hook worked in the usual manner. For them the fisherman takes a wire hook as large as a goose-quill, which he throws overboard, baited with a pilchard, but in a peculiar fashion. One side of the pilchard is split nearly off, remaining attached only by the tail; this is allowed to hang free, and a slice from the back and one from the belly are allowed to hang in the same way. The hook is then passed in at the mouth, out at the gills, and again through the middle, and the head is tied to the top of the hook; another slice is then put upon the hook, and made to hang down. This is designated a ‘full bait.’”

“I should say so!” remarked Eugene.

“No sinker is attached,” the Professor went on, “but its own weight is sufficient to carry it nearly to the bottom. The line being passed with two turns round the fisherman’s finger, he seats himself comfortably in his boat, and awaits the bite of the first large fish that may choose to essay the baited hook; which it usually does by taking in the whole at a gulp.

“The seine at Bermuda, as elsewhere, is the chief resource of the fisherman; and many kinds of fish are taken by this means that rarely enter a fish-pot or seize

a bait, together with many species that are called 'rub-bish,' as being of no esteem in the market, though often interesting to the naturalist.

"There are many other fishes, such as the goat-fish, the angel chatodon, the doctor-fish, the parrot-fish, the soap-fish, and a sort of turbot. Then there are others, such as sharks, hedgehog-fishes, whales, *et hoc genus omne*; but these I will not attempt to describe. I will only remark that a considerable tonnage in boats, and a number of people, are employed in the Bermuda fisheries; the produce of which forms a large item in the consumption of the islands."

"Let's see, how many islands are there in the group?" asked Chester, presently.

"It is *said* there are 365," answered the Professor; "but if so, some of them are mere rocks. The chief of the group is Great Bermuda Island, containing the town of Hamilton; St. George's, with its town of the same name; Somerset Island; and Ireland Island, on which is the dock-yard. Besides these, there are St. David's, Longbird, Paget's, Smith's, Cooper's, Nonsuch, Castle, and many inferior in size."

"Tell us something of the Great Bermuda," said Eugene, "that being the most important island of the group."

"The Great Bermuda, termed by way of distinction the 'mainland,'" rejoined the Professor, "was originally divided into eight districts, called 'tribes.' Hamilton tribe, which is the most northern and eastern, is a mere belt of sand, rock, and a little vegetable mould, surrounding a lagoon, which is called Harrington Sound. This fine sheet of water might be made a secure harbor for shipping by cutting a canal into it, the present channel being a mere shallow creek.

"The Hamlet of the Flatts, is situated on the southern

bank of the creek, in Smith's tribe. Tuckerstown, which lies eastward of the lagoon, appertains to Hamilton tribe. Smith and Devonshire tribes follow in succession, in a southwesterly direction. Pembroke occupies a spur of the island, which there trends in an east and west direction, and is divided from Paget tribe by an inlet called Paget Port — commonly Crow Lane."

"I suppose Hamilton is n't much of a place?" said Eugene, interrogatively.

"The town of Hamilton," returned the Professor, "presents little that is attractive to a stranger, though its aspect is characteristic enough of West Indian manners; it is situated in Pembroke, and on the north side of the inlet; it is a free port, and the seat of the legislature. You climb the wharf, and are immediately in a broad, long, rather low and straight street, which is the front street, nearly a mile in length, bordered by a row of the *Pride-of-India* trees, which forms a pleasant shade during the summer months. There is no pavement, and the sandy earth is plowed into ruts by the carts. Most of the houses are 'shops,' or stores, as we would call them; each store, whatever the character of its merchandise — whether shoes, dry goods, hardware, liquors, tobacco, provisions, or what not — being usually fitted up in the same manner, and having an open piazza in front, two or three yards wide, the roof being supported by slender pillars. Behind this piazza is the store, which is furnished with counters and shelves, somewhat in the American style; and over all are the rooms of the dwelling-house, furnished with jalousies, or strong venetian blinds, which admit light and air from beneath, and exclude the sun's rays. Towards the suburbs the stores cease, the houses become more elegant, each enclosed in a court or garden, which is often adorned with the beautiful fragrant blossoming trees and plants of the

island, or such as unite fruit with beauty and shade. Of the former, the rose-geranium, the white-jessamine, and the oleander or South Sea rose, — both beautiful and odorous — are great favorites; and of the latter we meet with the wide-spreading pomegranate, the tall pawpaw, and the golden-fruited members of the *citrus* genus, from the gigantic shaddock to the diminutive lime.

“The town of Hamilton is backed by a range of heights; but between these heights and the town there is a level, varying from half a mile to a mile in breadth. This level forms a semi-circular suburb, the arch of which is not less than three miles; and a large portion of this space is occupied by villas and cottage residences, with their gardens and orchards, the property chiefly of the native inhabitants of Bermuda, and occupied either by themselves, or by the foreign residents to whom they are let. These residences are not confined to the level ground; they encroach upon the heights also, adorning the slopes and crowning the eminences; and the general neatness of the exterior of these villas, with the substantial garden-walls and luxuriant foliage, produce a very favorable impression on the stranger.

“The houses of those who are not in business, and of many of the most opulent merchants, are to be found in the suburbs, and in those newer streets which form the outlets; where also the English and foreign residents principally abide. Some of these streets are pretty, regular, and well built, having an open space, together with an ornamental garden-plot, in front of them. North of the town is a hill, called Mount Langton, on which is the Government House, and a flag-staff, by means of which communication is kept up between St. George, the dock-yard, and Gibbs’ Hill. A few miles to the northwest of Mount Langton is the residence of the Admiral — St. John’s Hill, or Clarence Lodge.

“It is fortunate for us, and for all visitors, that Bermuda possesses other attractions than those offered by its public buildings; for these are devoid of either beauty or interest; indeed, with the exception of Trinity church, the new hotel, the public offices, and two of the chapels in Hamilton, there are none deserving the name; and of these, Trinity church and the new hotel have alone any claim to architectural design.”

At this moment the lookout forward created a diversion by calling out, in stentorian tones, “Land ho!”

Instantly Captain Bradford left the group and hurried forward. Next, Chester and Eugene started to their feet, and joining the lookout, peered off eagerly in the direction indicated by that individual. The Professor, with more deliberation, arose from his comfortable seat, and taking his lorgnette from its case, raised the instrument to his eyes and directed it toward the horizon, carefully adjusting the sights to the right focus as he gazed.

In a few minutes all had made out the land; and presently, as the brothers returned to the quarterdeck, the Professor turned to them and said:

“Well, young gentlemen, you have heard something of Bermuda, and now you see the Fairy Isles!”

CHAPTER V.

THE BERMUDAS, CONCLUDED — THE BAHAMAS.

AS they approached nearer and nearer to their destination, their interest was intensified by the beauties which were spread out before them on every hand. The limpid waters, the innumerable isles and islets, the vessels and pleasure-boats, darting here and there, the flowers and running vines which almost hid the dwellings they embraced, all helped to make up a scene of rare and wondrous beauty. And so, threading their way through the delightful archipelago, they suddenly found themselves in the charming harbor of Hamilton.

The arrival of the *Albatross* was made known to the islanders by the display of a flag from the government house; and apparently the agreeable news had been disseminated throughout the group, for the crowd that gathered on the wharf, like magic, was a formidable one. The greater portion, of course, were colored, but there were many English, and not a few Americans among the throng.

The yacht was brought to anchor just off Front street, which the Professor informed the brothers was the thoroughfare he had alluded to as being the principal street of the town.

As soon as possible, they went ashore to take a look about them. On the whole, the first impression of the place was unfavorable. This was owing, in some measure, to the white appearance of the streets, caused by

the nature of the soil, which imparts a dazzling glare that is exceedingly annoying.

"No hackmen about, I notice," observed Eugene, glancing back toward the crowd they had just left. "And I missed the indefatigable hotel runner, with whom we are so well acquainted at home."

"Yes," laughed Chester, "I noticed that our island friends did n't give us a very noisy welcome."

"The people are not given to making much noise in this latitude," said the Professor; "it requires the expenditure of too much energy. And if you want to ride, you will have to send to a hotel or stable for a carriage, for no one will take the trouble to solicit your patronage."

"Ah! that's a blessing, any way," exclaimed Eugene, emphatically. "How often I have been tempted to commit murder or suicide at home, on emerging from a railway station."

"How about a hotel?" asked Chester. "Is there a good one near?"

"Yes," answered the Professor, "there are some three or four at no great distance. The best, however, is the Hamilton, on the hill, yonder; which, as you see, commands a fine view of the town and harbor."

"That's the place for us, then," cried Eugene. "Come on." And they pursued their way to the hostelry.

They found the Hamilton all they could wish; and after partaking of refreshments, seated themselves on the broad veranda and enjoyed the delightful panorama before them.

For three days the Professor and his companions were permitted to enjoy themselves on shore, and they made good use of the time. They visited every point of interest, and the Professor and Chester took voluminous notes. Eugene was much struck with St. George,

which he declared to be quite his idea of a Spanish town.

This quaint old place has a most excellent harbor, which was formed at great cost by blasting away the reefs and constructing a breakwater on the point of the adjacent island of Ireland. The streets are narrow—so narrow, in fact, that you might almost shake hands with your neighbor in a window across the way. The buildings are huddled together in a rather insane fashion—quite delightful, Eugene thought. Here and there they came upon a beautiful garden, with a cosy cottage in the midst, and at a pleasant, home-like hotel, they found fair accommodations. Taking it all together, they decided that the old town was well worth the visit, and left it with regret. St. George is now an important naval station, and is strongly fortified.

In returning to Hamilton, they passed over a fine ocean drive of eight or nine miles, going by Harrington Sound, and so past the Devil's Hole, or Neptune's Grotto, between which and the sound there is a subterranean communication—the sound, it will be understood, being an arm of the sea. Here they had a splendid opportunity to see the various fish the Professor had described, for many that are caught at the most favorable seasons of the year are kept here until wanted for use. The great basin will hold 2,000 or more, and our party was fortunate in finding it well stocked. There were many varieties, and the spectacle was as pleasing as it was novel. The Professor, who had visited the grotto before, was able to inform his companions that these ponds, on a small scale, were quite numerous throughout Bermuda.

On reaching Hamilton, they found Captain Bradford anxiously expecting them. An hour later they were on board, and the *Albatross* was steaming out of the harbor.

For the remainder of the day our friends did little

else than talk of the sights they had seen, and the good time they had enjoyed among "our neighbors the Bermudans," and when night came they had hardly exhausted the subject.

Although they had already been enjoying pleasant weather, the change in the temperature next morning was quite marked. Lighter clothing was at once resorted to, and at an early hour Captain Bradford ordered all hands aft to spread the awning. The sky became brighter, the sea smoother, and of an azure blue.

After a very brief passage they found themselves, just at evening, in the immediate neighborhood of the Bahamas; and at dawn a long line of keys lay before them, and presently they caught sight of cocoa groves and oceans of rich verdure, and then the spires of a city came in sight.

"What island is this?" asked Eugene, in great surprise; for Captain Bradford had not intimated that he thought of calling at any port in the Bahamas.

"New Providence," answered Mr. Morgan, who was standing near.

"New Providence!" exclaimed Chester. "Then the town we see is Nassau?"

"Yes," was the reply.

"Ah!" cried Eugene, sarcastically, "we shall be very glad to see that place. Every Northerner has an abiding affection for Nassau. We cannot but remember her honest and disinterested conduct toward us during the civil war. She did more, I believe, to aid and abet the Confederates than any other place in the world."

"She did her full share, surely," assented the Professor; "as did also St. George, the queer old town we visited the other day."

"All the Bahamas belong to Great Britain, I believe?" said Chester.

"Yes, and it is a great pity; for naturally they appertain to our own country. A mere channel separates them from the coast of Florida."

"How many do they number?"

"About six hundred, of which, however, only fifteen are inhabited, a great many of them being merely small rocky islets."

"Which are the most important?"

"I am not sure that I can name them in their order," said the Professor; "but among them are Grand Bahama, Great and Little Abaco, Andros, Eluthera, and New Providence."

"Yes," said Mr. Morgan, "and you might add San Salvador, Rum Cay, Crooked Cay, Long Island, Great Exuma, Watling Island, Atwood's Key, and Great and Little Inagua."

"That makes up the fifteen," laughed Eugene.

"I believe it does," said the mate.

"The group spreads over a vast area, does it not?" asked Chester.

"Yes," answered the Professor; "it is about six hundred miles long, and has an estimated area of upward of 3,000 square miles."

"And are the inhabited islands thickly settled?" asked Eugene.

"They contain a population of not far from 40,000," was the reply, "the majority of whom are colored."

"The islands are low and narrow, are they not?" said Chester.

"Yes, generally they are very flat, long, and narrow. They are formed of calcareous rock, with a light sandy soil, and are without running streams."

"Then the people are not blessed with good water, I should say?"

"Yes; for there are numerous springs on nearly all the Islands."

"There's another thing they are blessed with," said the mate, with animation; "they have fruit in abundance."

"True," assented the Professor; "and in addition to pine-apples, oranges, lemons, limes, and a great variety of fruit, they produce vast quantities of maize, yams, sweet potatoes, and sugar-cane."

"Then, too, there are valuable woods, like mahogany, lignum-vitæ, and fustic," suggested Mr. Morgan.

"And in the more southerly islands there are large salt ponds," added Chester.

"Yes," said the Professor, "the principal exports are salt, sponge, pine-apples, and oranges."

"But is n't it exceedingly hot here?" asked Eugene, who dreaded anything above 90°.

"It is quite warm at certain seasons of the year," was the reply; "but not excessively hot; indeed, the climate is salubrious, and very beneficial to consumptives."

"The town, yonder, is the capital of the group, is it not?" asked Chester, pointing towards Nassau.

"Yes," was the reply; "and there the governor and his nine councilors reside."

"Mr. Morgan, I noticed," said Chester, "mentioned San Salvador. I suppose that is the spot where Columbus first set his foot in the new world."

"Yes, San Salvador, or, as the natives call it, Guanahani, was the first land discovered by Columbus in 1492."

"I have an idea that the people he found here were very different from the Indians of the north."

"You are quite right; the natives of these islands were an inoffensive race, and the way they treated them is an eternal disgrace to the Spaniards."

"What, did they kill them off at once?" asked Eugene.

"They might as well have done so," answered the Professor; "they carried them away to labor in the mines of San Domingo and the pearl fisheries of Cumana."

"Do you mean to say they carried them all off?"

"Yes; and the islands remained unoccupied till 1629, when the English settled them."

"But England has not been in undisputed possession since that time," said Chester quickly.

"No, indeed," rejoined the Professor; "they were dispossessed by the Spaniards in 1641, and after that the islands repeatedly changed masters until they were annexed permanently to the British Empire by the treaty of 1783."

By this time they were in the vicinity of the lighthouse at the western end of Hog Island, and as Captain Bradford did not care to venture over the bar, they came to anchor.

Hog Island is a beautiful coral islet, three miles long; and as it lies in front of the harbor, it forms a natural breakwater, and so makes Nassau the best and safest port in all the Bahamas.

With the least possible delay, the Professor and the brothers, accompanied by Captain Bradford, entered a boat, and were pulled up the harbor toward the town. Crafts of every description, manned by burly negroes, scantily dressed, dotted the waters about them, and presented an animated and ever-changing scene. On landing, amidst a crowd of noisy negroes, they found the streets, at least so far as the whiteness of the soil was concerned, the very counterparts of those of Hamilton; but this they had in some measure become accustomed to, and so did not mind it much. They noticed, too, the high, white, garden walls which everywhere shut in the grounds, and oftentimes the dwellings, of the rich and well-to-do citizens, and marveled at the display of such poor taste and ostentatious exclusiveness.



NEAR HAMILTON.

They took up their quarters at the Royal Victoria Hotel, which occupies an elevated position, commanding a magnificent view of a large portion of the city, the harbor, and the ocean beyond. After a most excellent breakfast, the Professor and his young companions started out on a grand excursion through the island, while Captain Bradford returned to the business part of the city to attend to certain important matters there.

Our little party found the roads everywhere excellent, and the scenery charming. Here was a grove of graceful palms, gently swaying their undulating plumage in the morning breeze;

there was a long stretch of forest trees, including the satin-wood, *lignum-vitæ*; yellow-wood, and even the cedar. Then they saw the bananna, mango, sapodilla, tamarind, coffee-plant, orange, guava, custard-apple, mammee, sugar-cane, and almost every vegetable production of the tropics.

At length, after a long and pleasant drive, they turned back, and reaching Nassau at a somewhat early hour in the afternoon, they decided to ramble about the city until six o'clock, when they had agreed to meet the Captain at the wharf.

They found Duke street, and visited the Government House, taking particular notice of the colossal statue of Christopher Columbus, which adorns its approach. Behind this building they saw one of the most remarkable trees in the Bahamas. It was a singular specimen of the silk-cotton tree. Its roots extend nearly an eighth of a mile, and then shoot up into another grand specimen in the grounds of the very hotel where they had stopped, and in whose branches they had for a time rested themselves, on a platform that had been constructed there.

The silk-cotton attains a large size, not only reaching a considerable height, but spreading laterally over a wide surface. It is immensely large at the base, and presents a strange, not to say fantastic, appearance. The bolls are full of a soft, brown cotton, resembling floss silk, but not adhesive enough for use.

At every turn they met tall and well-formed negroes and mulattoes, of every shade, from a coal-black to a light cream, and, we are happy to add, found them very civil in their demeanor. Many of the mulattoes, they learned, give much attention to shell-work, in which they display considerable talent and skill.

"What do all these fellows find to do? and when do they do it?" asked Eugene, when they had passed group after group of "tired darkies," sunning themselves on

the corners or against the garden walls. "They are not all workers in shells, I suppose."

"Hardly likely," smiled the Professor. "Some of them engage in wrecking, when the occasion presents itself, and one lucky hit may enable them to lie idle for a year afterwards. Others are employed in the sponge fishery, in which no less than five hundred crafts are engaged. Others, again, are employed about the docks and harbor; but really, as sugar-cane forms the staple article of their food, and as they do not trouble themselves much about the future, there is no great necessity for them to work very much, and so, as you see, they spend a great deal of time in —"

"Resting," laughed Eugene, and then added:

"I suppose the sponge-yard here is quite a sight."

"No doubt," said the Professor; "and as it is not far from the point where we agreed to meet the Captain, we might visit it."

"Let us do so," and then, as they started on: "What was that round, mosque-like building near the hotel? I have seen nothing like it on the island."

"It was once the jail," answered the Professor; "and many a bloody-handed pirate has been confined there; but now it is the public library, and contains, I am told, about 6,000 well-selected volumes."

"I am glad to hear anything so favorable about this place," said Chester; "for surely it is a good indication, when they turn a common jail into a public library."

"I agree with you, my young friend, and in point of fact, there has been a vast improvement here of late. Never before, I think, has there been less crime to punish than now."

"This was a great resort for pirates in the early days," remarked Eugene.

"Yes; the very paradise of pirates, as one might say.

They ruled here with a high hand. If they could n't buy up the governors, they captured them, and so knew no law but of their own making."

"Many American Tories settled here during and directly after the Revolution, I believe," said Chester.

"Yes; and their descendants are here to this day."

"And they, in connection with the English, sent out privateers against our commerce," exclaimed Eugene.

"Yes; the port was a great resort for British privateers."

"As it was during our late war, I suppose," said Eugene.

"Yes; but to no such extent." Then, after a moment's consideration, and a glance about him: "Why, young gentlemen, during the days of the Rebellion these streets and shops were packed with cotton from, and English goods bound to, Southern ports; and on the verandas of the very hotel where we stopped, the captains and crews of blockade-runners, and others engaged in the business, played toss-penny with gold eagles!"

"Confound the British Government!" growled Eugene.

"Ah! but for that, and some other irregularities permitted at the same time, she has since paid most roundly — millions, in fact."

"And served her right, too," muttered Eugene.

"Not a doubt of it, my young friend; I fully agree with you."

"But the home government ought not alone to have suffered; this place — this conscienceless nest of mammon — ought to have received a special and terrible punishment. I wish —"

"Ah, my young friend," interrupted the Professor, gravely, "an all-wise and just God, who permitted so much sorrow to come upon the mistaken South, did not pass over *this* culpable island, believe me."

“What do you mean, Professor?”

“Why,” exclaimed the Professor, with a comprehensive gesture, “see how calm it is; how mild and balmy the air; how serene the sky! So it was here all through the years of our great Civil War,—not a vessel lost—not a dollar’s worth of property destroyed ‘by the act of God.’ But ah! the day of wrath was coming! The year after Lee surrendered, the most terrific hurricane known in these waters for a whole century, swept over this fair isle. The angry sea threw itself over Hog Island out yonder, in surges so enormous that the waves washed the gallery of the lighthouse, sixty feet above the ground. Houses and forests were swept away before the wind like chaff; nothing, apparently, could withstand its tremendous force. In a few hours the city was like one shattered and swallowed up by an earthquake; and the greater part of the wealth realized through our misfortunes had utterly vanished. The island has never recovered from the blow, and will not for years to come. Do you believe in a special providence? *I* do. Mark what happened! While almost all those who aided and abetted the South were stripped of their ill-gotten wealth, no Union man had his home destroyed, or suffered any serious loss. The residence of one, an Englishman, who would have nothing to do with any Confederate business, stood uninjured—there it stands to this day!—while better and more substantial buildings on either side were scattered to the four winds of heaven!”

“Ah!” exclaimed Eugene, with a sigh, “that must indeed have been the very wrath of God!”

During this conversation they had been passing from one street to another at a pretty rapid pace, and now they found themselves at the entrance to the sponge-yard.

The enormous quantity of sponges gathered here astonished them; even the Professor was surprised. A large

number of blacks were at work in the yard, the greater part of whom were women; and Eugene was about to accost the only white person present,—evidently the overseer, who was superintending the shipment of some bales,—when he felt a hand upon his shoulder, and turning quickly, saw Captain Bradford's smiling face.

"Come," said the Captain, "my business is finished, the boat is waiting, and I would like to save an hour or so, if possible."

"Very well," said the Professor, coming up; "but how did you know where to find us?"

"Oh! I had an idea you would come here,—a sort of presentiment, I suppose," and with a laugh, he led them away.

After they were comfortably seated in the boat, and were swiftly gliding down the harbor, the Professor said:

"We have enjoyed ourselves very much here, and I should have liked exceedingly to visit some of the other islands of the group,—Eleuthera, Spanish Wells, and Harbor Island. I should have liked, also, to see Hope-town, on Abaco, which, you know, is the home of the descendants of the buccaneers."

"Is that so?" exclaimed Eugene. "Let's go there, Captain."

"Impossible," responded the Captain, shaking his head. "If we stop again in these waters, it will only be at Barbadoes, though, for some reasons, I should like very well to call at Fort Royal, in Martinique."

"There are lots of other places I should like to see," mused Eugene.

"No doubt," smiled Captain Bradford, "there is enough to interest one here in the West Indies for a lifetime. Think of the glories of Cuba, the wonders of Jamaica, all that may be seen and learned in Hayti and Santo Domingo. Then there is Puerto Rico, and St. Croix."

"Yes," added Chester, "and all the Caribbee Islands, including Tobago and Trinidad."

"Those are the Windward Islands," said the Professor; "and you must not forget the Leeward group, some of which, I am told, are well worth a visit."

"But unfortunately the visit cannot be made at this time, Professor," said the Captain.

"Of course not," assented the other, hastily; "we have other business on hand just now."

"Yes; and I hope not to be obliged to stop again, more than once or twice at least, before we enter the Pacific."

By this time they were alongside the yacht; and a moment later were on board.

The Professor and Eugene remained on deck, to watch the receding island, as they steamed away; but Chester at once plunged into the cabin. Presently he joined them on the quarter-deck, with a book under his arm.

"Professor," he said, as he carefully opened the volume at a place he had marked, "didn't you tell us that Guahanani was the first land seen by Columbus, and intimate that it was the true San Salvador?"

"Yes, I certainly did," was the reply.

"And are you sure you were right in making that statement?"

"Why, really, I—but you have something there you want to read; let us hear it before I answer."

"Very well, this is what Mr. Benjamin says, and I should judge he had given the subject some attention:

"South by east of Eleuthera is Cat Island, or Guahanani, celebrated as the land first seen by Columbus, and called by him San Salvador."

"Why," exclaimed Eugene, "that's exactly what the Professor said."

"But wait, Mr. Impetuous," laughed his brother, and then continuing, he read: "Most of our readers must

here be prepared, however, for a surprise, when it is stated that in all probability it was not Cat Island which Columbus named San Salvador, but Watling's Island — a smaller isle a little more to the southward and eastward. The facts in the case are these: contrary, probably, to the general opinion, it has never been definitely known which was the island entitled to the honor; but about fifty years ago, when historians were busy with the voyage of Columbus, they undertook to settle the question by comparing his journal with the imperfect charts of the Bahamas then existing. Navarette fixed on Turk's Island, which later investigation has proved to be erroneous, while Irving, supported by the strong authority of Humboldt, argued for Cat Island, and since then this has been generally accepted as San Salvador, and it is so designated on our charts to this day. But the English reversed their opinion some time ago, and transferred the name of San Salvador to Watling's Island, and it will be so found on their latest charts. The reasons for this change seem conclusive. Lieutenant Beecher, of the English navy, proves conclusively that Cat Island cannot be San Salvador, and that Watling's Island answers the conditions required better than any other island lying in the track of Columbus. His strongest reasons against Cat Island are that Columbus states that he rowed around the northern end in one day. The size of Cat Island makes this physically impossible there, while it is quite feasible at the other island. He also speaks of a large lake in the interior. There is no such water on Cat Island, while such a lake does exist on Watling's Island."

"There, Professor," exclaimed the reader, as he closed the book, "what have you to say to that?"

"In the first place," was the reply, "I beg your pardon for not having remembered Lieutenant Beecher's report, and the change that has been made on the British charts;

but you see I had accepted Irving's decision as final, backed up as it was by Humboldt, and so had not given later investigations the attention they deserved. I now, however, admit that Beecher and your writer make out a very good case, and I shall look into the subject further at the earliest opportunity."

"Really, Professor," said Eugene, gravely — for he saw their good friend was a little disturbed — "I'm inclined to think Chester has the best of it this time."

"I am not sure but he has, myself," muttered the Professor, as he started from his seat and hurried toward the companion-way.

CHAPTER VI.

MARTINIQUE — BARBADOES.

THE next day, when they were once more assembled on the quarter-deck, Eugene, after fixing himself as comfortably as possible, turned to the palæontologist and said :

“Professor, Captain Bradford remarked yesterday that he would like very much to call at Martinique. Now, while I suppose there is no likelihood of his doing so, I am sure we should all be glad to hear something about that interesting and romantic island.”

“You are quite right in calling it interesting and romantic,” replied the Professor; “for in fact there are very few places of its size that are more so.”

“I think it is the most picturesque island of the Lesser Antilles,” said Captain Bradford, emphatically. “The coast scenery is wild and savage beyond description, while the interior is like fairy-land.”

“It is of volcanic origin, is it not?” asked Chester.

“Yes,” answered the Professor; “and contains at least five or six extinct craters, and some magnificent mountains, one of which, Mont Pelée, is nearly 4,500 feet in height.”

“There are no active volcanoes at present, then,” said Eugene.

“No, Mr. Pierpont,” responded the Captain, “there are no active volcanoes; but they have earthquakes at frequent intervals, some of which have been disastrous, I can tell you.”

"The island is of quite fair size, if I remember rightly," said Chester.

"It is forty-five miles long, and at one point fifteen miles wide," replied the Professor. "It contains three hundred and eighty-one square miles, and a population of 154,000."

"The soil must be very productive."

"It is exceedingly so; and about one-third of the surface is under cultivation."

"I suppose the products are very much the same as those of the other West Indian islands."

"Yes; though I believe they export more cotton, indigo, and ginger than any of the Bahamas."

"I have heard bad reports of the climate," said Eugene.

"The climate is humid," responded the Professor, "and the average fall of rain is eighty-four inches. The year is divided into two seasons, one commencing about October 15th, and lasting nine months, and the other comprising the rest of the year. During the latter season the rains are abundant, and yellow fever and similar diseases prevail."

"With so large a population and such a productive soil, they must have a pretty active commerce," said Chester.

"Yes," assented the Professor; "but it is chiefly with France."

"And a big thing it is for France, too," said Morgan, who had just joined them. "Why, the value of the import and export trade of France with Martinique last year was upwards of 50,000,000 francs."

"I suppose, then," suggested Eugene, "France keeps a pretty tight hold of the island."

"There is a governor, a privy council of seven members, and a colonial council of thirty members, elected for five years," said the Professor; "and it is fair to

suppose that the first and second of these, at least, are the friends of the home government."

"But, Professor," said the Captain, "since 1866 the colony has legislated for itself on duties and public works."

"That is true," assented the Professor; "and in 1875 they built a railway from Fort de France, the capital, to St. Pierre, the largest town."

"Did not Columbus himself discover Martinique?" asked Chester, presently.

"Yes," was the reply; "in 1502."

"St. Pierre is a very beautiful place, I am told," said Eugene, musingly.

"Few cities in the world are more beautiful, or more delightfully situated," exclaimed Captain Bradford, enthusiastically. "It is simply enchanting; there is beauty on every hand."

"Ah! but the climate," objected Eugene.

"The climate of St. Pierre, my dear sir, is equally attractive for at least eight months of the year."

"Chester," said his brother, "when we return from the Pacific, we must visit St. Pierre during those eight months."

"We will," nodded Chester.

"You couldn't do better, gentlemen," said Morgan, decidedly; "and be sure to make your first approach from the sea, for the view of the city from the harbor is truly superb. It always reminds me of Algiers and Genoa; for being built on sloping land, the streets, which follow the coast-line, rise one above the other, so that the upper ones look down upon the water from an elevation of between two and three hundred feet."

"One very pleasant and agreeable thing about the city," said the Captain, "is the canals of pure water which flow through every street."

"Yes," exclaimed Morgan; "and that reminds me of the fountain in the center of the Place Bertin."

"Ah! to be sure," assented the Captain; "that is an elegant affair — a great ornament and a great blessing to the city."

"It was the gift of a colored man, a former mayor, I was told," said the mate.

"Yes, a very worthy gentleman he was. But that was a strange freak which marked its inauguration."

"I do not remember to have heard of it."

"Before the water was turned on," said the Captain, "vast quantities of claret were emptied into the mains above the fountain, so that when the pressure of the water came, the bronze nymph's basket overflowed with wine, and the great dolphins spouted the same ruby fluid."

"Gracious! I hope it was n't all wasted," exclaimed Eugene, quickly.

"Not all," said the Captain, "for the poor people had received a hint of what might be expected to happen, and were on hand with their pitchers, and all manner of vessels; and they believe a miracle was performed at the inauguration, to this day."

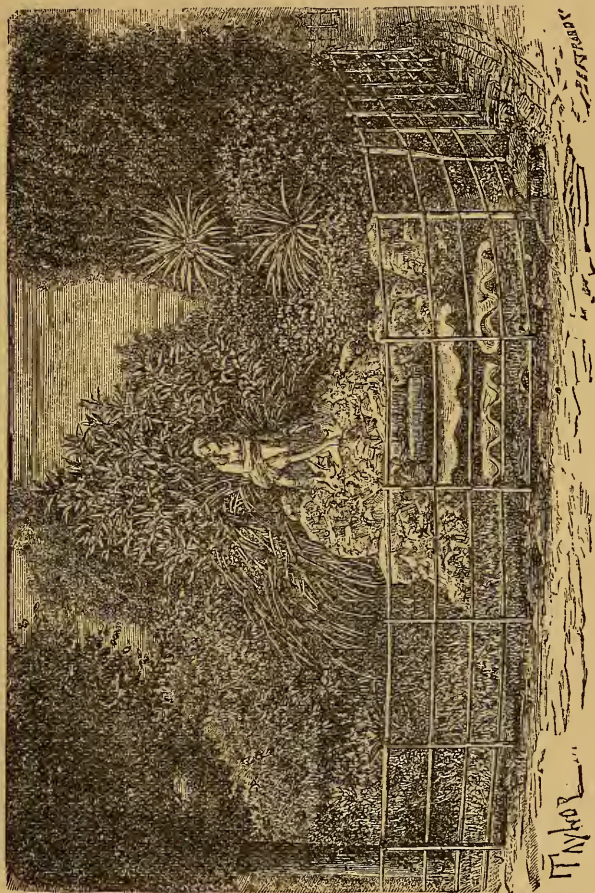
"But wine isn't the only strange thing the fountain has discharged," said the mate. "At certain seasons it throws forth myriads of living fish, each from half an inch to an inch in length, their bodies as transparent as crystal, with the exception of the head, which is of a dark color."

"That must be an extraordinary sight," exclaimed Chester.

"It is, indeed," rejoined the mate; "and a beautiful one, too; for when the sunlight strikes the jets of water at such times, it seems as though millions of precious stones were flashing through the air, splashing down into the marble basin, and being swept off into the swiftly flowing canals."

“What are these little, crystal-like fish?”

“The people call them ‘titirie.’ I suppose they are a species of the minnow, such as we call shiners. They



JARDIN DES PLANTES.

are very plentiful in the mountain streams from which the fountain is fed; and I was told that at the season when they begin to make their way down toward the sea, they are scooped up in great quantities with anything

that comes handy — an old hat, a sheet, a handkerchief, or bucket — and sold in the market by measure. They are considered a great delicacy when fried in oil."

"I should like to see that wonderful fountain," said Eugene; "and I suppose there are still other attractions."

"Yes, indeed," answered the mate; "magnificent boulevards — the best drives in the world, and, ah! the public garden — the beautiful Jardin des Plantes!"

"Why," said Eugene, "it seems to me this place must be about perfect."

"Alas," observed the Captain, "perfection is not of this earth. There is no rose without its thorn, and the beautiful Jardin des Plantes, otherwise perfect, contains one of the most dreaded reptiles on earth — a serpent called the 'iron lance.'"

"The iron lance! I never heard of it. Is it common on the island, Captain?"

"Yes; and about eight hundred persons are bitten by it every year."

"Is its bite always fatal?"

"No, about seventy cases prove fatal; but many others result in nervous diseases which are almost as bad as death."

"Hum! I don't seem to care so much about seeing Martinique as I did," muttered Eugene.

"Ah!" exclaimed the mate; "but there is one reason why you should visit the island that has not yet been mentioned."

"What is it, Mr. Morgan?"

"The mangoes."

"Mangoes?"

"Yes; or rather, *the* mango — the mango d'or."

"That's a fruit peculiar to the tropics, isn't it?"

"Aye; and *such* a fruit!"

"Something out of the common, then."

"I should say so! It weighs from twelve to sixteen ounces, the pulp is deep yellow in color, and of the consistency of ice cream. A delicious aroma exhales from it, and then the taste!"

"Oh, for a mango d'or!" exclaimed Eugene.

"You may well say so," observed the Captain; "for to partake of one in full perfection is the greatest luxury of tropical life."

"You ought to tell them about the old jail, Captain," suggested Mr. Morgan.

"I would like to do so," was the reply, "for it has a most curious history; but it is impossible now."

"I should like very much to hear it," said Eugene.

"And so should I," added his brother.

"You ought to do so," said the mate; "and learn how Cammie Mallie, its black owner, gave that and, indeed, all his property, to the city, after he was dead."

"After he was dead!" cried Eugene. "Oh! you mean by will, I suppose."

"Nothing of the kind. The city officials had a notary seat himself by the dead man's coffin, and in their presence, and in the presence of a vast number of superstitious witnesses, put the question, 'Is it your will, Cammie Mallie, that the city of St. Pierre should be the legal heir to all your property, both real and personal?' The dead man raised his right hand and nodded his head in token of assent. The notary made a record of the important facts, signed and sealed the document in the presence of the authorities and the witnesses, and the government immediately entered upon possession of the property."

"The city of St. Pierre had pretty shrewd officials in those days," remarked Eugene, dryly.

"Just so," assented the mate; "but as a general thing the people of Martinique are strictly honest. The house

doors are seldom locked by day, and visitors may enter at will. The family usually live on the second floor, and the servants in a kitchen in the rear yard. Visitors, therefore, have to make their presence known by ringing a bell which they find on a table in the front room."

"That speaks well for them, and I am glad to hear it," said Chester. "There is some high-toned society in the island, I am told."

"As good as you will find anywhere," said the Captain, warmly. "Great attention is paid to education among the whites, the sons and daughters of the wealthy being sent to France, while others receive excellent training on the island. In society Parisian etiquette is rigidly enforced."

"Is Fort de France as attractive as St. Pierre?" asked Eugene.

"Perhaps not," was the reply; "but it is a very attractive place."

"There is one thing there well worth seeing," said the mate; "the beautiful statue of the Empress Josephine."

"Yes, indeed," assented the Captain; "it was presented to the island by the late Emperor, Napoleon III. It is of very graceful proportions. The right hand holds a bouquet of flowers; the left, the portrait of the Emperor. The head is turned to Trois Isles, the place of her birth, which lies opposite the city, and upon which her eyes are fixed as if absorbed in thought."

"Martinique will always be chiefly celebrated as the birthplace of Josephine," said Chester.

"Yes," acquiesced the Captain; "and there are many interesting traditions of her early life treasured by the people there."

"But she was not the only daughter of the isle who left her home to share a throne," remarked the Professor.

"I never heard of another," said Eugene, with interest.

“Aimée Dubuc de Rivery,” said the Professor, “was a very beautiful girl, whose story is even more romantic than that of Josephine. At an early age she was sent to France to be educated. Having finished her course of studies she embarked for her native land. Off the island of Majorca the vessel was attacked and captured by pirates, who took Aimée Dubuc de Rivery prisoner, and sold her as a slave to the Dey of Algiers. He, unable to obtain her love, sent her as a rare present to the Sultan of Turkey, Selim III., who made her his sultana, under the name of Validi. On the death of her husband, her son, as Mahmoud II., reigned over the Turkish Empire.”

“I have heard a great deal about sorcery, or obeah, being practiced in Martinique,” said Chester. “Do you know anything about it, Professor?”

“I know this,” was the reply. “Obeah always has been, and continues to be practiced there, in spite of all the efforts of the civil and religious authorities for its suppression.”

“The obeah man is generally a pretty clever rascal, then, I conclude?”

“Yes, indeed, and is held in great dread and veneration by those over whom he is supposed to hold a mysterious power for good or evil.”

“Such a superstition must be an unmitigated curse to any people.”

“It is; and it is greatly to be regretted that it cannot be effectually wiped out.”

“But it is not peculiar to Martinique?” said Eugene.

“By no means,” responded the Professor; “it is common to all the West Indies. And not only that, it holds sway throughout negrodom in Africa, and, to a greater or less extent, wherever the black man has been transplanted.”

"Yes," said the Captain, "I have heard much of it in our Southern States, especially those bordering the gulf."

"But I never hear anything of it in the North," remarked Mr. Morgan.

"No," began the Professor. But just here the mate, and shortly afterwards the Captain, being called forward, the conversation took a different turn, and presently the Professor retired to his state-room.

The next day the Captain informed his passengers that he had definitely concluded it was wholly out of the question to stop at Martinique; and so their thoughts at once turned to Barbadoes.

"It is one of the most important of the Caribbean group, is it not, Professor?" asked Eugene.

"It is," was the reply, "and for several reasons: In the first place, although situated but 13° north of the equator, the climate, though warm, is not excessively so. It is remarkably healthy, having very few swamps or tracts of marshy land, so common to most of the other islands of the group; a result attributable also to the superior cultivation of the soil, which is extremely productive, and, with very trifling exception, almost everywhere under tillage; and though the surface is generally flat, a short range of hills, called after their highest point, Mount Hillaby, 1,147 feet above the sea, is found sufficient to keep the temperature of the climate at a healthy standard."

"How large is the island, Professor?"

"It is twenty-two miles long and between fourteen and fifteen broad, and contains an area of one hundred and sixty-six square miles."

"It is oval in form, then?"

"Very nearly."

"What is the population?"

"Not far from 153,000; or, about 922 to the square mile."

"Nine hundred and twenty-two to the square mile!" exclaimed Chester, in astonishment. "That is fearfully dense."

"Yes," assented the Professor, "the population of Barbadoes is denser than that of any other country in the world, except Malta."

"That is astonishing," said Chester.

"Astonishing, but true," rejoined the Professor.

"I suppose the blacks are greatly in the majority?"

"As a matter of course. The figures at the last census were 16,594 whites, 36,118 of mixed race, and very nearly 100,300 blacks. The fact is, there appears to have been no increase in the white population for almost a hundred years, while the colored or mixed portion has multiplied fifteen fold."

"No increase in the white population for almost a hundred years!" repeated Eugene, incredulously.

"None of any account," said the Professor; "for I find that in 1788 the white population was 16,127."

"Well," said Chester, "if the whites have n't multiplied, the colored people have increased fast enough to make up."

"They have, indeed," assented their friend.

"Do all the inhabitants find it easy to get a living on the island?" asked Eugene.

"Oh, yes," was the reply; "with a good soil it is easy to support a vast number of people."

"What are the chief products?"

"Sugar, rum, aloes, ginger, cotton, and some amount of arrowroot."

"You said, Professor," interposed Chester, "that the surface is generally flat; still, is it not true that in certain parts it is more or less broken?"

"The island," answered the Professor, "is divided by a deep valley into two parts. Near the center of the

northern and larger part is Mount Hillaby, already mentioned. From the west coast the ground rises in successive terraces, broken by ravines, to the central ridge, from which hills of a conical form radiate in a northeast direction to the seashore. The northwestern and southern parts of the island consist of rocks of coralline limestone with beds of calcareous marl; the eastern part is composed of strata of silicious sandstone, intermixed with ferruginous matter, clay, marl, minute fragments of pumice, strata of volcanic ashes, seams of bitumen, and springs of petroleum."

"Petroleum! I had no idea there was petroleum to be found in the island," said Eugene.

"Yes," said the Professor; "and there are several chalybeate springs, containing chiefly iron, carbonic acid, and fixed alkali, in different proportions."

"Are there any good harbors?" asked Chester. "I think I have heard there is at least one."

"Carlisle Bay," said the Captain, "is *the* port and harbor of Barbadoes. It is a spacious, open roadstead, capable of containing from five hundred to six hundred vessels; but unfortunately it is exposed to southern and southwestern winds. Then there is another bad feature: the island is encircled by coral reefs, which in some parts extend seaward for three miles, and are extremely dangerous to navigation."

"Another serious drawback," added the Professor, "is that the island is greatly exposed to hurricanes. One of these, in October, 1780, destroyed almost every building, and about 4,000 lives. During another, in August, 1831, the loss of life was between 2,500 and 5,000, and the destruction of property more than \$8,000,000."

"Are there any fine cities, like St. Pierre and Fort de France?" asked Eugene.

"There are four very pleasant towns; but no one of them, I think, as attractive as either of those you name."

"The capital is Bridgetown, I believe?"

"Yes; and being the seat of government for the Windward Islands, is a place of considerable importance."

"What is the population?"

"Between 25,000 and 30,000."

"It is not the oldest town, I think, Professor?" remarked Chester.

"No," was the reply; "during the corrupt period of the first James, many of the British colonies in the New World were presented as gifts to the courtiers and favorites of the monarch, Barbadoes being given to the Earl of Carlisle, who laid the foundation of the first settlement, which he called Jamestown, and which is now the second town of the colony."

"Did the island remain long in the possession of the Earls of Carlisle?"

"It did not; and in the reign of Charles II. it was re-invested in the crown."

"I suppose the government is similar to that of the other British colonies."

"Yes; and the governor also enjoys the distinction of being governor-general of the islands of Grenada, St. Vincent, Tobago, Trinidad, and St. Lucia."

"When and by whom was the island discovered?" asked Eugene.

"I cannot answer that question exactly," replied the Professor; "but probably it was discovered some time in the sixteenth century by the Portuguese."

"They made no attempt to settle it," said Chester.

"No; for when it was visited by the English in 1605, it was uninhabited and covered with dense forests."

"I suppose the English, as usual, lost no time in taking possession and starting a colony?"

"I presume they lost no time in claiming ownership; but it was not until 1625 that they founded their first colony, which consisted of forty whites and seven negroes."

"And they have held possession ever since?" asked Eugene.

"Yes," was the reply; "though the Dutch made a fruitless attempt to seize the island in 1665, and the blacks have formed three plots, one as late as 1825, to take possession."

The run to Barbadoes was neither as rapid nor as pleasant as the passage from Bermuda to Nassau had been, owing to contrary winds and a sudden storm which overtook them; so that their stay in Carlisle Bay was shortened to less than twenty-four hours. However, the trio of passengers made the most of their time, and saw all it was possible to see of the island in so brief a period.

Hardly had they again reached the deck of the *Albatross* when her anchors were raised, and she steamed out of the roadstead.

A long passage was now before them. They would not stop again until they reached the bay of Rio de Janeiro, where the Captain proposed to call for fuel and provisions, and in the hope of hearing news from home. Naturally, this last consideration turned their thoughts toward those they had left behind them, and the solitary one they were going to seek. For several days they speculated on what might prove to be their best plan after they had once entered the broad Pacific, and Eugene, especially, pored over the many excellent charts of that ocean with which the yacht was furnished, spending, indeed, more than half his time in the fascinating occupation. As the days passed, Professor Singleton gave more and more attention to his favorite study: the science of the ancient life of the earth, and to his growing collection of fossils, which were the remains of such life. Chester selected the best works he could find in the yacht's library treating on the island world, and the countries they were likely to visit during the cruise,



FOREST-SCENE, CARIBBEE ISLES.

and buried himself in their pages. The Captain and Mr. Morgan had enough to do to look after the yacht and make everything "ship shape" for their proposed stop at Rio.

Day after day they sailed steadily on, still absorbed in their several occupations, until one morning they woke up to the fact that they were drawing near to port. From the chilliness of an early New England spring, they had sailed to the Fairy Isles of the Atlantic, and from thence into the summer of the world, had crossed the equator, and now beheld the stars that looked down upon another hemisphere. The next day they would be at rest in the magnificent bay of Rio de Janeiro.

CHAPTER VII.

RIO DE JANEIRO — THE FALKLAND ISLANDS.

THEY were all on deck bright and early the next morning, to see the scene which is presented by the most picturesque harbor in the world. Soon the sublime spectacle was before them. A wild confusion of huge granite mountains springing from the very water's edge; hills and islands crowned with fortresses and heavy guns; ravines where palm trees grew and villages nestled; gray and serrated mountains, with bare uplifted heads, to the westward; in front, a mass of naked granite 1,500 feet high, springing almost perpendicularly to the clouds, and beyond it the city, with domes and towers and citadel. Such was the sight that met their admiring gaze.

A fleet of merchant ships from every nation in the world rode at anchor on the placid waters of the bay. From several formidable iron-clads and grim-looking men-of-war flew the green flag of Brazil. The elegant white-and-gold yacht of the Emperor was anchored near by. A large barge, pulled by a score of brawny men, was just putting off from a frigate for the shore. The hum of business came from the city, and the song of the sailors, at their work on the ships, sounded over the bay. Little steam-launches and sail-boats shot hither and thither, and every where were bustle and animation and beauty.

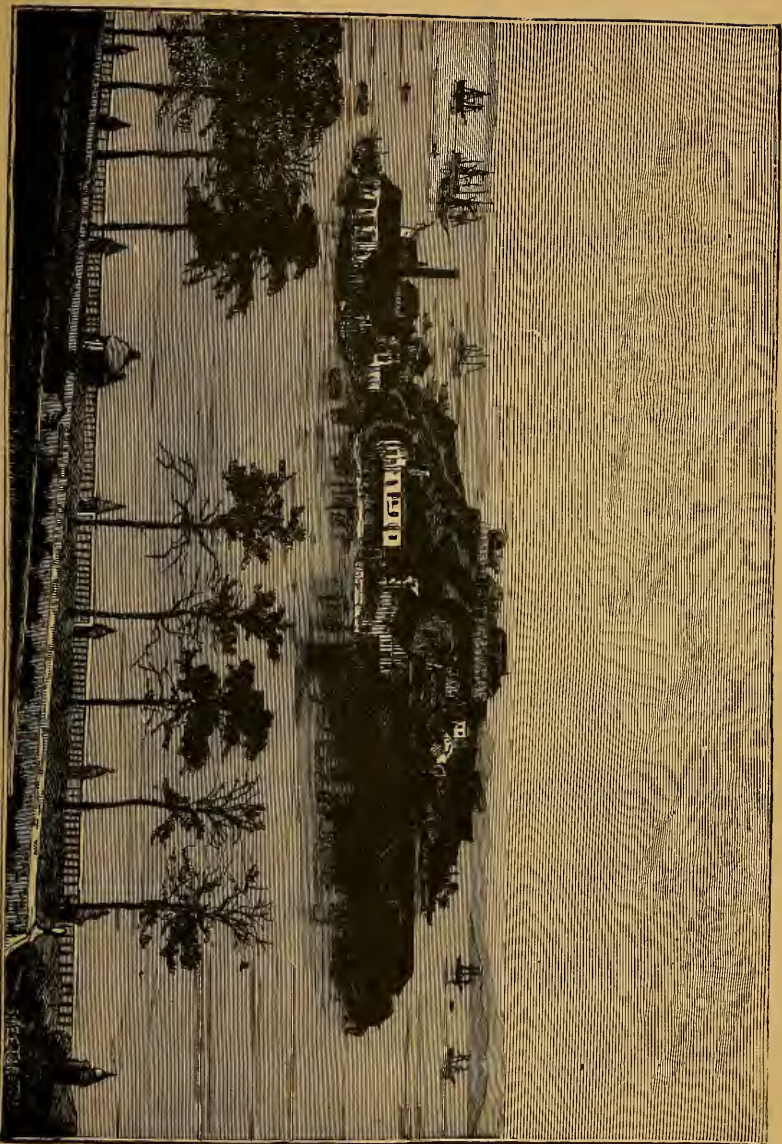
Here was the great mart of Brazil. From here to all parts of the world the merchant fleets were waiting to

bear the rich products of this rich empire. But of all the ships that rode at anchor before the city only one or two flew the American flag. There were great steamships flying the flags of England, Germany, France, Italy, and Spain, but the *Albatross* was the only one that flew the stars and stripes. Here is food for reflection for the patriotic American.

The harbor is not only the most picturesque, but is one of the finest in the world, and can scarcely be excelled for capaciousness and the security which it affords to vessels of every description. The entrance into it from the sea does not extend a mile from point to point, but it afterwards widens to from three to nine miles, penetrating inland at least fifteen miles, and, as already intimated, is intersected in every direction with heavy batteries; all the numerous little islands by which it is interspersed, and most of which are highly cultivated, being crowned with cannon, the system of fortifications having been designed to be impregnable. Just within and nearly midway of the entrance is an isolated rock, also fortified.

At the earliest possible moment Captain Bradford and his three passengers entered a boat and were pulled up the harbor. Having landed, their first care was to inquire for letters at the office of the representative of the United States. They found several awaiting them, one of which interested them greatly. It was from Professor Timothy Pierpont, and informed them that he had just received word from a party in Callao, stating that Lyman Pierpont was then at that place, that he was talking of a business trip to the Galapagos Islands, after which he intended to settle either on one of the Tonga group, or on Nukahiva, one of the Marquesas Islands.

"Oh," exclaimed Eugene, "if we could only reach



BAY OF RIO DE JANEIRO.

Callao before he leaves! Captain, you will make all haste, I know? How soon can you get away from Rio?"

"Certainly I will make all reasonable haste," answered the Captain; "but sometimes, you know, the old adage, 'more haste, less speed,' holds good, and that is the case with us now. We shouldn't make much by getting to sea before we were ready to start. And then," he added, "now that we are on the track of your uncle, I hardly think we shall lose him. If we don't find him at Callao, we may on one of the Galapagos Islands, and if not there, at least, among the Tongans or the Marquesans."

"That is true," exclaimed Chester.

"Yes," assented Eugene, "you are right, Captain."

"I am glad you agree with me," said the Captain. "And now take a look about you. See all that is worth seeing in the city and vicinity; and be on board again three days hence, when, God willing, we shall start for the Strait of Magellan."

"But shall we not see you in the meantime, Captain?" asked the Professor.

"I shall be pretty busy," was the reply; "but I will try to hunt you up occasionally, so leave word at the hotel or with our minister, where you are likely to be found."

"All right," responded the brothers. And so they separated.

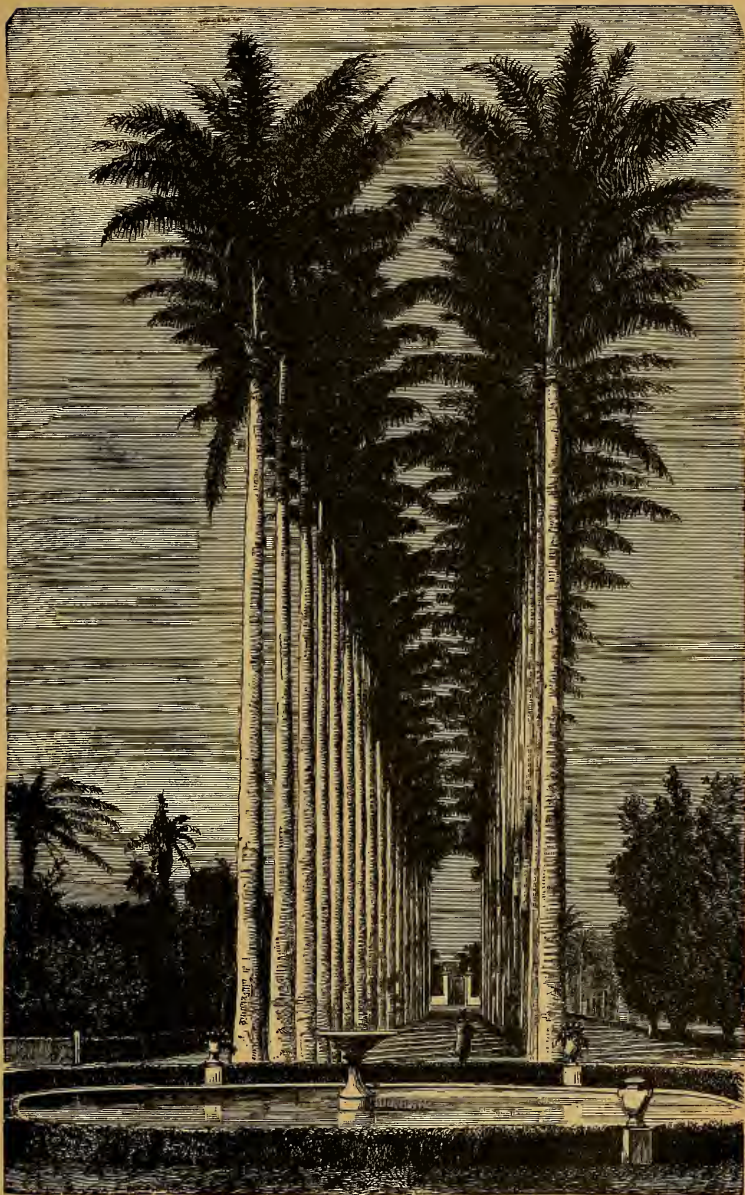
The city stands on a tongue of land, close to the shore, on the west side of the bay, and at the foot of several high mountains which rise behind it. The travelers found the streets straight, well paved, and having excellent sidewalks. They noticed that the houses were generally built of stone or brick. They saw numerous convents and churches, all well-built, but gloomy and loaded with ornaments without taste. They found

the cathedral, and admired its superior style of architecture. They saw the other public buildings, including the naval and military arsenal, a public hospital, a national library, colleges, and other educational establishments, several scientific institutions, a museum of natural history, and the theaters.

The imperial library, which contains 100,000 volumes, they learned was formerly the royal library of Portugal, and that it was brought from Lisbon by the emigrating royal family. It possesses, among other treasures, the only complete series of Dürer's woodcuts of the "Passion of Christ."

They spent much time on the main street, the Rua de Vereito, which runs parallel with the beach, and from which the minor streets branch off at right angles, and are intersected by others at regular distances. They soon came upon the imperial palace, which fronts on the beach, and is seen to best advantage from the landing. They saw, too, and greatly admired the well-constructed sea-wall along the water front of the city, beside which the largest vessels may lie. During their stay they visited Ilha das Cobras, off the northeastern extremity of the city, and saw the wonderful dry dock excavated from the solid rock, and capable of admitting a vessel 280 feet long and of twenty-eight feet draught; and a much larger one near it. They also visited the two public gardens, and saw the far-famed Avenue of Palms. In short, they spent the three days of their sojourn very pleasantly and profitably, and were only sorry when the time came for them to return to their old quarters on board the *Albatross*.

"What a vast amount of shipping there is here," remarked Eugene, as they were being pulled to the yacht; "it seems as though there were many more vessels than when we arrived."



AVENUE OF PALMS.

"It may be so," replied the Professor; "the city, you see, is the chief market of Brazil, and especially of the provinces of Minas Geraes, San Paulo, Govazes, Cayaba, and Corritiva. The mining districts, being by far the most populous, require, of course, the greatest proportion of consumable goods, and, in return, send their most valuable articles of commerce here; hence the busy railway trains, and innumerable troops of mules we saw continually traveling to and from those districts."

"What are the chief importations, Professor?" asked Chester.

"They consist of dried beef, tallow, hides, grain, salted provisions, flour, household furniture, pitch, tar, wax, oil, sulphur, woods, and wine. And the exports are cotton, sugar, rum, ship-timber, various fine cabinet woods, hides, tallow, indigo, and coarse cotton cloths."

"You forget the precious metals, Professor," suggested the Captain, who was with them.

"Ah! to be sure," was the reply; "among the more precious articles are gold, diamonds, topazes (of various colors), amethysts, tourmalines, chrysoberyls, aquamarines, and wrought jewelry."

"Gracious!" exclaimed Eugene; "with such attractions, no wonder Rio is a large city."

"What is the population?" asked Chester.

"Not far from 280,000; perhaps 290,000," was the answer.

They were now alongside the yacht, and a little later were standing on the quarter-deck.

There was some delay in getting under way, but in the course of an hour or so, they were steaming past the isolated rock just within and midway of the entrance, and were soon standing out to sea.

Their course was now laid for the Strait of Magellan; and the Captain informed his passengers that they would most likely catch a glimpse of the Falkland Islands.

"The Falkland Islands!" exclaimed Eugene; "another of the possessions of Great Britain, I believe."

"Yes," said the Professor, "they belong to Great Britain; but I can assure you she does not realize a very large revenue from them."

"They are not far from the Strait, Captain?" said Chester.

"No," was the reply; "only about three hundred miles due east."

"Let me see; there are only a few of the islands?" said Eugene.

"On the contrary," responded the Professor, "there are quite two hundred of them."

"Two hundred!"

"Yes; with an area of 7,600 square miles,—a little more than half the size of Ireland,—and a population of eight hundred and twelve souls."

"But most of the islands must be quite small."

"Yes; all but two are very small. East Falkland is ninety miles long and forty miles broad, and contains 3,000 square miles. West Falkland, separated from the former by a channel from two and a half to eighteen miles broad, called Falkland Sound, is eighty miles long and twenty-five broad, and contains about 2,300 square miles."

"What are the names of some of the other islands?" asked Chester.

"The other principal islands are Great Swan, Saunders, Pebble, Keppel, Eagle, Weddell, and Lively."

"Are there any good features about the group?" inquired Eugene.

There are many good bays and inlets, and a few rivers,—one, the San Carlos, being thirty miles long. The valleys of the streams are exceedingly rich. The climate is like that of England, but more equable."

"The climate like that of England!" exclaimed Eugene; "you astonish me, Professor."

"Nevertheless, it is true," asserted the Professor; "the temperature of summer ranges from 45° to 70° F., and that of winter from 30° to 50°. The mean temperature of the year is 47°."

"I thought the islands were a miserable lot," said Eugene, "with a barren, broken surface, and bleak hills and mountains."

"The whole aspect of the group is dreary and uninviting," said the Captain, emphatically. "There are no trees, and scarcely anything else but grass."

"Then there *is* grass?" said Eugene.

"Yes; and it grows to a great length, and, I have been informed, possesses remarkably nutritious properties."

"Then, too," added the Professor, "there are several kinds of bushes; the common garden vegetables of England thrive; barley and oats are cultivated, but wheat, I must confess, is raised with difficulty."

"Are there any quadrupeds indigenous to the islands?" asked Chester.

"One," answered the Professor; "the warrah or wolf fox, which is peculiar to the group. Darwin, if you remember, mentions it."

"There are other animals, are there not? I think I have read of the wild horses of Falkland."

"Yes; horses, sheep, hogs, and rabbits have been left here by Europeans, and in East Falkland there are many thousand wild cattle, sprung from stock thus introduced. Then seals and wild fowl are found; and many American and other vessels hunt the black whale off the west coast of West Falkland."

"Are there any towns or villages?" asked Eugene.

"There is a British colony called Stanley, at the head of Port William inlet, on East Falkland. It has an

excellent harbor, and is the only settlement on the whole group."

"What does the British Government want of the islands, any way?" asked Eugene. "Anything more than the glory of holding them?"

"Their main object in keeping up the establishment at Port William Inlet," answered the Professor, "is to afford ships a place of call for water and fresh provisions."

"Well, that's a good Christian reason, any how."

"I agree with you," said the Professor.

"So do I," exclaimed the Captain. "And being a sailor, I can fully appreciate the advantages of such a port of call as Stanley."

"Who discovered the group?" asked Chester.

"John Davis," responded the Professor, "in August, 1592. And they were visited a century later by Strong, who called the sound Falkland, and the islands afterward took the same name. The French, the English, and the Spaniards planted colonies on the islands, and some blood was shed. Alluding to this, Darwin says: 'After the possession of these miserable islands had been contested by France, Spain, and England, they were left uninhabited. The Government of Buenos Ayres then sold them to a private individual, but likewise used them, as old Spain had done before, for a penal settlement. England claimed her right, and seized them. The Englishman who was left in charge of the flag was consequently murdered. A British officer was next sent, unsupported by any power; and when we arrived, we found him in charge of a population, of which rather more than half were runaway rebels and murderers.'"

"But the United States had a finger in the pie at one time, I believe," said Captain Bradford.

"Yes," assented the Professor, "Buenos Ayres took possession in 1820, and founded a colony in 1823, which, in consequence of a dispute, was destroyed in 1831, by the United States. It was shortly after this that the group was given up to the English."

While the Professor was speaking, Chester had beckoned to the steward, who was passing, and whispered to him. He at once hurried to the cabin, and now returning, handed the young man a book.

"This is Darwin," said Chester, as he opened the volume, "and I want to know just what he says about these islands. Ah, here it is:

"An undulating land, with a desolate and wretched aspect, is everywhere covered by a peaty soil and wiry grass, of one monotonous brown color. Here and there a peak or ridge of gray quartz rock, breaks through the smooth surface. Every one has heard of the climate of these regions; it may be compared to that which is experienced at the height of between one and two thousand feet, on the mountains of North Wales; having, however, less sunshine and less frost, but more wind and rain.'"

"Ah!" exclaimed the professor, "but there is a footnote, is n't there? Be kind enough to read that."

"Here it is," said Chester, and he read:

"From accounts published since our voyage, and more especially from several interesting letters from Capt. Sullivan, R. N., employed on the survey, it appears that we took an exaggerated view of the badness of the climate of these islands. But when I reflect on the almost universal covering of peat, and on the fact of wheat seldom ripening here, I can hardly believe that the climate in summer is so fine and dry as it has lately been represented."

"I don't see as that helps you much, Professor," said Eugene, slyly.

"But you see what Capt. Sullivan and others think," urged the Professor.

"Yes, and what Darwin thinks, too," retorted the young man.

"Well," said the other, "you must remember I haven't claimed the islands were a paradise. I only say they are not as black as they have been painted. And now, Chester, seeing that you have Darwin, suppose you read us what he says about killing one of the wild cattle."

"I have it right here," said Chester.

"Then let *us* have it," laughed his brother. And Chester read:

"In the evening we came across a small herd. One of my companions, St. Jago by name, soon separated a fat cow; he threw the bolas, and it struck her legs, but failed in becoming entangled. Then dropping his hat to mark the spot where the balls were left, while at full gallop, he uncoiled his lazo, and after a most severe chase, again came up to the cow, and caught her round the horns. The other Gaucho had gone on ahead with the spare horses, so that St. Jago had some difficulty in killing the furious beast. He managed to get her on a level piece of ground, by taking advantage of her as often as she rushed at him; and when she would not move, my horse, from having been trained, would canter up, and with his chest give her a violent push. But when on level ground it does not appear an easy job for one man to kill a beast mad with terror. Nor would it be so, if the horse, when left to itself without its rider, did not soon learn, for its own safety, to keep the lazo tight; so that, if the cow or ox moves forward, the horse moves just as quickly forward; otherwise, it stands motionless, leaning on one side. This horse, however, was a young one, and would not stand still, but gave in

to the cow as she struggled. It was admirable to see with what dexterity St. Jago dodged behind the beast, till at last he contrived to give the fatal touch to the main tendon of the hind leg; after which, without much difficulty, he drove his knife into the head of the spinal marrow, and the cow dropped as if struck by lightning. He cut off pieces of flesh with the skin to it, but without any bones, sufficient for our expedition. We then rode on to our sleeping place, and had for supper "*carne con cuero*," or meat roasted with the skin on it. This is as superior to common beef as venison is to mutton. A large circular piece taken from the back is roasted on the embers with the hide downward and in the form of a saucer, so that none of the gravy is lost. If any worthy alderman had supped with us that evening, "*carne con cuero*," without doubt, would soon have been celebrated in London.'

"There!" exclaimed the Professor, triumphantly, "now don't you think there are some attractions in the Falkland Islands?"

"I give in," cried Eugene. "It must be simply grand there. What better sport could one ask for than hunting wild cattle, wild horses, wild boars, wild rabbits, and other wild game? Let's stop there, Captain."

"Impossible, my friend," said the Captain; "though I confess I should like the sport as much as yourself."

"I am glad to hear you say so. But, Professor, there being no trees on the islands, what do the inhabitants use for fuel? For instance, how do the Gauchos, after they have killed a wild bull or cow, cook the flesh?"

"Oftentimes," answered the Professor, "they strip the flesh from the bones, and then use the bones to cook the meat by."

"Make fuel of one part to cook the other part by!" exclaimed Eugene.

“Exactly ; but the best fuel, as Darwin says, is afforded by a little bush about the size of common heath, which has the useful property of burning while fresh and green. ‘It was very surprising,’ he says, ‘to see the Gauchos, in the midst of rain and everything soaking wet, with nothing more than a tinder-box and piece of rag, immediately make a fire. They sought beneath the tufts of grass and bushes for a few dry twigs, and these they rubbed into fibers ; then surrounding them with coarser twigs, something like a bird’s nest, they put the rag with its spark of fire in the middle and covered it up. The nest being then held up to the wind, by degrees it smoked more and more, and at last burst out in flames. I do not think any other method would have had a chance of succeeding with such damp materials.’”

“It’s wonderful —” began Chester, when the Captain interrupted him.

“Gentlemen,” he said, “I see the steward is anxious for the pleasure of our company in the saloon.”

“Thank goodness !” cried Eugene, “for I am as hungry as a big black bear,” and with some haste he retired to the cabin, closely followed by the others.

Meantime the beautiful yacht steamed steadily on her way toward the famous Strait of Magellan.

CHAPTER VIII.

STRAIT OF MAGELLAN AND TERRA DEL FUEGO — JUAN FERNANDEZ.

AS the *Albatross* proceeded southward, they passed, though without catching more than a glimpse of it, a long stretch of the Brazilian coast, then Uruguay and the wide mouth of the Rio de la Plata, then Buenos Ayres, and at length the low shores of Patagonia were seen, but like an almost invisible line on the horizon. They now sailed well in toward the coast for many miles, but even with the aid of telescopes, the Professor and his companions could obtain only an indistinct idea of the shores.

The yacht at last found herself at the head of the strait, and without having seen the Falklands, they immediately entered the channel. This passage, notwithstanding the advantages it offers over the stormy and dangerous one round Cape Horn, is seldom attempted by large sailing vessels, principally because of the narrowness of the western reaches, and the violent gusts of wind blowing through them, chiefly from the northwest. Long detentions often occur, as there is not sufficient room for working ship; and many of the harbors being difficult of access, it is often necessary to put back for long distances. A United States man-of-war, it is said, was once eighty days in accomplishing the passage. Actual dangers are few. The water is deep, the shores are bold, and every hidden rock is, as it were, buoyed out by the abundant giant kelp growing over it. For small vessels, and particularly for steamers, the channel is invaluable.

Its exact length is three hundred and seventy-six miles. The rivers abound in fish, the forest in game, there are safe and easy landings at many places for steamers, and, in short, a thousand resources that are wanting in the well-known Strait of Le Maire, and off the terrible rock of Cape Horn.

During the first hours of the passage, till they reached Cape Gregory, the Professor and his companions observed that the shores were low and sandy. The entire passage lasted not far from thirty-six hours, and this moving panorama of the two shores well rewarded the pains they took to admire it under the radiant beams of the southern sun. No inhabitant appeared on the shores of the continent; and only a few Fuegians wandered along the barren rocks of the great island called Terra del Fuego.

Observing a group of these, just visible at the water's edge, Eugene, as he pointed toward them, suddenly asked:

"How do those miserable creatures manage to live, Professor?"

"They live chiefly on shell-fish," was the reply; "and so are obliged constantly to change their place of residence; but they return at intervals to the same spots, as is evident from the piles of old shells, which often amount to many tons in weight. There is a heap now; it can be distinguished even at this distance by the bright green color of the plants which are growing upon it."

"What are the plants?" asked Chester.

"I can tell you the names of two of them," exclaimed Captain Bradford: "wild celery and scurvy grass, both very serviceable, but the natives have n't found it out yet."

"They don't seem capable of learning much of anything useful," said Eugene; "the huts or wigwams they build are miserable shelters, are they not?"

"Yes, indeed," answered the Professor; they merely consist of a few broken branches stuck in the ground,

and very imperfectly thatched on one side with a few tufts of grass and rushes. In size and dimensions they resemble hay-cocks. The whole cannot be the work of an hour, and they are only used for a few days."



PATAGONIANS.

"Let me see," said Eugene; "does n't Darwin give some account of these people?"

“Yes,” answered his brother; “and it is not a very bright picture he paints.”

“Nevertheless, as you have the book handy, let us hear it.” And Chester, taking up the volume, read: .



FUEGIANS.

“While going, one day, on shore, near Wollaston Island, we pulled alongside a canoe with six Fuegians.

These were the most abject and miserable creatures I anywhere beheld. On the east coast the natives, as we have seen, have guanaco cloaks, and on the west, they possess seal-skins. Among these central tribes the men generally have an otter-skin, or some small scrap about as large as a pocket-handkerchief, which is barely sufficient to cover their backs as low down as their loins. It is laced across the breast by strings, and, according as the wind blows, it is shifted from side to side. But these Fuegians, in the canoe, were quite naked, and even one full-grown woman was absolutely so. It was raining heavily, and the fresh water, together with the spray, trickled down her body. In another harbor not far distant, a woman, who was suckling a recently-born child, came one day alongside the vessel, and remained there out of mere curiosity, whilst the sleet fell and thawed on her naked bosom, and on the skin of her naked baby! These poor wretches were stunted in their growth, their hideous faces bedaubed with white paint, their skins filthy and greasy, their hair entangled, their voices discordant, and their gestures violent. Viewing such men, one can hardly make oneself believe that they are fellow-creatures, and inhabitants of the same world. It is a common subject of conjecture what pleasure in life some of the lower animals can enjoy; how much more reasonable the same question may be asked with respect to these barbarians! At night, five or six human beings, naked and scarcely protected from the wind and rain of this tempestuous climate, sleep on the wet ground coiled up like animals. Whenever it is low water, winter or summer, night or day, they must rise to pick shell-fish from the rocks; and the women either dive to collect sea-eggs, or sit patiently in their canoes, and with a baited hair-line, without any hook, jerk out little fish. If a seal is killed, or the floating carcase of a putrid

whale discovered, it is a feast; and such miserable food is assisted by a few tasteless berries and fungi.’”

“Poor wretches, they often suffer from famine,” observed the Captain.



A FUEGIAN SETTLEMENT.

“Yes,” rejoined Chester, “the writer goes on to say: ‘I heard Mr. Low, a sealing-master intimately acquainted

with the natives of this country, give a curious account of the state of a party of one hundred and fifty natives on the west coast, who were very thin and in great distress. A succession of gales prevented the women from getting shell-fish on the rocks, and they could not go out in their canoes to catch seal. A small party of these men, one morning, set out, and the other Indians explained to him that they were going a four-days' journey for food. On their return, Low went to meet them, and he found them excessively tired, each man carrying a great square piece of putrid whale's blubber, with a hole in the middle, through which they put their heads, like the Gauchos do through their ponchos or cloaks. As soon as the blubber was brought into a wigwam, an old man cut off thin slices, and, muttering over them, broiled them for a minute and distributed them to the famished party, who, during this time, preserved a profound silence. Mr. Low believes that whenever a whale is cast on shore, the natives bury large pieces of it in the sand, as a resource in a time of famine; and a native boy, whom he had on board, once found a stock thus buried. The different tribes, when at war, are cannibals. From the concurrent, but quite independent evidence of the boy taken by Mr. Low, and of Jemmy Button, it is certainly true, that when pressed in winter by hunger, they kill and devour their old women before they kill their dogs. The boy, being asked by Mr. Low why they did this, answered: "Doggies catch otters, old women no." This boy described the manner in which they are killed by being held over smoke and thus choked; he imitated their screams as a joke, and described the parts of their bodies which are considered best to eat. Horrid as such a death by the hands of their friends and relatives must be, the fears of the old women, when hun-

ger begins to press, are more painful to think of; we were told that they then often ran away into the mountains, but that they are pursued by the men and brought back to the slaughter-house at their own fire-sides!"

"What horrible wretches!" exclaimed Eugene, in a tone of disgust.

"That's exactly what they are," agreed the Captain.

"Poor creatures," said Chester, musingly, "I suppose they know no better."

"I doubt it," cried Eugene, in an excited tone, "I believe every man on earth, heathen as well as Christian, knows the difference between right and wrong; and I stand ready to defend my position."

"Wait a little," said the Captain, quietly, "and meantime, look about you."

The *Albatross* was just rounding the peninsula of Brunswick, between two magnificent sights. Right here the strait cuts between stupendous masses of granite. The base of the mountains was hidden in the heart of immense forests, while their summits, whitened with eternal snow, were lost in the clouds. And now, on the left, lay Dawson Island; beyond that, Clarence, and toward the southeast Mount Taru towered six thousand five hundred feet aloft. Night came, preceded by a long twilight, the light melting away insensibly by gentle degrees, while the sky was studded with brilliant stars.

In the midst of this partial obscurity, the yacht kept steadily on her course, though they might easily have anchored for the night. Sometimes they could almost reach the branches of the beeches that hung over the water. At others they found themselves in the mouths of broad rivers, with myriads of wild game on every hand. Soon deserted ruins appeared, to which the night

- lent a weird aspect. These were the remains of an abandoned colony, planted by Sarmiento, in 1581. He called the place San Felipe, and left there four hundred emigrants. But the extreme severity of the cold weakened the colony; famine devoured those whom the winter had spared, and in 1587 Cavendish, the explorer, found the last of these four hundred unfortunates dying of hunger amid the ruins of a city only six years old. Since then the place has been known as Port Famine.

The *Albatross* steamed along these deserted shores. At daybreak she sailed in the midst of the narrow passes, between beeches, ash-trees, and birches, from the bosom of which emerged ivy-clad domes, cupolas tapestried with the hardy holly, and lofty spires, among which the obelisk of Buckland rose to a great height. Far out to sea sported schools of seals and whales of great size, judging by their spouting, which could be seen at a distance of four miles. At last they doubled Cape Froward, bleak and barren. On the other side of the strait rose Mount Sarmiento, to the height of six thousand feet, an enormous mass of rock broken by bands of clouds which formed as it were an aerial archipelago in the sky.

Cape Froward is the real end of the American continent, for Cape Horn is merely a lone rock in the sea. Passing this point, the strait narrowed between Brunswick Peninsula and Desolation Island. Then to fertile shores succeeded a line of wild, barren coast, cut by a thousand inlets of this tortuous labyrinth.

The *Albatross* pursued its way through capricious windings, mingling her smoke with the mists on the rocks. Without lessening her speed, she passed several settlements or trading-posts which have been established on this uninviting coast. At Cape Tamar the channel widened. The yacht rounded the Narborough Islands, and approached the southern shores. At last, thirty-six

hours after entering the strait, the rocks of Cape Pilaes were seen at the extreme point of Desolation Island. An immense, open, glittering sea now extended before them, and all on board the steamer hailed it with enthusiasm, for it was the broad Pacific on which their eyes rested.

Nine days later they were rapidly approaching the island of Juan Fernandez, Captain Bradford having consented to call there, to satisfy the natural curiosity of the brothers, and at the same time to replenish his stock of fruit, particularly to obtain peaches and quinces, which grow on the island in great abundance.

The far-famed island could now just be discerned on the horizon; and Eugene, after gazing at it for some time through a telescope, said, as he laid the instrument down:

"That famous spot belongs to Chili, I suppose. How far is it from Valparaiso?"

"About four hundred and twenty miles," answered the Captain, promptly.

"How large is it?" was the next question.

"That I cannot tell you, exactly," said the Captain; "you see it is very irregular in form."

"It is not far from twelve miles in length from east to west," said the Professor; "but, I think, not more than four miles across in the widest part."

"There is more than one island, is there not?" asked Chester.

"Yes," replied the Professor; "at the southwest end of Juan is Santa Clara, merely a detached portion of the greater isle; and about ninety-two miles west lies a small island called Mas-á-Fuera."

"Mas-á-Fuera," repeated Eugene, in a low tone. "Hum! I'm not well up in my Spanish."

"It means 'further off shore,'" explained the Professor. "And Juan Fernandez is distinguished as Mas-á-Terra — nearer the mainland."

"Is Mas-á-Fuera of any account?" asked Eugene.

"It is covered with trees and well provided with fresh water," was the reply; "but being destitute of anchorage or landing-place, it is seldom visited, and very little known."

"It is plain enough to see," observed Eugene, after another look through the glass, "that Juan Fernandez is not of coral formation."

"No," answered the Professor; "like most of the isolated oceanic islands, it is of volcanic origin, though the original shape and position of the crater are difficult to trace. The principal material in its formation, I have learned, is a stratified tufa, interspersed with blocks of harder volcanic rocks, such as vesicular lava and greenstone."

"Toward the northeast, I notice, there is quite a mountain range, and one particularly lofty peak."

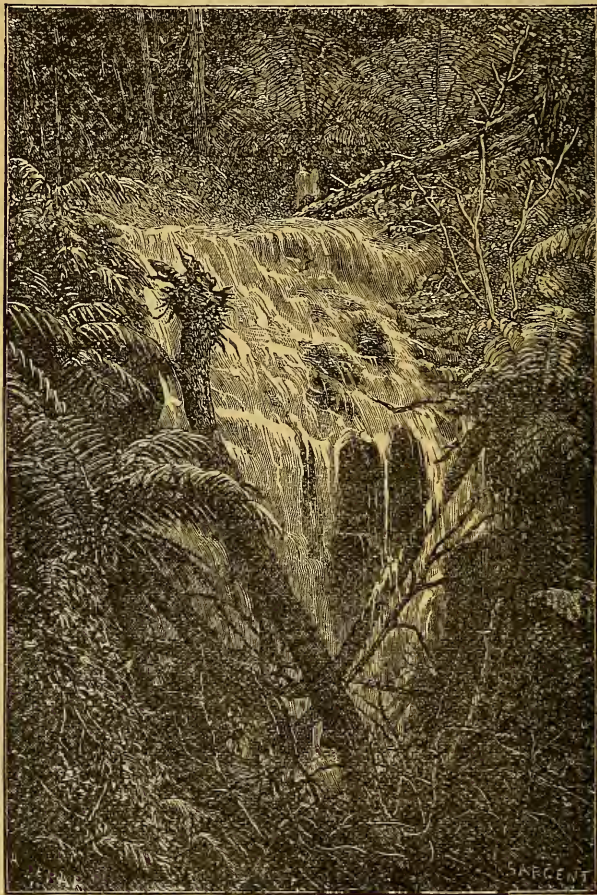
"That is El Yunque—the anvil—3,000 feet high. And now, as we draw nearer, you can see that the southwest part of the island is less elevated, forming a plateau covered with grass, destitute of trees, and bordered with cliffs. Some other parts of the shore toward us, you will observe, present the same appearance. At still other points, the headlands form abrupt cliffs toward the sea, and are separated by narrow valleys, clothed in rich vegetation, and watered by small streams of excellent water."

"The island is very picturesque, I should judge," observed Chester, after a long look through the glass.

"It is, indeed," said the Captain; "particularly when approached from the north. The mountains, rising rapidly from the sea, have, when seen from that side, an aspect of grandeur which they lose when seen from this direction."

"Where is our harbor, Captain?" asked Chester.

“Round on the northeast side,” was the answer. “It is called Cumberland Bay, and is well sheltered from the winds.”



MOUNTAIN STREAM, JUAN FERNANDEZ.

In due time they came to anchor in this bay; and immediately after hastened on shore.

Two valleys open into the bay, and here they found

the only settlement, consisting of a few huts, occupied by a dozen or more Chilians.

The first settler was a Spaniard, after whom the island was named, and who it is thought introduced the goats which have since multiplied so enormously. When he and his family had departed, buccaneers took possession. For a long time the Spaniards fought the outlaws, and at last the viceroy of Peru caused a large number of dogs to be landed, in the hope that they would destroy the goats and thus deprive the buccaneers of this resource; but the steepness of the summits and of the cliffs preserved many of those animals. At the present time the dogs have been nearly exterminated by the settlers, and the goats have increased again, though mostly confined to the southern slope of the island.

The buccaneers having at last abandoned the island, it was made a penal settlement by Chili, and the convicts built some small batteries, dug caves in the hill-sides, and constructed one or two foot paths over the mountains.

The visitors found that the settlers, besides cultivating fruit and vegetables, raised unlimited quantities of poultry, which fact they were not slow in communicating to the Captain, who promptly and kindly acted on the information.

In their ramble they saw several horses and asses, and learned that vast numbers roam over the island in a half wild condition. They had noticed that the settlers kept horned cattle and a few sheep, but it was evident not as many as the resources of the pasture offered. They saw no reptiles, and the Professor declared that none were to be found on the island.

At length, in their walk, they came to the cave in the bay next west of Cumberland bay, and which is said to have been the one occupied by Alexander Selkirk while he remained on this island.

"What is the true story of Selkirk, Professor?" asked Eugene, while they were resting near the mouth of the cave. "I should like very much to hear it."

"It is simply this," was the reply. "Alexander Selkirk, a Scotch sailing-master on board the ship *Cinque Ports* of Dampier's squadron, was left on this island at his own request, in the year 1704, on account of differences with his captain. He remained here in solitude four years and four months, and was finally taken off in February, 1709, by Captain Woodes Rogers. After having exhausted his ammunition, he subsisted by running down and catching goats."

"And do you really think this is the cave where he dwelt?"

"Tradition says so; and quite likely this spot was really his home."

"The summit of the pass over the Yunque range is called the lookout," said the Captain, "and is well worth a visit."

"Ah, yes," exclaimed the Professor, "and, if we have time, we must go to the spot, for a tablet reciting the principal points of the solitary's history has been placed there by the officers of the British ship *Topaz*, and I am sure we would all like to see it."

"I fear it is impossible," said the Captain; "for our time is about up now."

"Very well," rejoined the Professor, rising, "then we will return to the settlement at once."

"Professor," asked Chester, as they walked along, "do you think Selkirk's story really gave DeFoe his idea of 'Robinson Crusoe?'"

"Indeed I do not," was the emphatic answer; "and there is no good reason to suppose it did."

"Selkirk was not the only man, nor even the first, left alone on this island," observed the Captain.

"Who was the other?" asked Eugene.

"A Mosquito Indian was left here by accident, previous to his time, and taken away again, after the lapse of three years, by Dampier."

On arriving at Cumberland Bay, they found that the provisions and fruit ordered by the Captain, including the poultry, had already been sent on board, and so hastened to follow, and an hour later the yacht steamed out of the beautiful harbor.

Two days later they sighted the islands of St. Felix and Ambrosia, together called the St. Felix Islands. They present a rocky, barren appearance, and are uninhabited except by sea-birds, who flock there in vast numbers.

In due time they saw the Island of San Lorenzo, off the town of Callao; and a little later entered the port.

This town, the port of Lima, is well laid out. The streets are of good width and clean, the houses are mostly of but one story. The city was destroyed in 1746 by an earthquake, and remains are yet to be seen, at certain points, as gloomy monuments placed over the ill-fated persons who were thus suddenly cut off. There is a railway from Callao to Lima, which is but seven miles distant.

Early in the afternoon, the Captain, the Professor, and the brothers went ashore, and at once hastened to the office of the United States consul.

The consul was at his post, and welcomed his fellow-countrymen with great cordiality. After some little time spent in social chat, Chester suddenly asked:

"Do you know a gentleman by the name of Pierpont, sir—Lyman Pierpont?"

"I do not," answered the consul, after a moment's reflection.

"A man some fifty-four or fifty-five years of age?" persisted Chester.

"Never heard of him," said the consul, slowly shaking his head.

"Perhaps some one in the office?" suggested the Captain.

"I'll ask," and the consul arose and entered the next room.

Presently he returned and said :

"No one of the clerks ever heard the name before."

"Do you know a person by the name of Wayland?" asked Chester, referring to a letter in his hand.

"Stephen Wayland?"

"That's the name."

"Oh, yes, we know him quite well. A trader; has been all over the South Seas, and now has settled here, and is doing an extensive business with San Francisco."

"Where can we find him?"

"Close by; I'll go with you," and the little party went out together.

They found Mr. Wayland in comfortable quarters, and quite ready to give them his attention. He was a good-natured Yankee, of some forty-five or forty-six years of age, and his looks promised as many more years of life and happiness.

"Oho!" he exclaimed, when Chester made known their errand, "you've come to see me on account of the letter I wrote to Professor Pierpont about his brother. Well, I'll tell you how that happened. You see I've been on about every known island in Polynesia, and so, of course, have been among the Hawaiian Islands any number of times. Years ago I used to see Lyman Pierpont in Honolulu;—that was in the old King's time. After that I met him more than once on Kanai; then I lost track of him. I knew Warren Worthington well. Had some business with him in San Francisco. A while ago, in my New York papers—I take all the important

American newspapers, I want you to understand—I saw an account of what he proposed to do for that New England university. Then I saw the hitch in the scheme, and how all depended on Lyman Pierpont's being found. I was turning the matter over in my mind one day, while out on the streets here, when all at once I saw the man himself, or his double, right before me. I accosted him, of course, and called him by name. He only scowled and said he did n't know me. I then said: 'You are Lyman Pierpont, I am sure.' 'You are mistaken, sir,' he replied, coldly; 'my name is George Thompson,' and with that he hurried away."

"Ah!" exclaimed the Consul, "George Thompson! the man who started for the Galapagos Islands the other day."

"Exactly," replied Wayland.

"Then he's gone?" cried the Captain and the brothers in a breath.

"Yes," answered the trader; "but let me finish: Although the man claimed that his name was Thompson, I was satisfied it was Pierpont and nothing else, and so, after finding out what he was up to, I wrote that letter to his brother, and then kept a close watch on him. He fitted out a little vessel, and a week ago sailed for the Galapagos. From there he is going directly to Nukahiva, one of the northern islands of the Marquesas group, after which he intends to settle on one of the Tonga Islands."

"Well, Captain," exclaimed Chester, turning to the master of the *Albatross*, "what have you to say to this?"

"I say the sooner we're under way for the Galapagos, the better," was the prompt reply.

"How soon can you start?" asked Eugene, eagerly.

"Early to-morrow morning," answered the Captain.

"You must give us the pleasure of your company until then, gentlemen," said the Consul, cordially.

"Yes, indeed," chimed in Wayland; "my house is large — stay with me."

"For my part," said the Captain, "while thanking you both heartily for your kind invitations, I must decline, as every moment of my time will be occupied. But these gentlemen —"

"Will stay, of course," said Mr. Wayland, quickly.

"Yes," laughed Chester; "we will take you at your word, and tarry with you till morning."

"Nothing could please us more," exclaimed the Consul, in a voice of satisfaction. And while the Captain hurried away, the official and the trader exerted themselves to the utmost to entertain their guests.

They succeeded; and the next morning accompanied them on board the yacht, where, after partaking of an elegant repast which the Captain had caused to be prepared, the new friends parted, with mutual feelings of esteem for each other.

As the shore-boat left the steamer's side, her propeller commenced to revolve, and she was at once headed toward the northwest.

CHAPTER IX.

THE GALAPAGOS GROUP.

NATURALLY, during the first day, as the yacht sped rapidly on its way toward the equator, the brothers' talk was almost exclusively of the uncle whom they were going to seek, and the new friends whom they had just left behind them. But the next morning, when the Professor and Captain Bradford joined them in their usual place on the quarter-deck, Eugene presently turned to the Captain, and asked :

"Have you ever visited the Galápagos, Captain?"

"Yes, on two occasions," was the answer.

"I am glad of that," said the young man; "for now you can tell us something about them, as well as the Professor."

"I am quite at your service," rejoined the Captain. "What do you want to know?"

"Anything that is interesting. How much of a group is it?"

"There are six — yes, I might say seven — principal islands, eight or ten smaller, and a vast number of islets, some being mere rocks."

"Quite an archipelago, then."

"Yes; on a small scale."

"The group belongs to Ecuador, I believe?" said Chester, inquiringly.

"Yes; and lies about six hundred miles off the coast."

"Galápagos," mused Eugene; "it's a queer name."

"The islands," explained the Captain, "were discovered

by the Spaniards, who named them from the numerous land tortoises, called *galápagos* in the Spanish language."

"Thanks, Captain; it's a satisfaction to know a little thing like that, sometimes."

"Which of the islands is the largest of the group?" asked Chester.

"Albermarle," was the reply, "which, if I am not mistaken, is quite sixty miles long and about fifteen broad; it is also the most elevated, reaching a height of 4,700 feet."

"Albermarle," repeated Eugene; "that is n't a Spanish name."

"No," said the Captain; "the single islands have received English names."

"What are the other large islands called?" asked Chester.

"The second is Indefatigable, after which come Narborough, James, Chatham, Charles, and then, perhaps, Hood's."

"They are volcanic, of course?" turning to the Professor.

"Yes," answered the Professor; "and with the exception of a few ejected fragments of fused granite, found by Darwin, every part consists of lava, volcanic tufa, basalt, and other eruptive rocks."

"Are there any active volcanoes now?"

"Volcanic activity seems to be nearly extinct at present. Two craters were seen in action on Narborough in 1814, and Morrel, in his 'Voyages,' describes a terrific eruption in 1825. Darwin, too, in 1835, saw a small jet of smoke issuing from one of the great craters of Albermarle Island. It is certain that on these two islands the lava streams look much fresher than on the others, and the vegetation is much more scanty. As a rule, the volcanoes of the eastern islands appear to have been extinct for a much longer time than those of the western."

"I have heard," said Chester, "that the climate is remarkably temperate, considering the position directly under the equator."

"Yes," responded the Professor; "and this is due to the low temperature of the Peruvian current, which, coming from the antarctic regions, strikes here to the westward, after having followed closely up the coast of South America. This current meets here a part of the equatorial current starting from the Bay of Panama, and attention has been called to the curious phenomenon observed by the *Beagle*, of the water being 60° on the southern side of Albermarle Island, and 80° on the northern."

"The group is not remarkable for luxuriant vegetation, is it?" asked Eugene.

"The lower parts of the islands are extremely arid and destitute of water," answered the Professor; "but the summits, which are generally covered by clouds, receive from them sufficient moisture to sustain an abundant vegetation and to be susceptible of cultivation."

"Don't they have what is called the rainy season?"

"Yes, from November to March; but no very great quantity of rain falls."

"Then they must suffer from droughts occasionally."

"Yes, and severely. In the year 1872, more than two thousand head of cattle perished from that cause on Charles Island alone."

"How about inhabitants?" asked Chester. "Are there many on the islands?"

"The largest settlement, called Floriana, is on Charles Island. At one time it numbered from two hundred to three hundred inhabitants; but of late it has dwindled down to about a dozen persons, who are very destitute, owing to the abandonment of the islands as a place of call for whalers and other vessels. The only other inhabited island is Chatham."

"Why do vessels no longer call at the Galápagos?"

"Because they can no longer procure the supplies of turtles for which the islands were once so famous."

"I have read," said Chester, "that the islands possess many specimens of plants and of the animal kingdom peculiar to themselves; and, if I am not mistaken, the great turtles you speak of are among the latter."

"Quite right," said the Professor; "and not only is there a large number of animal and vegetable forms not found in any other part of the world, but some of them are confined to single islands of the group, and what is still more extraordinary, strongly marked varieties, if not different species, of the same genus replace one another in islands not far apart."

"Then, Professor, considering the evidently recent formation of the islands, the problem of the origin of organic life presents itself here in a most striking manner."

"It does, indeed; and I consider myself most fortunate in having an opportunity to visit the group."

"I suppose there are plenty of what are known as domestic animals," said Eugene.

"Yes," answered the Captain; "cattle, pigs, and goats are to be found in large numbers on Charles and Chatham islands."

"Are there many birds?"

"Not less than twenty-six species are known to inhabit the group," said the Professor.

"Yes," exclaimed the Captain; "and I want you to take particular notice of the extreme tameness of these same birds."

"Ah!" said the Professor; "that has always been a wonder to visitors."

"There are some very curious reptiles, I have heard," said Eugene.

"Yes, indeed," replied the Captain, quickly; "and first among them are the land tortoises the Professor has mentioned, and which formerly were so large and abundant. Then there are three or four species of lizards, two quite large,—three or four feet in length, in fact,—and confined, as I think the Professor will tell you, exclusively to this group."

"Quite true," assented the Professor; "and one of the two is the only marine saurian of our epoch. It inhabits the shores of all the islands, swimming out to sea and feeding on seaweed."

"And the other?" asked Chester.

"Is terrestrial and herbivorous, inhabiting burrows or crevices in the lava; it is confined to a few of the central islands."

"Sea turtles are very numerous, are they not?"

"Yes; and of good quality."

"If I remember rightly, Commodore Porter has something very interesting to say about the great land tortoises that have been mentioned."

"I think he has," said the Professor; "but at this moment I cannot recall his words."

"His work is in the library below," suggested the Captain.

"All right," exclaimed Eugene; "I'll find it," and he hurried away.

Presently he returned with the book, and having found the passage he wanted, read as follows:

"Those extraordinary animals, the tortoises of the Galápagos, properly deserve the name of the elephant tortoise. Many of them were of a size to weigh upward of three hundred weight; and nothing, perhaps, can be more disagreeable or clumsy than they are in their external appearance. Their motion resembles strongly that of the elephant; their steps slow, regular, and heavy;

they carry their body about a foot from the ground, and their legs and feet bear no slight resemblance to the animal to which I have likened them; their neck is from eighteen inches to two feet in length, and very slender; their head is proportioned to it, and strongly resembles that of a serpent; but, hideous and disgusting as is their appearance, no animal can possibly afford a more wholesome, luscious, and delicate food than they do; the finest green turtle is no more to be compared to them, in point of excellence, than the coarsest beef is to the finest veal; and after once tasting the Galápagos tortoises, every other animal food fell greatly in our estimation. These animals are so fat as to require neither butter nor lard to cook them, and this fat does not possess that cloying quality, common to that of most other animals; and when tried out, it furnishes an oil superior in taste to that of the olive. The meat of this animal is the easiest of digestion, and a quantity of it, exceeding that of any other food, can be eaten without experiencing the slightest inconvenience. But what seems the most extraordinary in this animal, is the length of time that it can exist without food; for I have been well assured that they have been piled away among the casks in the hold of a ship, where they have been kept eighteen months, and, when killed at the expiration of that time, were found to have suffered no diminution in fatness or excellence. They carry with them a constant supply of water, in a bag at the root of the neck, which contains about two gallons; and on tasting that found in those we killed on board, it proved perfectly fresh and sweet. They are very restless when exposed to the light and heat of the sun, but will lie in the dark from one year's end to the other without moving; in the day-time they appear remarkably quick-sighted and timid, drawing their head into their shell on the slightest motion of any object;

but they are entirely destitute of hearing, as the loudest noise—even the firing of a gun—does not seem to alarm them in the slightest degree, and at night, or in the dark, they appear perfectly blind.’”

“A very good description, indeed,” commented the Captain, approvingly.

“I think I should like to taste of the elephant tortoise,” said Chester

“Taste of it!” exclaimed Eugene, “a great four-legged serpent, with a shell on its back. Ugh!”

“You have no idea what good eating they make,” said the Captain. “Looks are nothing, you know.”

“Looks nothing!” cried Eugene. “But perhaps not in the Galápagos; perhaps they eat those great lizards, there?”

“They do, indeed,” rejoined the Captain; “and very good eating they are, too.”

“What, *you* have eaten them?”

“Certainly; and the tortoise as well.”

“There, that will do for to-day. I want to hear no more,” and taking up the book, he hurried away.

After a marvelously quick passage, the *Albatross* came to anchor off Charles Island, and the Captain and his passengers hastened on shore. A person representing himself to be the governor, was at the landing to meet them; and to him the Captain, who was a fair Spanish scholar, put the all-important question: “Had a man named Pierpont or Thompson been there lately?”

Pierpont; no. Thompson; perhaps. Was it he who owned a small schooner, the *Rover*, and had several Kanakas with him?

The very same.

Then he had left there only two days before, and was still among the islands, perhaps at Chatham, where there were some settlers, or it might be at Albermarle, or pos-

sibly Narborough. But, wherever he was, he would return to Charles Island by the next day, or the next but one at the latest. How did he know? The owner of the schooner had himself said so, and had requested him, meantime, to procure all the tortoises he could for him, and, behold! he had already secured ten large ones. Would the señors look at them? They were close by.

"By all means," exclaimed Chester and Eugene, with alacrity. And they followed the governor to the turtle pen, where they saw the most repulsive-looking reptiles the mind can conceive of, and which even Commodore Porter's description had hardly prepared them for.

"Gracious!" exclaimed Eugene, "to think of those hideous creatures as an article of food!"

The governor understood English a little.

"Ah! very nice," he said, earnestly; "you try him once, you never more leave Galápagos."

"That is an inducement, truly," said Eugene, sarcastically, as he cast an eye over the uninviting landscape.

As they turned away from the turtle pen, the Captain, addressing his companions, said:

"Well, gentlemen, what course shall we take? According to our friend, the governor, Lyman Pierpont was here at Charles Island only two days ago; is now somewhere among the group, and will return to this bay to-morrow or next day. Shall we wait quietly where we are, or go after him?"

"I say, follow him up," exclaimed Eugene promptly.

"If we do so," said his brother, "we may never overtake him, for he may always be just ahead of us. I should think, therefore, as he is to return, it would be better to wait for him here."

"But, notwithstanding he has agreed to do so, he may not return," objected Eugene, "and in that case there would be just so much more precious time lost."

"Let us wait here till to-morrow, or even the morning of the day after," suggested the Professor; "and if in that time he has not appeared, we can search for him where, in the Captain's judgment, he is most likely to be found."

"I like that idea," said Chester.

"It seems the wisest plan," added the Captain, approvingly.

"I agree," said Eugene, "and now that's settled, what shall we do for the next twenty-four hours or so?"

"I can find enough to occupy the time," said the Professor, casting a wistful glance about him.

"Where is the settlement?" asked Eugene.

"Floriana," answered the governor, "is up the mountain, yonder, a thousand feet or more, and about four and a half miles distant. Too hot here on the coast; some of us could not stand it."

"Then, Professor," said Eugene, "if you want to take a turn by yourself, now's your chance. I, for one, propose to visit the capital."

"Very well," assented the Professor, eagerly; "you three go with the governor. I'll ramble about for a few hours, and then return to the yacht with such specimens as I find." And so they parted, the palæontologist going off toward a curious valley, while the others followed the governor up the mountain path.

At first they passed through leafless thickets, but higher up, the woods gradually became greener, and as soon as they crossed the ridge of the island they were refreshed by a fine southerly breeze, and their sight was gladdened by a green and thriving vegetation. In this upper region they saw coarse grasses and ferns in abundance, but no tree-ferns, nor did they see any member of the palm family, which the Professor afterwards said was singular, as 360 miles northward, Cocos island takes

its name from the number of cocoanut palms upon it. The houses of the settlement they found irregularly scattered over a flat space of ground, which was cultivated with sweet-potatoes and bananas. The inhabitants were mostly blacks, and although complaining of poverty, obtained, without much trouble, the means of subsistence. In the woods they saw many wild pigs and goats; but the staple article of animal food, the governor told them, was still supplied by the tortoises. Their numbers, he said, had of course been greatly reduced in the island, but the people could still obtain a week's supply in two days' time. He groaned as he told them of the past, when there was plenty for everyone, and said that the time had been when one ship's company had gathered and taken to the beach two hundred tortoises in a single day.

The governor's residence they found to be somewhat better than those about it, and his excellency exerted himself to the utmost to entertain them. But before the day was done, all were heartily tired of Charles Island, and by unanimous consent, they returned to the yacht to pass the night.

With the Professor, however, it was far different. He was delighted with the miserable island, and emphatically declared that he would gladly spend a month there.

"I have learned much this day," he said, in a tone of quiet satisfaction, "and there is much more to learn."

"Have you seen any of those great lizards that measure a yard or more?" asked Eugene.

"The amblyrhynchus, you mean. Yes, I have seen quite a number."

"Any snakes?"

"Yes, several. They are of a South American species, and I have no doubt are quite abundant."

"We have not noticed any insects," said Chester; "have you?"

"Very few," was the answer; "they are scarce and small in this group."

"What have you found and brought away with you, Professor?" asked the Captain.

"Many shells, for one thing," was the answer, "and I am convinced that fully one-half of them are peculiar to the group. I also found a small piece of coral, but it must have been brought here by the sea with other matter, or left here by some one, for coral reefs nowhere exist about these islands."

"Did you notice that the vegetation in the lower parts of the island is entirely without verdure?" asked Eugene.

"You are not a close observer, my young friend," smiled the Professor. "All the plants I have seen were covered with verdure, and some even were in flower, but the leaves and flowers were so small as to give the plants the appearance of being bare."

"Ah! that explains it." Then turning to the mate, who at that moment joined them, "Well, what are we to have for dinner, Mr. Morgan?"

"Turtle soup and turtle steak," was the prompt reply.

"None for me, thank you," said Eugene, hastily.

"But this is sea-turtle," explained the mate, "the sailors took several to-day. They are very plenty about these islands."

"Ah! that's another thing, altogether," said Eugene, in a relieved tone.

The next day passed without any signs of the *Rover*, as did also the day following; so, having purchased a few necessary provisions of the governor, they sailed for Chatham Island. Nothing was to be seen of the schooner here; and the few on the island declared that they had not seen a vessel of any kind for nearly three months.

During a walk on shore, Chester and Eugene saw several large tortoises, one of which might have weighed two hundred pounds. This one was eating a piece of cactus, and as they approached, it stared at them and slowly stalked away; the others merely gave deep hisses and drew in their heads. These monsters, with their miserable surroundings of barren rock, black lava, huge cacti, and seemingly leafless shrubs, in the eyes of the young men had a most unearthly look, and Eugene emphatically declared that he knew they were the denizens of another and less attractive world, who, deceived by the homelike appearance of the islands, had landed there by mistake.

Presently, coming up with another of the huge reptiles, Eugene had a mind for a ride. The monster was quietly pacing along, but the instant the young man passed in front of it, with a deep hiss, its legs and head disappeared, and it fell to the ground with a heavy sound, as if struck dead. He now mounted its back, and giving a few hard raps on the hinder part of its shell, it slowly rose with him and walked away. But the rider found it exceedingly difficult to keep his seat, and at last was ignominiously pitched off, landing in a mass of cacti and broken lava. It was during this walk that they particularly noticed the exceeding tameness of the birds, the feathered creatures caring no more for them than for the inanimate rocks about them.

Being satisfied that Lyman Pierpont had not, and would not visit Chatham Island, they lost no time in getting under way for Indefatigable and Albemarle. On the latter island they saw many large specimens of the amblyrhynchus.

The two species resemble each other in general form; one, however, is terrestrial and the other aquatic. The latter species is extremely common on all the islands

throughout the group, and lives exclusively on the rocky sea-beaches, being never found even ten yards in-shore. It is a hideous-looking creature, of a dirty-black color, stupid, and sluggish in its movements. The usual length of a full-grown one is, as has already been stated, about three feet, but there are some even four feet long; a large one the brothers caught, weighed twenty-one pounds. On this island they grow to a greater size than on any of the others. Their tails are flattened sideways, and all four feet partially webbed. They are sometimes seen two or three hundred yards from shore, swimming about; but they do not live on fish, their only food being sea-weed. Their limbs and strong claws are admirably adapted for crawling over the rugged and fissured masses of lava, which everywhere form the coast. The Professor and his young companions more than once came upon a group of a dozen or more of these hideous reptiles, stretched on the black rocks, a few feet above the surf, basking in the sun.

The terrestrial species has a round tail, and toes without webs. This lizard, instead of being found like the other on all the islands, is confined to the central part of the group, namely, to Albemarle, James, Barrington, and Indefatigable Islands. Some of these lizards inhabit the high and damp parts of the islands, but they are far more numerous about the coast; indeed their burrows are to be seen at every step. Like the sea-kind, they are loathsome-looking reptiles, of a yellowish-orange beneath and a brownish-red color above, and have a singularly stupid appearance. In their movements they are lazy and half torpid. They slowly crawl along with their tails and bellies dragging on the ground. They often stop and doze for a minute or two, with closed eyes and hind legs spread out on the parched soil. They feed by day, and do not wander far from their burrows;

if frightened, they rush to them with a most awkward gait. These lizards, when cooked, yield a white meat, which is highly relished by those whose stomachs soar above all prejudices.

The yacht circumnavigated Albemarle, Narborough being within the area included, but nowhere was there any appearance of a sail. They then visited the other island of the group; and at length, without having met with any success, returned to Charles Island, after an absence of a little more than four days.

The Governor was on hand to receive them. The schooner, he said, had not returned; but the little Chilian vessel they saw in the bay had come in from Albemarle the very day they had left. They had met the *Rover* in the channel between Albemarle and Narborough; and in answer to their hail, had been informed that she was bound to Nukahiva direct. The owner had requested the master of the Chilian craft to express to the Governor his regrets for not being able to return for the tortoises he had ordered. "And so," said the Governor sadly, in conclusion, "there they are, and I am out just so much money — that I had counted on."

"Well, well," said the Captain, soothingly, "we'll take them of you." Then, with a laugh: "I know my friend, Mr. Eugene here, will do his share toward disposing of them."

"I'll never taste of one," exclaimed Eugene, quickly.

"We'll see," was the quiet reply. "And now, Governor, we shall want some pigs and goats."

The provisions, including the tortoises, were sent on board, and after once more bidding the friendly Governor adieu, they steamed out of the little bay, and headed for Nukahiva.

At length dinner was ready, and notwithstanding their great disappointment, all sat down with a good appetite.

For the second course, a tempting dish was set before them, of which all partook largely, but none with greater relish than Eugene.

"Captain," he said, at last, "the cook improves, or this is a better sea-turtle than any we've had yet."

"It is n't sea-turtle," said the Captain, quietly.

"What is it, then?" demanded Eugene. "It is n't pork, nor goat's meat?"

"No; something far better than either."

"What, then?" And even as he asked the question, the truth flashed upon him.

"Yes," laughed the Captain, "you've guessed it; and I think you've heartily enjoyed a dish of real *galápagos*."

"I give in," said Eugene, frankly; "and now I know a thing may be much better than it looks. I shall make good your words, Captain; I shall do my full share toward disposing of the stock you have on hand."

"I knew it," was the sententious reply.

CHAPTER X.

THE BROAD PACIFIC—THE MARQUESAS ISLANDS.

THE next morning Eugene spent some time in the cabin, diligently studying the great chart of the Pacific Ocean. He knew their course was laid a little south of west, or, as the sailors have it, west by south, and that they would soon be on a line with three islands to the north of them, Gallego, Duncan, and Clipperton, the last belonging to France, and with the few islets about it, sometimes called the Sandwich Islands. After that, he saw there was only one vast expanse of water on every hand until the Marquesas were reached, with the single exception of St. Paul's Island, far to the south, and about on the one hundred and nineteenth meridian.

Leaving the cabin, he made his way to the quarter-deck, where he found the Professor seated in his usual place, and the Captain, Mr. Morgan, and Chester grouped about him.

"Ah, Mr. Eugene, where do you come from?" asked the Captain, with his pleasant smile.

"From studying the chart," answered Eugene; "and I see we are now fairly on our way to the Marquesas."

"Yes," rejoined the Captain; "and if we have good weather, I hope to land you on Nukahiva by the time you are wholly recovered from the fatigues of your late run among the lava beds of the Galápagos."

"If you do that, it will just suit me," laughed Eugene.

"Let's see," asked Chester, "about where do the Marquesas lie? You ought to be able to tell us that, brother."

"They lie between $7^{\circ} 47'$ and 11° south latitude, and 138° and 141° west longitude," answered Eugene, promptly.

"Well, that's a pretty long stretch; and I should say the Captain will have to keep a sharp eye on the engineer in order to make good his promise to you."

"Oh, I can do it," said Captain Bradford, confidently.

"The Marquesas are really quite a group, are they not?" asked Chester.

"Yes," answered the Captain; "there are two clusters, and quite a number of islands in all. I don't know just how many."

"Thirteen," said the Professor; "and they contain about four hundred and eighty square miles."

"They are quite thickly populated, I believe," said Chester.

"Exactly what the present population is I am not prepared to say," was the reply. "Fifteen years ago it was a little more than 10,000. It will not, I think, vary much from that, now."

"The Captain says there are two clusters."

"Yes; the northern and southern. The latter, consisting of Hiwaoa or Dominican, Tohuata, Motane, and Fatuhiva or Magdalena, was discovered in 1595 by Mendaña de Neyva, a Spaniard, and by him named Las Marquesas de Mendoza, in honor of the viceroy of Peru. The northern group was discovered in 1791 by Captains Marchand and Ingraham. The largest islands of this cluster are Nukahiva, Uahugo or Washington, Uapoa or Adams, Shotomiti or Franklin, and Fatunhu."

"They are not of coral formation, Professor?" said Eugene.

"No, they are of volcanic origin, a fact which is sufficiently attested by long rows of bleak basaltic rocks. Each island is formed by a mountain ridge, which rises

to an elevation of 2,000 or 3,000 feet, sending forth numerous lesser chains, between which fertile valleys open toward the ocean. The coast is for the most part rugged and precipitous, and although there are some coral reefs, the roadsteads are generally unprotected, and hence furnish no safe anchorage."

"How do the climate and productions compare with those of the other groups of sub-tropical Polynesia?" asked Chester.

"They resemble those of the other volcanic islands," was the reply.

"There is plenty of rain, I suppose?"

"Yes, the rainy season lasts from November till April. Droughts, however, are not unfrequent during the hot season. Krusenstein, I think, mentions one which lasted for ten months."

"I have read that the vegetation of the Marquesas Islands, or Mendaña Archipelago, as I believe it is sometimes called, is truly wonderful," said Chester.

"It is so," rejoined the Professor; "the valleys, the soil of which is formed by hundreds of layers of decayed vegetation, are extremely fertile, and produce all tropical fruits in abundance. The yam, sugar-cane, banana, plantain, taro, sweet potato, cotton plant, and the like grow almost without culture. The hillsides are covered with forests of cocoanut, bread-fruit, and papaw trees, the fan-palm and other trees; but the vigorous growth of underbrush renders them almost inaccessible."

"I suppose they cannot boast of much in the way of native animals?" said Eugene.

"The fauna of the islands is as poor as their flora is rich," was the reply. "There are no indigenous mammalia, but swine, cats, and rats have been introduced from Europe and America."

"Not much chance for game there, I fear; but how about birds?"

"Of birds there are only four or five distinct species: among them the kurukuru and the gupid, a parrot of the size of the robin, are the most beautiful."

"But," suggested the Captain, "there are any quantities of water-fowl on the coast."

"True," assented the Professor, "I should have remembered that, and perhaps I ought to mention that valuable mussels are found near the shore."

"I have heard a great deal about the people," said Eugene. "To what family do they belong?"

"The accepted theory, until recently, has been that they, in common with the brown Polynesians, belong to the Malay race. But Rev. Robert W. Logan calls attention to the fact that later investigations, by Judge Fornander, of the Hawaiian Islands, and certain German scholars, render it probable that they may be a branch of the Caucasian race. He says: 'It is thought that by means of their languages, traditions, and mythologies the Polynesians can be traced back from their present abode, step by step, through the island groups of the Pacific and Indian Oceans to the Indian Peninsula, and onward to the central tablelands of Asia, whence the Caucasian races, in the beginnings of history, emigrated westward and southward.'"

"They are distinguished by grace and symmetry of person, I am told," said Chester.

"Yes," assented the Professor, "particularly the men, who are also remarkable for their gigantic size and great strength. One of the chiefs being measured carefully was found to be six feet and eight inches in height, and he said that he knew another chief who was at least a foot taller than himself."

"They are not a very dark people?" said Chester.

"Their complexion," responded the Professor, "is of a light copper color; the women appear almost white, but

this is the result of the application of the root of the papaw tree."

"Yes, I've read about that," exclaimed Eugene. "Porter mentions it, I believe."

"He does ; and also refers to the practice of tattooing."

"They are marvelous at that, are they not ?"

"They are indeed ; and it is practiced by both sexes."

"There are many nations where this decoration is worn," said the Captain ; but as I can testify, there are no people on the face of the earth who carry it out so fully as do the Marquesans ; every part of their bodies, even to the crown of the head and the fingers and toes being covered with the pattern."

"But the women don't carry it to that extent, do they ?" exclaimed Eugene.

"No," rejoined the Captain, "this extreme elaboration is only to be found in the men, the women contenting themselves with a bracelet or two tattooed on their arms, and a few similar ornaments here and there."

"They make quite a time when the tattooing is finished, do they not ?" asked Chester.

"Yes," said the Professor, "Langsdorff says that sometimes a rich islander will, either from generosity, ostentation, or love to his wife, make a feast in her honor when she has a bracelet tattooed round her arm, or perhaps her ear ornamented. A hog is then killed and the friends of both sexes are invited to partake of it ; the occasion of the feast being made known to them. It is expected that the same courtesy will be returned in case the wife of any of the guests being punctured. This is one of the few occasions on which women are allowed to eat pork."

"I should think," observed Eugene, "if they like the meat they would go in for tattooing frequently."

"There are times when the permission is taken advantage of. For instance, if in a very dry year bread-fruit,

hogs, roots, and other provisions became scarce, any one who has a good stock of them (which commonly happens to the chief), in order to distribute the stores, keeps open table for a certain time to an appointed number of poor artists, who are bound to give in return some strokes of the tattoo to all who choose to come for it; and, of course, such women as come are permitted to eat of the meat."

"How about social life?" asked Eugene.

"Their social organization is similar to that which prevailed in the Hawaiian Islands before the introduction of Christianity. They are divided into many tribes or clans, among whom bloody wars are of frequent occurrence. The taboo serves them instead of religion. The tabooed or privileged classes consist of *atnas*, who are venerated as superior beings; *tanas*, soothsayers and "medicine-men"; *tataunas*, priests and surgeons; *uhus*, the lowest rank of the hierarchy; *kataikis*, secular rulers; and *toas*, war chiefs. The non-tabooed classes are the *peio pekeios*, servants; *hokis*, singers and dancers; and *nohuas*, common laborers. The last-named class hold a similar position to that of the pariahs in India."

"What is it I've heard about the women?" asked Eugene. "Don't they have rather the best of it in a matrimonial way,—each one choosing her husband for herself, and as many as she pleases?"

"Yes; polyandry is among the peculiar institutions of the islanders. The women not only have as many husbands as they like, but retain them or not according to their pleasure. Stewart, who spent some time on the islands, says: 'We have yet met with no instance, in any rank of society, of a male with two wives, but are informed that for one woman to have two husbands is a universal habit. Some favorite in the father's household or retinue, at an early period becomes the husband of the daughter, who still remains under the paternal roof, till

contracted in marriage to a second individual; on which, she removes with her first husband to his habitation, and both herself and original companion are supported by him.'"

"That's pretty hard on the second husband," remarked Mr. Morgan.

"Yes," laughed Eugene; "but just think what a 'soft snap' it is for the first!"

"I should n't think there could be much love under such circumstances," said Chester, thoughtfully.

"On the contrary," replied the Professor, "instances of strong conjugal affection are reported of this peculiar people. Stewart says cases are known in which the infidelity and unkindness of a husband or wife has so deeply affected the happiness of the companion, as to lead to the commission of suicide, by swallowing a poisonous berry growing in the mountains, or by hanging."

"Is there any truth in the statement that the Marquesans are cannibals?" asked Eugene.

"The best authorities," answered the Professor, "state that cannibalism is sometimes practiced among them, but only as an act of vengeance. They say it is only the bodies of slain enemies of which now and then a slice is eaten. Their ordinary food consists principally of vegetables."

"But like all the other South Sea Islanders, they drink kava, and plenty of it," said the Captain.

"Yes," assented the Professor; "the highly intoxicating beverage called kava, or ava, and which is prepared by chewing the root of the kanoa plant (*Piper metisticum*), mixing it well with saliva, and then spitting it into a huge bowl, in which it is perfected by fermentation, is extensively used by them, and greatly to their hurt, as it produces leprosy and consumption."

"But generally speaking, they are a remarkably healthy people, are they not, Professor?" asked Chester.

"From what source did you get that impression?"

"I think from Stewart, whom you yourself quoted just now."

"I think Stewart does give that impression; but, in the first place, you must remember it is some time since he visited the group, and then, perhaps, you did not read him carefully."

"I remember," said Chester, "that after mentioning a visit of sympathy to a surly old woman, who lay sick in one corner of her hut, he says, 'It is the first instance I have met of confinement by sickness; and from all I can learn, their diseases are few and not very frequent.'"

"Ah!" rejoined the Professor, "but he goes on to say, 'Besides pulmonary affections and diseases of the liver, they have the dropsy, which they ascribe to having eaten fruit that has been tabooed with more than ordinary ceremony. They are also subject to rheumatism, which, in some instances, is so severe as to contract the fingers and toes, so as to cause them to be perfectly double. This effect,' he says, 'is also attributed by them to a superstitious cause.' He then mentions leprosy, and says that it covers the skin with a scurf, affects the use of the limbs, and draws the fingers backward; and further, he says diseases of the eye are not unfrequent, and that sometimes they produce total blindness. He also mentions several ordinary cutaneous diseases."

"Yes," said Chester; "but he adds that, notwithstanding, they are altogether a more smooth-skinned race than Hawaiians."

"Quite true; but, as you know, that is n't saying very much."

"I admit the fact," said Chester; "but surely they are not afflicted with that disgusting deformity, the elephantiasis?"

"I am afraid they are, and to a considerable extent."

"Haven't they learned to dress healthfully yet?" asked Eugene.

"It's a question what is the most healthful mode of dress for them," returned the Professor. "As a matter of fact, their clothing is still obtained from the mulberry tree, the bark of which they render thin and soft by beating, after the manner of the Samoans."

"They live comfortably?"

"Yes; their houses are erected on stone platforms, a few feet above the ground, and are neatly thatched with leaves of the cocoanut tree. They show, too, a remarkable regard for their dead, providing for their last resting-place houses quite as good as those they themselves inhabit."

"They ought to have an interesting history," suggested Eugene; "or, at least, something in the way of tradition."

"They have no history, whatever," said the Professor. "Even the first discovery of the islands by Europeans has been entirely forgotten, though the Spaniards, who it is claimed introduced swine, and also Cook (who in 1774 visited one of the islands) and Marchand, are still venerated as gods."

"The French claim the group, do they not?" asked Chester.

"Yes. Admiral DuPetit Thouars, by authority of the French government, took possession of the islands in 1842. The inhabitants afterwards made some unsuccessful attempts at reconquering their liberty. In 1850, the records state, the island of Nukahiva was made a penal colony for political convicts. Only one convict was sent there, however, and the project was abandoned; but the protectorate of France is still maintained."

"All the islands do not, or have not always acknowledged it though," said the Captain meaningly.

"How's that?" asked Eugene.

Why, in 1853, several Hawaiian missionaries were sent to Matunui, the chief of Fatuhiva, by his request, and as to what followed, Rev. Hiram Bingham, Jr., says: 'But only five days after they had landed, a French brig anchored there, bringing a Catholic priest. He demanded of Matunui and the other chiefs that these missionaries should be sent away, saying that the Marquesas Islands belonged to the French. One of the chiefs replied, "No; the land is not yours. It belongs to this people; and there never was a Frenchman born on Fatuhiva; and these teachers must not be sent back." So the Hawaiians were not sent away.'

"Good for the chief!" exclaimed Eugene. "The French have no business on the islands, if they're not wanted there—no more business than they have in Madagascar."

"There you are right," said the Captain, approvingly.

"I'm glad you think so—Chester, what have you found in that great book?"

His brother had left the quarter-deck for a moment, and now returned with a large open book in his hands.

"I have found something that I think will interest you all," he said, as he resumed his seat.

"What is it?" asked Eugene.

"The Professor has emphatically declared that the Marquesans have no history, has he not?"

"That's what he said."

"Well, I have found a bit of genuine Marquesan history, and so closely interwoven with our own, that I am sure it must prove entertaining."

"What is it, brother?"

"The account of Commodore Porter's visit to this people."

"You can hardly call that history, Chester," smiled the Professor.

"Why not?" asked the young man. "It is an authentic account of what happened among them at a very important period."

"A very brief period."

"True; but then I said it was a *bit* of history."

"Never mind whether it be history or not," interposed Eugene; let us have the story; we can name it afterwards."

"I agree to that," laughed the Professor; "and beg that Chester will begin."

"I shall not undertake to give you the whole story, just as it is written," premised Chester; "that, perhaps, would be too great an affliction. The less important parts I will condense, and let the Commodore speak fully when he has something graphic or particularly interesting to say."

"All right; go ahead," nodded Eugene condescendingly.

"Another thing," added Chester, in way of explanation, "the Commodore's names for the islands do not quite agree with those mentioned by the Professor; and I think he does not designate the clusters in the same way."

"I don't wonder at that," said Captain Bradford, "the clusters and islands, like all the archipelagoes in the Pacific, have more names than a royal prince of Spain."

"Perhaps," suggested the Professor, "the best way to designate the islands would be that adopted by a certain French authority. He calls the whole group the *Mendana Archipelago*; the northern cluster, *Washington*; the southern, *Marquesas*; the names for single islands it is hard to find a rule for."

"I believe in giving them the native names," said Chester.

"Perhaps that would be the most proper course," assented the Professor.

"It would," exclaimed Eugene, "for it is the only just course."

"Well," interposed the Captain, "now let's hear what the Commodore has to say."

"It was on the 24th of October, 1813, that Commodore Porter sighted what he calls the island of Rooahooga, one of the Washington group of the Marquesas Islands," prefaced Chester.

"That is what is now called Uahuga or Washington Island," commented the Professor.

"Well, after mentioning the other islands of the cluster, he proceeds to describe this one."

"What does he say?" asked Eugene.

"Its aspect," he says, 'on first making it, was little better than the barren and desolate islands we had been so long among; but on our nearer approach the fertile valleys, whose beauties were heightened by the pleasant streams and clusters of houses, and intervened by groups of the natives on the hills inviting us to land, produced a contrast much to the advantage of the islands we were now about visiting—indeed the extreme fertility of the soil, as it appeared to us after rounding the southeast point of the island, produced sensations we had been little accustomed to, and made us long for the fruits with which the trees appeared everywhere loaded.

"On rounding the southeast part of the island we saw a canoe coming off to the ship with eight of the natives, one of whom was seated in the bow with his head ornamented with yellow leaves, which at a distance we supposed to be feathers. They approached us very cautiously, and would not venture alongside until we had run very close in. We had a native of the island of Otaheite on board, who enabled them, but with apparent difficulty, to comprehend our wishes, and who gave them repeated assurances of our friendly disposition. They frequently

repeated to us the word *taya*, which signifies friend, and invited us to the shore. Their bodies were entirely naked, and their chief ornament consisted in the dark and fanciful lines formed by tattooing, which covered them. On their leaving us I bore away for several other canoes which were launched from the different coves with which the coast was indented, but nothing could induce them to come near the ship. I was anxious to procure some refreshments, but more so to obtain a knowledge of a people with whom the world is so little acquainted. One of the canoes displayed a white flag. I caused a similar emblem of peace to be exhibited, and after waiting some time, perceiving that they were fearful of coming alongside, I caused two boats to be manned and armed, and proceeded toward them. I soon approached them, and directed the Otaheitan to inform them that we were friendly disposed, and were willing to purchase of them the articles they had to sell, which consisted of hogs, plantains, bread-fruit, cocoanuts, etc., and through the same medium informed them that I should proceed to the shore, and there remain as a hostage for their safety. Some of them went off to the ship, but the greater number followed me to the shore, where they were collected in groups, armed with their spears and war-clubs, to receive me, and collecting in considerable numbers from every quarter. I went close in with my boat, where I made an exchange of pieces of iron hoops and other articles for their ornaments and fruit. In a few minutes the spears and war-clubs were laid aside, and swarms of natives swam off to me loaded with the produce of the island. All seemed greatly to rejoice that we had so precious an article to offer them as pieces of old iron hoops, which were held in such high estimation that good-sized pigs were purchased for a few inches. Some, to express their joy, were seen dancing on the beach with the most

extravagant gestures, while others expressed the pleasure they felt by shouting and clapping their hands. But, notwithstanding this friendly intercourse, it was very evident that they had strong suspicions of us. They always approached the boat with the greatest awe and agitation, and in every instance, where articles were presented to them, they shrunk back with terror, and retreated to the shore with the utmost precipitation. One among them, however, ventured to raise himself by the side of the boat, and perceiving a pistol lying in the stern sheets, showed an evident desire to possess it. It was with some difficulty I could make him let go his hold of the boat; and to intimidate him I presented the pistol at him; but it produced no other effect than joy, as he immediately held out both his hands to receive it, from which I concluded that they were unacquainted with the use of fire-arms.

“After leaving these friendly people I proceeded for the frigate, where I found the traffic with the canoes, that had gone off, had been conducted with much harmony. Some of them I passed very close to on their return, and the natives on board them expressed their extreme satisfaction by expressions of the most extravagant joy. One of them in the fullness of his heart, said he was so glad he longed to get on shore to dance. On rejoining the ship I was informed by the officers that the natives who had been on board had expressed much surprise at the sight of the goats, sheep, dogs, and other animals; but what seemed most to astonish them was one of the large Galápagos tortoises. It seemed as though they could not sufficiently feast their eyes on it; and to view it more at their ease they stretched themselves at full length on the deck around it; and this appeared to be their general practice when they wished to view leisurely any object that excited their attention, a practice which seems to bespeak the natural indolence of this people.

“ ‘The men of this island are remarkably handsome ; of large stature and well proportioned ; they possess every variety of countenance and feature, and a great difference is observable in the color of the skin, which for the most part is that of a copper color ; but some are as fair as the generality of working people much exposed to the sun of warm climate. The old men (but particularly the chiefs) are entirely black ; but this is owing wholly to the practice of tattooing, with which they are covered all over, and it requires a close inspection to perceive that the blackness of their skin is owing to this cause ; and when the eye is once familiarized with men ornamented after this manner we perceive a richness in the skin of an old man highly tattooed comparable to that which we perceive in a highly wrought piece of old mahogany ; for, on a minute examination, may be discovered innumerable lines, curved, straight, and irregular, drawn with the utmost correctness, taste, and symmetry, and yet apparently without order or any determined plan. The young men, the fairness of whose skin is contrasted by the ornaments of tattooing, certainly have, at first sight, a more handsome appearance than those entirely covered with it ; but in a short time we are induced to think that tattooing is as necessary an ornament for a native of these islands as clothing is for an European. The neatness and beauty with which this species of ornament is finished served greatly to surprise us, and we could not help believing that they had among them tattooers by profession, some of them, no doubt, equal in celebrity to the most renowned tailors of America, for we afterward discovered that the most wealthy and high class was more fully and handsomely tattooed than those of an inferior station, which is a sufficient evidence that tattooing has its price.

“ ‘The young girls that we had an opportunity of seeing, were, as I before observed, handsome and well

formed; their skins were remarkably soft and smooth, and their complexions no darker than many brunettes in



TATTOOED MARQUESAN CHIEFS.

America celebrated for their beauty. Their modesty was more evident than that of the women of any place we have visited since leaving our own country. Nakedness

they cannot consider offensive to modesty; they are accustomed to it from their infancy. I find no difficulty in believing that an American lady, who exposes to view her face, her bosom, and her arms, is as modest and virtuous as the wife of a Turk, who is seen only by her husband; or that a female of the Washington group, who is seen in a state of nature, may be as modest and virtuous as either. That they have a high sense of shame and pride, I had afterwards many opportunities of observing.’”

“Sail ho!” came suddenly from the lookout forward, and the Captain and Mr. Morgan rushed away.

Presently the others became interested in the stranger, and the book was laid aside for the day.



NECK ORNAMENT.

CHAPTER XI.

NUKAHIVA — A BATTLE WITH A NATIVE TRIBE.

OUR friends were early on the quarter-deck next morning, and Chester was speedily urged to go on with the Commodore's story.

"Well," he said, after referring to the volume, "I see that at daylight the following morning they bore up for Nukahiva, or, as he calls it, Madison's Island, where they put in to a beautiful bay, and came to anchor. This harbor the Commodore named Massachusetts Bay. Here he was soon joined by the *Essex Junior*, which vessel had parted company to cruise, when he believed himself sufficiently secure to commence a regular overhauling of the ships.

"As the *Essex* stood in toward the land, a boat came off from the shore with three white men in her, one of whom, to Porter's great astonishment, proved to be John M. Maury, an American midshipman, who had left the United States on furlough in a merchant-ship. He had been left on the island by the master of the vessel to gather sandal-wood while the ship was gone to China. As it was supposed the war would prevent the return of the ship, Mr. Maury and his party were received on board the frigate. Wilson, one of them, was an Englishman by birth. He had been many years on the islands, and with the exception of a cloth around his loins, was completely naked. His body was tattooed all over, and in every respect except color he had become a Polynesian. He assisted Commodore — then Captain — Porter as in-

terpreter, and without his aid he would have succeeded badly on the island.

“Porter landed with a party of marines and sailors. The drum appeared to give the natives much pleasure; and the regular movements of the marines occasioned great astonishment. They said they were spirits, or beings of a class different from other men. ‘I directed them,’ says Porter, ‘to be put through their exercises; and the firing of the muskets occasioned but little terror, except among the women, who generally turned away their faces and covered their ears with their hands. The men and boys were all attention to the skipping of the balls in the water; but at every fire all habitually inclined their bodies, as if to avoid the shot, although behind the men who were firing. After remaining a short time with them, I distributed among them some knives, fish-hooks, etc., which they received with much apparent pleasure; but no one offered, like the natives of the other island, anything in return.

““Observing the mountains surrounding the valleys to be covered with numerous groups of natives, I inquired the cause, and was informed that a warlike tribe residing beyond the mountains had been for several weeks at war with the natives of the valley, into which they had made several incursions, and had destroyed many houses and plantations, and had killed, by cutting around the bark, a great number of bread-fruit trees.

““I inquired if it were possible to get a message to them; and was informed that notwithstanding they were at war and showed no quarter to each other, there were certain persons of both tribes who were permitted to pass and repass freely and uninterrupted from one tribe to another; such, for example, as a man belonging to one tribe who had married a woman belonging to the other. I inquired if any such were present; and one being

pointed out to me, I directed him to proceed to the Happahs, and to tell them that I had come with a force sufficiently strong to drive them from the island, and if they presumed to enter the valley while I remained there, I should send a body of men to chastise them; to tell them to cease all hostilities so long as I remained among them; that if they had hogs or fruit to dispose of, they might come and trade freely with us, as I should not permit the natives of the valley to injure or molest them. To the natives of the valley—who listened attentively and with apparent pleasure to the message sent to the Happahs—I then addressed myself, and assured them that I had come with the most friendly disposition; that I wanted nothing from them but what I paid for; that they must look on us as brethren; and that I should protect them against the Happahs should they again venture to descend from the mountains. I directed them to leave at home their spears, slings, and clubs—their only weapons of war—in order that we might know them from the Happahs; and told them that I should consider all as my enemies who should appear armed in my presence. All listened with much attention; their spears and clubs were thrown on one side. My attention was soon drawn to an object which at the moment had presented itself. A handsome young woman, of about eighteen years of age, her complexion fairer than common, her carriage majestic, and her dress better and somewhat different from the other females, approached. Her glossy black hair and her skin were highly anointed with the cocoanut oil, and her whole person and appearance neat, sleek, and comely. On inquiry who this dignified personage might be, I was informed that her name was *Piteenee*, a grand-daughter of the chief, or greatest man in the valley, whose name was *Gattanewa*. This lady, on whose countenance was

not to be perceived any of those playful smiles which enliven the countenances of the others, I was informed was held in great estimation, on account of her rank and beauty; and I felt that it would be necessary, from motives of policy, to pay some attentions to a personage so exalted. She received my advances with a coldness and hauteur which would have suited a princess, and repelled everything like familiarity with a sternness that astonished me.

“Gattanewa, the chief of the Tayehs, the tribe who inhabited this valley, I was informed at the time of my landing, was at a fortified village, which was pointed out to me, on the top of one of the highest mountains. The manner of fortifying these places, is to plant closely on end, the bodies of large trees, of forty feet in length, and securing them together by pieces of timber strongly lashed across, presenting on the brow of a hill, difficult of access, a breastwork of considerable extent, which would require European artillery to destroy. At the back of this a scaffolding is raised, on which is placed a platform for the warriors, who ascend by the means of ladders, and thence shower down on their assailants spears and stones.

“When the ship was moored, the shore was lined with the natives of both sexes; but the females were more numerous, waving their white cloaks or *cahoes* for us to come on shore. The boats were got out, and proceeded to the shore, where, on landing, they were taken complete possession of by the women, who insisted on going to the ship, and in a short time she was completely filled by them, of all ages and descriptions, from the age of sixty years to that of ten; some as remarkable for their beauty as others for their ugliness. The ship was a perfect bedlam from the time of their arrival until their departure, which was not until morning, when they

were put on shore, not only with whatever was given them, but with whatever they could lay their hands on.

“The object of the greatest value at this as well as all the other islands of the group, is whales’ teeth. No jewel, however valuable, is half so much esteemed in Europe or America, as is a whale’s tooth here. I have seen them by fits laugh and cry for joy at the possession of one of these darling treasures. Some idea may be formed of the value in which they are held by the natives, when it is known that a ship of three hundred tons burden may be loaded with sandal-wood at this island, and the only object of trade necessary to procure it, is ten whales’ teeth of a large size; and for these the natives will cut it, bring it from the distant mountains, and take it on board the ship; and this cargo in China would be worth near a million of dollars. I have seen this sandal-wood, that is so highly esteemed by the Chinese;—indeed, their infatuation for it falls little short of that of the natives for whales’ teeth—it does not appear capable of receiving a high polish, nor is its color agreeable; the odor arising from it is pleasant, and the principal uses to which the Chinese are said to apply it, is to burn it in their temples, and to extract from it an oil which is said to be of great value.’

“In a short time,” Chester continued, after pausing for a moment, and slowly turning several leaves, “Gattanewa, the chief, came on board the *Essex*. Most of the warriors they had seen were highly ornamented with plumes, and were attired in all the gew-gaws of savage splendor. They generally carried a black and highly polished spear, or a club richly carved, and their bodies were elegantly tattooed. You can judge then what was Porter’s astonishment when Gattanewa presented himself, an infirm old man of seventy years of age, destitute of every covering or ornament except a nar-

8

row cloth around his loins, and a piece of palm leaf tied about his head."

Then resuming his reading:



MARQUESAN CHIEF.

"‘A long stick,’ says Porter, ‘seemed to assist him in walking; his face and body were as black as a negro’s,’

from the quantity of tattooing, which entirely covered them, and his skin was rough, and appeared to be peeling off in scales, from the quantity of kava with which he had indulged himself. Such was the figure that Gatanewa presented; and as he had drank freely of the kava before he made his visit, he appeared to be perfectly stupid. After he had been a short time on deck, I endeavored to impress him with a high opinion of our force; and for this purpose assembled all my crew; it scarcely seemed to excite his attention. I then caused a gun to be fired, which seemed to produce no other effect on him than that of pain; he complained that it hurt his ears; I then invited him below, where nothing whatever excited his attention, until I showed him some whales' teeth; this roused the old man from his lethargy, and he would not be satisfied until I had permitted him to handle, to measure, and count them over and over, which seemed to afford him infinite pleasure. After he had done this repeatedly, I put them away; and shortly afterwards asked him if he had seen anything in the ship that pleased him; if so, to name it and it should be his. He told me he had seen nothing which had pleased him so much as one of the small whale's teeth, which on his describing, I took out and gave to him; this he carefully wrapped up in one of the turns of his cloth, begging me not to inform any person that he had about him an article of so much value; I assured him that I would not; and the old man threw himself on the settee and went to sleep. In a few minutes he awoke, somewhat recovered from his stupidity, and requested to be put on shore; he, however, previous to his departure, wished me to exchange names with him, and requested me to assist him in his war with the Happahs; to the first I immediately consented. He told me they had cursed the bones of his mother, who had died but a short time before;

that as we had exchanged names, she was now my mother, and I was bound to espouse her cause. I told him I would think of the subject, and did not think it necessary to make any further reply to the old man's sophistry.'"

"Permit me to remind you, Chester, that you promised to skip all but the most interesting parts," warned Eugene, who had heard quite enough of the old chief.

"Thank you," responded his brother, "I'll make a break right here, and merely give you a synopsis of the next few pages."

"That's right; only don't leave out anything of importance."

"I will endeavor not to. Well, Commodore Porter now unbent the sails of the *Essex* and sent them on shore; landed his water casks, with which he formed a complete inclosure, and the ship was hauled close within the beach, and they began to make their repairs. A tent was erected, and the whole placed under a guard of marines. In the meanwhile the Happahs descended in a large body into the valley, and destroyed an immense number of the bread-fruit trees. They sent word that inasmuch as the Americans had not opposed them they believed they were cowards, and that they should visit their camp and carry off their sails. Before proceeding to extremities, Commodore Porter thought he would try and frighten them out of their hostile notions. As Gatanewa made daily applications for assistance, Porter at length told him that if his people would carry a heavy gun, a six-pounder, up to the top of a high mountain which he pointed out to him, he would send men up to work it and drive away the Happahs, who still kept possession of the surrounding hills. This was unanimously agreed to by every man in the valley. On the gun being landed, he caused a few shots to be fired over the water,

first with ball and then with grape shot, which last particularly so delighted those simple people that they hugged and kissed the gun, and lay down beside it and caressed it with the utmost fondness.

“And now let the Commodore speak for himself again:

“‘While the natives were employed with their darling gun,’ he says, ‘I occupied myself in forwarding as much as possible the ship’s duty. No work was exacted from any person after four o’clock in the afternoon; the rest of the day was given to repose and amusement, one-fourth of the crew being allowed after that hour to go on shore, there to remain until daylight next morning. Everything went on as well as I could have wished, and much better than I could possibly have expected. The day after the gun was moved for the mountains, the chief warrior of the Tayehs, named Mouina, was introduced to me. He was a tall, well-shaped man of about thirty-five years of age, remarkably active, of an intelligent and open countenance, and his whole appearance was prepossessing. He had just left the other warriors in the fortified village, and had come down to request me to cause a musket to be fired—which he called a *bouhi*—that he might witness its effects. Several individuals of the tribe of the Happahs were at that moment about the camp, and I was pleased at the opportunity which was afforded me to convince them of the folly of resisting our firearms with slings and spears. I fired several times myself at a mark to show them that I never failed of hitting an object the size of a man. I then directed the marines to fire by volleys at a cask, which was soon like a riddle.

“‘Mouina appeared much pleased with the effect of our musketry, and frequently exclaimed, *Mattee, mattee!* killed, killed! The Happahs who were present, however, replied that nothing could persuade their tribe that *bouhies* could do them the injury that we pretended;

that they were determined to try the effects of a battle, and if they should be beaten, that they would be willing to make peace, but not before. I informed them that they would not find me so ready to make peace after beating them, as at present, and that I should insist on being paid for the trouble they might put me to. Seeing that these strange people were resolutely bent on trying the effect of their arms against ours, I thought that the sooner they were convinced of their folly, the better. Indeed, it became absolutely necessary to do something, for the Happaes present informed me that their tribe believed that we were afraid to attack them, as we had threatened so much without attempting anything; and this idea, I found, began to prevail among those of our valley, which is called the valley of *Tieuhoy*, and the people *Havouhs*, *Parques*, *Hoattas*, etc., for the valley is subdivided into other valleys by the hills, and each small valley is inhabited by distinct tribes, governed by their own laws, and having their own chiefs and priests.

“On the 28th of October, Gattanewa, with several of the warriors, came to inform me that the gun was at the foot of the mountain, where I had directed it to be carried, and that it would have reached the summit by the time our people could get up there. I informed them that, on the next morning at daylight, forty men, with their muskets, would be on shore and in readiness to march; and as I supposed it would be impossible for our people to scale the mountains, when incumbered with their arms, I desired them to send me forty natives for the purpose of carrying their muskets, and an equal number to carry provisions, as well as ammunition for the six-pounder, which they promised me should be done, and every arrangement was made accordingly, and the command of the expedition given to Lieutenant Downes.

“On the morning of the 29th, the party being on

shore, consisting chiefly of the crew of the *Essex Junior* and the detachment of marines, each man being furnished with a native to carry his arms, and spare natives to carry provisions and other articles, I gave the order to march. About eleven o'clock I perceived that our people had gained the mountains, and were driving the Happahs from height to height, they fighting as they retreated, and daring our men to follow them with threatening gesticulations. A native, who bore the American flag, waved it in triumph as he skipped along the mountains—they were attended by a large concourse of friendly natives, armed as usual, but who generally kept in the rear of our men. Mouina alone was seen in the advance of the whole, and was well known by his scarlet cloak and waving plumes. In about an hour we lost sight of the combatants, and saw no more of them until about four o'clock, when they were discovered descending the mountains on their return, the natives bearing five dead bodies slung on poles.

“Lieutenant Downes and his men soon after arrived at the camp, overcome with the fatigue of an exercise to which they had been so little accustomed. He informed me that on his arrival near the tops of the mountains, the Happahs, stationed on the summit, had assailed him and his men with stones and spears; that he had driven them from place to place until they had taken refuge in a fortress, erected in a manner before described, on the brow of a steep hill. Here they all made a stand, to the number of between three and four thousand. They dared our people to ascend this hill, at the foot of which they had made a halt to take breath. The word was given by Mr. Downes to rush up the hill; at that instant a stone struck him in the stomach and laid him breathless on the ground, and at the same instant one of our people was pierced with a spear through the neck. This

occasioned a halt, and they were about abandoning any further attempt on the place; but Mr. Downes soon recovered, and finding himself able to walk, gave orders for a charge. Hitherto our party had done nothing. Not one of the enemy had, to their knowledge, been wounded. They scoffed at our men, and treated them with the utmost contempt and derision. The friendly natives also began to think we were not so formidable as we pretended; it became, therefore, absolutely necessary that the fort should be taken at all hazards. Our people gave three cheers, and rushed on through a shower of spears and stones, which the natives threw from behind their strong barrier, and it was not until our men entered the fort that they thought of retreating. Five were at this instant shot dead; and one in particular, fought until the muzzle of the piece was presented to his forehead, when the top of his head was entirely blown off. As soon as this place was taken all further resistance was at an end.

“It was shocking to see the manner the friendly natives treated such as were knocked over with a shot; they rushed on them with their war-clubs and soon dispatched them; then each seemed anxious to dip his spear in the blood, which nothing could induce them to wipe off—the spear from that time bore the name of the dead warrior, and its value, in consequence, was greatly enhanced.

“Gattanewa was astonished at our victory, which, to him, seemed incredible; and the number of dead which they had borne off as trophies had far exceeded that of any former battle within his recollection; as they fight for weeks, nay, for months sometimes, without killing any on either side, though many are, in all their engagements, severely wounded. The Tayehs had, however, a short time before our arrival, lost one of their priests of

the greatest note, who had been killed by an ambuscade of the Happahs; and this circumstance had occasioned a taboo of the strictest nature to be established, which was now in full force, and continued as long as we remained on the island.

“I am not acquainted with the ceremony of laying on these taboos, which are so much respected by the natives. They are, however, laid by the priests, from some religious motives. Sometimes they are general, and affect a whole valley, as the present; sometimes they are confined to a single tribe; at others, to a family, and frequently to a single person. The word *taboo* signifies an interdiction, an embargo, or restraint; and the restrictions during the period of their existence may be compared to the Lent of Catholics. They have tabooed places, where they feast and drink kava — tabooed houses, where dead bodies are deposited, and many of their trees, and even some of their walks are tabooed.

“‘But to proceed —’”

“A good idea,” murmured Eugene, approvingly.

Chester smiled, and went on:

“The Tayehs had brought in the bodies of the five men killed in storming the fort. We met with no loss on our side or on that of our allies. We had two wounded, and one of our natives had his jaw broken with a stone. The dead Happahs, I was informed, were lying in the public square, where the natives were rejoicing over them. I had been informed by the whites, on my arrival, and even by Wilson, that the natives of this island were cannibals; but, on the strictest inquiry, I could not learn that either of them had seen them in the act of eating human flesh. In conversing with Gattawewa on the subject, he did not hesitate to acknowledge that it was sometimes practiced. He said they sometimes ate their enemies. I found it difficult to reconcile this

practice with the generosity and benevolence which were leading traits in their character. They are cleanly in their persons, washing three or four times a day; and also in their mode of cooking, and manner of eating; and it was remarked, that no islander was known to taste of anything whatever until he had first applied it to his nostrils, and if it was in the slightest degree tainted or offensive to the smell, it was always rejected. How, then, can it be possible that a people so delicate, living in a country abounding with hogs, fruit, and a considerable variety of vegetables, should prefer a loathsome, putrid, human carcase, to the numerous delicacies their valleys afford?

“I proceeded to the house of Gattanewa, which I found filled with women making the most dreadful lamentations, and surrounded by a large concourse of male natives. On my appearance there was a general shout of terror; all fixed their eyes on me with looks of fear and apprehension. I approached the wife of Gattanewa, and requested to know the cause of this alarm. She said now that we had destroyed the Happahs they were fearful we should turn on them. She took hold of my hand, which she kissed, and moistened with her tears; then placing it on her head, knelt to kiss my feet. She told me they were willing to be our slaves, to serve us, that their houses, their lands, their hogs, and everything belonging to them were ours; but begged that I would have mercy on her, her children, and her family, and not put them to death. It seemed that they had worked themselves up to the highest pitch of fear, and on my appearance with a sentinel accompanying me, they could see in me nothing but the demon of destruction. I raised the poor old woman from her humble posture, and begged her to banish her groundless fears; that I had no intention of injuring any person residing in the valley of Tieu-

hoy; that if the Happahs had drawn on themselves our vengeance, and felt our resentment, they had none to blame but themselves. I had offered them peace, but they had preferred war; I had proffered them my friendship, and they had spurned it. That there was no alternative left me. I had chastised them, and was appeased. I then exhorted the wife of Gattanewa to endeavor to impress on the minds of every person the necessity of living on friendly terms with us; that we were disposed to consider them as brothers; that we had come with no hostile intentions toward them, and so long as they treated us as friends we would protect them against all their enemies. The old woman was all attention to my discourse as delivered through Wilson the interpreter; and I was about proceeding when she requested me to stop. She now rose and commanded silence among the multitude, which had considerably augmented since my arrival, and addressed them with much grace and energy in a speech of about half an hour; exhorting them, as I understood, to conduct themselves with propriety, and explaining to them the advantages likely to result from a good understanding with us. After she had finished, she took me affectionately by the hand, and reminded me that I was her husband.'"

"There!" exclaimed Eugene hastily, "I think you had better stop there, Chester. We've heard enough for to-day."

"Why, what's the matter?" asked his brother, looking up in surprise.

"He thinks," laughed Captain Bradford, "that the old woman is disposed to take advantage of Porter's good nature, and that she is going to take full possession of him."

"Why," explained Chester, "she only wanted to remind him that he and her husband, Gattanewa, had exchanged names."

"No matter," said Eugene emphatically, "I think we had better postpone the rest of the story till another day."

"Very good," said Chester, as he closed the book and started to his feet, "I'm perfectly agreeable. And as the steward is trying to make us understand that luncheon is ready, I think, on the whole, it is a good plan. Come," and the little party descended to the saloon.

CHAPTER XII.

THE VALLEY OF TIEUHOY — THE TYPEES.

IT was not long after breakfast the next morning when the members of our little party again found themselves comfortably seated on the quarter-deck ; and it was Eugene himself who speedily inquired of his brother if he wasn't about ready to go on with his story.

"Ah! you want to hear the rest of it, do you?" laughed Chester good naturedly.

"Of course we do. Can't you see that we are all waiting for you?"

"If the wish is really unanimous ——" began Chester.

"Of course it is, I tell you," broke in his brother.

"Very well, then, I will take up the story where I left it," and, opening the book, he began :

"All alarms now were subsided. I inquired for Gatanewa, and was informed that he was at the public square rejoicing over the bodies of the slain, but had been sent for. I proceeded toward the place, and met the old man hastening home. He had been out from the earliest dawn, and had not broken his fast. He had in one hand a cocoanut shell, containing a quantity of sour preparation of the bread-fruit, which is highly esteemed by the natives, and in the other a *raw* fish, which he occasionally dipped into it as he ate it. As soon, however, as Wilson gave him to understand that the practice of eating raw fish was disagreeable to me, he wrapped the remainder in a palm leaf, and handed it to a youth to keep for him until a more convenient opportunity offered for indulging him-

self. On my way to the square I observed several young warriors hastening along toward the place armed with their spears, at the ends of which were hung plantains, bread-fruit, or cocoanuts, intended as offerings to their gods; and on my approach to the square I could hear them beating their drums and chanting their war songs. I soon discovered five or six hundred of them assembled about the dead bodies, which were lying on the ground.'"

"Never mind the dead men, Chester," said his brother; "but go on with something of more importance."

"Very well," was the reply. And Chester continued:

"We had but little opportunity of gaining a knowledge of the language of these people while we remained among them; but from the little we became acquainted with we are satisfied that it is not copious; few words serve to express all they wish to say; and one word has oftentimes many significations; as, for example, the word *motee* signifies *I thank you, I have enough, I do not want it, I do not like it, keep it yourself, take it away*, etc. *Mattee* expresses every degree of injury which can happen to a person or thing, from the slightest harm to the most cruel death. Thus, a prick of the finger is *mattee*, to have a pain in any part is *mattee*; *mattee* is to be sick, to be badly wounded is *mattee*, and *mattee* is to kill or be killed, to be broken (when speaking of inanimate objects), to be injured in any way, even to be dirtied or soiled is expressed by the word *mattee*. *Motakee*, with slight variation of the voice, signifies every degree of good, from a thing merely tolerable, to an object of the greatest excellence; thus, it is *so, so good, very good, excellent*; it signifies the qualities and disposition of persons; thus, they are *tolerable, likely, handsome, or beautiful, — good, kind, benevolent, generous, humane*. *Keheva*, which signifies *bad*, is as extensive in its use as *motakee*, and, by suitable modulations of the voice, has meanings directly opposite.

This is the case with many other words in their language; indeed, with all we became acquainted with. *Kie-kie* signifies *to eat*; it also signifies *a troublesome fellow*.

“The hogs of this island are generally of a small and inferior breed, but there are many as large and as fine as those of any part of the world. According to the traditions of the natives, many generations ago, a god named *Haii* visited all the islands of the group, and brought with him hogs and fowls, which he left among them. *Haii* was, no doubt, some navigator, who, near four centuries ago, by their reckoning, left the aforesaid animals among the natives. Our accounts of voyages made into this sea do not extend so far back; and, even if they did, we should be at a loss to know him from the name given to him by the natives. We found it impossible for them to pronounce our names distinctly, even after the utmost pains to teach them, and the most repeated trials on their part. They gave me the name of *Opotee*, which was the nearest they could come to Porter. Mr. Downes was called *Onou*; Lieut. Wilmer *Wooreme*, and the name of everyone else underwent an equal change. These names we were called by and answered to so long as we remained with them; and it is not improbable that we shall be so called in their traditionary accounts. If there should be no other means of handing our names down to posterity it is likely we shall be as little known to future navigators as *Haii* is to us. The natives call a hog *bouarka*, or rather *pouarka*; and it is likely that they still retain the name nearly by which they were first known to them. The Spaniards call a hog *porca*, giving it a sound very little different from that given by the natives of these islands; and as the Spaniards were the earliest navigators in these seas, there is scarcely a doubt that they are indebted to one of that nation for so ‘precious a gift.’”

“That agrees with what you told us yesterday, Professor,” remarked Eugene.

“Yes,” was the reply; “there is little doubt, I think, that the Spaniards left them the swine; and it is no wonder that they looked upon them as gods.” Then turning to Chester: “Well, my friend, what comes next?”

“He refers to the cocoanut tree, next,” said Chester; “and states that it grows in great abundance in every valley of the island, and that it is cultivated with much care. He then mentions the manner of gathering the fruit, and says, ‘As the cocoanuts become ripe, they are carefully collected from the tree, which is ascended by means of a slip of strong bark, with which they make their feet fast a little above the ankles, leaving them about a foot asunder; they then grasp the tree with their arms, feet, and knees, and the strip of bark resting on the rough projections of the bark of the tree, prevents them from slipping down. In this manner, by alternately shifting their feet and hands, they ascend with great apparent ease and rapidity the highest tree.’

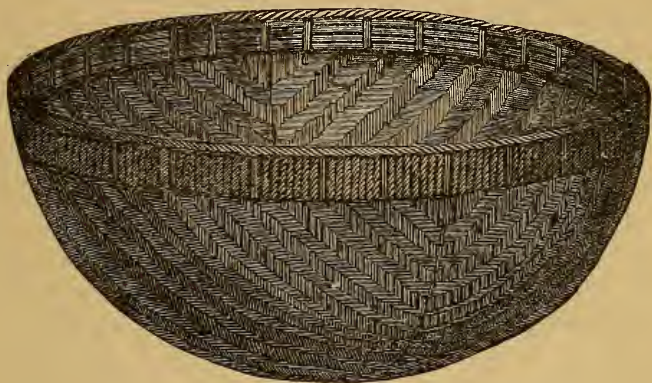
“The *taro*, he says, is a root much resembling a yam, of a pungent taste, and excellent when boiled or roasted. The sugar-cane grows to an uncommon size. The only use they make of it, however, is to chew it and swallow the juice.

“He then mentions *kava*, and says pretty much what you said yesterday, Professor.”

“No matter; let’s have it,” exclaimed Eugene.

“Well, then, ‘the *kava*,’ he says, ‘is a root possessing an intoxicating quality, with which the chiefs are very fond of indulging themselves. They employ persons of a lower class to chew it for them and spit it into a wooden bowl; after which a small quantity of water is mixed with it, when the juice is strained into a neatly polished cup, made of a cocoanut-shell, and passed round among them. It renders them very stupid and averse to hear-

ing any noise. It deprives them of their appetite, and reduces them almost to a state of torpor. It has the effect of making their skin fall off in white scales; affects their nerves, and no doubt brings on a premature old age. They apply the word kava to everything we eat or drink of a heating or pungent nature, as rum or wine, pepper, mustard, and even salt.'



KAVA BOWL.

"He gives a very good description of the bread-fruit tree," said Chester, looking up inquiringly.

"Then let's have it, by all means," exclaimed his brother.

The others joining in the request, Chester went on:

"The bread-fruit tree of this island grows with great luxuriance, in extensive groves, scattered through every valley. It is of the height of fifty or sixty feet, branching out in a large and spreading top, which affords a beautiful appearance and an extensive shade from the rays of the sun; the trunk is about six feet in circumference; the lower branches about twelve feet from the ground; the bark soft, and on being in the slightest

degree wounded exudes a milky juice, not unpleasant to the taste, which, on being exposed to the sun, forms an excellent bird-lime, and is used by the natives as such, not only for catching birds, but a small kind of rat with which this island is much infested. The leaves of this tree are sixteen inches long and nine inches wide, deeply notched, somewhat like the fig leaf. The fruit, when ripe, is about the size of a child's head, green, and divided by slight traces into innumerable six-sided figures. It is somewhat elliptical in its shape, has a thin and delicate skin, a large and tough core, with remarkably small seeds situated in a spongy substance between the core and the eatable part, which is next the rind. It is eaten baked, boiled, or roasted; whole, quartered, or cut in slices and cooked; either way was found exceedingly palatable, was greatly preferred by many to our soft bread, which it somewhat resembled in taste, but was much sweeter; it was found also very fine when cut into slices and fried in butter or lard. It keeps only three or four days, when gathered and hung up; but the natives have a method of preserving it for years, by baking, wrapping it up in leaves, and burying it in the ground: in that state it becomes very sour, and is then more highly esteemed by them than any other food. The bread-fruit tree is everything to the natives of these islands. The fruit serves them and their hogs for food throughout the year, and affords large supplies to be laid up for a season of scarcity. The trees afford them an agreeable and refreshing shade; the leaves are an excellent covering for their houses; of the inner bark of the small branches they make cloth; the juice which exudes enables them to destroy the rats which infest them; and of the trunk of the tree they form their canoes, many of their houses, and even their gods. Describe to one of the natives of Nukahiva a country abounding in everything that we

consider desirable, and after you are done he will ask you if it produces bread-fruit. A country is nothing to them without that blessing, and the season for bread-fruit is the time of joy and festivity. The season commences in December, and lasts until September, when the greatest abundance reigns among them.'

"We now come to the treaties he made with the Happahs and other tribes, and an account of his war with the Typees and their neighbors."

"That's it!" exclaimed Eugene; "that's what we've been waiting for. Go on, Chester." And the elder continued:

"On the first of November, *Mowattaeh*, a chief of the Happahs, and son-in-law to Gattanewa, came, accompanied by several others of his tribe, with the white handkerchief which I had sent them, to treat with me for peace. I received him with mildness, and gently expostulated with them on their imprudence, in having insisted on hostilities with me. They expressed the utmost regret for their past folly, and hoped that I would allow them in future to live on the same friendly terms with me as Gattanewa and his people, stating their willingness to comply with everything I should exact from them in reason. I informed them that as I had offered them peace and they had rejected it, and had put me to the trouble of chastising them, it was proper that we should receive some compensation. We were in want of hogs and fruit, and they had an abundance of them, and I wished them to give me a supply, once a week, for my people, for which they should be compensated in iron and such other articles as would be most useful to them. Gattanewa and many of his tribe were present, and appeared charmed with the terms offered to the Happahs; said they would henceforth be brothers, and observing that I had not yet presented my hand, took it

affectionately and placed it in that of Mowattaeah. After a short silence Mowattaeah observed that we must suffer much from the rain in our tents, as they did not appear capable of securing us from the wet. "Yes," said Gattanewa, "and we are bound to make the Hekai"—a title which they all gave me—"and his people comfortable while they remain with us. Let every tribe at peace with him, build a house for their accommodation, and the people of the valley of Tienhoy will set them the example by building one for the residence of *Opotee*—Porter." This proposal met with general applause, and the people were immediately dispatched to prepare materials for erecting the fabric next day, at which time the Happahs promised to bring in their supply, and the day after to construct their house. In the course of the day the other chiefs of the Happahs came in with their flags and subscribed to the terms proposed; and in less than two days I received envoys from every tribe on the island, with the exception only of the warlike tribes of *Typee*, of the valley of Vieehee or Oomi, and the *Hatecaahcöttwohos*, in the distant valley of Hannahow; the first confiding in their strength, valor, and position; the others in their distance and numbers for their protection. The first had always been victorious in all their wars, and the terror of their enemies; the others were their firm allies; neither had they ever been driven; they had been taught by their priests to believe that they never would be, and it was their constant boast that they had ever kept their valley free from the incursions of an enemy.

"All agreed to the terms proposed; supplies were brought in by the tribes in great abundance, and from this time for several weeks, we rioted in luxuries which the island afforded. To the principal persons of the tribes I always presented a harpoon, it being to them the

most valuable article of iron, and to the rest scraps of iron hoops were thrown, in which they took much delight.

“Agreeable to the request of the chiefs I laid down the plan of the village about to be built; the line on which the houses were to be placed was already traced by our barrier of water casks; they were to take the form of a crescent, were to be built on the outside of the inclosure, and to be connected with each other by a wall twelve feet in length and four feet in height; the houses were to be fifty feet in length, built in the usual fashion of the country, and of a proportioned width and height.

“On the third of November, upward of four thousand natives, from the different tribes, assembled at the camp with materials for building, and before night they had completed a dwelling-house for myself and another for the officers, a sail-loft, a cooper’s shop, and a place for our sick, a bake-house, a guard house, and a shed for the sentinel to walk under; the whole were connected by the walls as above described. We removed our barrier of water-casks, and took possession of our delightful village, which had been built as if by enchantment.

“It seems strange how a people living under no form of government that we could ever perceive, having no chiefs over them who appear to possess any authority, having neither rewards to stimulate them to exertion nor dread of punishment before them, should be capable of conceiving and executing, with the rapidity of lightning, works which astonished us; they appear to act with one mind, to have the same thought, and to be operated on by the same impulse; they can be compared only to the beaver, whose instinct teaches them to design and execute works which claim our admiration.

“Some time after this I sent a messenger to the Typees to know if they wished to be at peace with us. In two days he returned, and was desired by the Typees

to tell Gattanewa and all the people of the valley of Tieuhoy that they were cowards; that we had beat the Happahs because the Happahs were cowards; that as to myself and my people, we were white lizards, mere dirt. We were, said they, incapable of standing fatigue, overcome by the slightest heat and want of water, and could not climb the mountains without islanders to assist us and carry our arms; and yet we talk of chastising the Typees, a tribe which had never been driven by an enemy, and as their gods informed them, were never to be driven.

“I now inquired of Gattanewa the number of war canoes which he could equip and man; he informed me ten, and that each would carry about thirty men, and that the Happahs could equip an equal number of equal size; he told me it would be six days before they could be put together and got into readiness; but if I wished it his people should set about it immediately. I directed them to do so, and dispatched a messenger to the Happahs directing them to prepare their war canoes to be in readiness to go to war with the Typees, and await my further orders. I gave them as well as the Tayehs to understand that it was my intention to attack them both by sea and by land, and that I should send a large body of men in boats and a ship to protect the landing of them and the war canoes, and that the remainder of the warriors of both tribes must proceed by land to attack them in the part where they were most assailable. I now conceived the design of constructing a fort, not only as a protection to our village and the harbor, but as a security to the Tayehs against further incursions. I had for some time past intended leaving my prizes here as the most suitable place to lay them up, and this fort would give them additional security.

“Assisted by the natives I began the construction of

a fort which was completed on the 14th; all worked with zeal, and as the friendly tribes were daily coming in with presents, all joined in the labor. The chiefs requested that they might be admitted on the same footing as the Tayehs, and everything promised harmony between us; they would frequently speak of the war with the Typees, and I informed them I only waited for their war canoes to be put together and launched.

“On the 19th of November, the American flag was displayed in our fort, a salute of seventeen guns was fired from the artillery mounted there, and returned by the shipping in the harbor. The island was taken possession of for the United States, and called Madison's Island; the fort, Fort Madison; the village, Madisonville, and the bay, Massachusetts Bay.

“A few days after this I took a party of sailors and marines in boats and went some eight miles from our anchorage to examine a fine bay. We landed near a village at the mouth of a beautiful rivulet. On landing, many of the natives came to the beach, who seemed disposed to treat us in the most friendly manner; but apprehensive of being troubled by their numbers, I drew a line in the sand at some distance about the boats, and informed them they were tabooed, and as an additional security to us, I caused all the arms to be loaded and ready for service on the first alarm, and sentinels placed over them. Shortly after this the chief came down to invite me to the public square, the general place in all their villages for the reception of strangers. Soon after our arrival the women and girls assembled from all quarters of the town, dressed out in all their finery to meet us; they were here free from all the restraints imposed by the taboos, and were abundantly anointed with the oil of the cocoanut, and their skins well bedaubed with red and yellow paint, as was their clothing;

some were also smeared with greenish paint, the object of which I found, on inquiry, was to preserve the fairness and beauty of the skin; and indeed of this they seemed to take particular pains, every one of them being furnished with a kind of umbrella, formed of a bunch of palm leaves, to shield them from the effects of the sun; their care and attention in this particular had rendered them far superior in point of beauty to the females of our valley, and the difference was so striking as to make them appear a distinct people. Some of the girls, probably in compliment to us, or to render themselves more attractive in our eyes, cleansed themselves (by washing in the stream) of their oil and paint, threw aside their bedaubed clothing, and soon appeared neatly clad in cloth of the purest white; and I can say, without exaggeration, that I never have seen women more perfectly beautiful in form, features, and complexion, or that had playful innocence more strongly marked on their countenances or in their manners; all seemed perfectly easy and even graceful, and all strove by their winning attentions, who should render themselves most pleasing to us. The girls formed a circle round us, and those of a more advanced age were seated outside of them; the men showed us every kind attention, and strove to convince us of their friendship by bringing us cocoanuts, and cooking for us hogs and bread-fruit after their manner, which were found excellent.

“A daughter of Gattanewa was among them; she was the wife of the chief who had met us on our arrival; she seemed no less friendly disposed than her husband, and embraced me as her father, reminding me frequently that from the exchange of names I had become such; from her filial affection she bestowed on me a bountiful supply of the red and yellow paint with which she was covered, and insisted on my sending away my boats and

people and remaining with them until the next day, and no excuse that I could offer for my return to the ship would satisfy her; they all joined in her solicitations, and, as an inducement for me to remain, promised me the choicest mats to sleep on, and the handsomest girls in the village to sing me to sleep. After our repast all the women joined in a song, which was accompanied by the clapping of hands; it lasted near half an hour, and was not unmusical. I inquired the subject of it, and was informed by Wilson that it was the history of the love of a young man and a young woman of their valley. They sang their mutual attachment, and the praises of their beauty; described with raptures the handsome beads and whale's teeth earrings with which she was bedecked, and the large whale's tooth which hung from his neck. They afterwards joined in a short song which they appeared to compose as they sung, in which I could plainly distinguish the words *Opotee*, *tie-ties*, *peepees*, etc. (Porter, presents, beads, etc.), after which they strove in various ways who should most amuse us, the men in dancing, the girls in playing scratch cradle (an amusement well known in America), at which they are more dextrous than any others I ever met with.

“Our time passed rapidly with these kind people, and the evening approached before we were aware of it. It became necessary to hasten to the ship, and we bade them farewell, with a promise that we should shortly return and bring with us a large supply of *peepees* and other *tie-ties*, so much desired by them.

“On the 27th of November I informed the Tayehs and Happahs that I should next day go to war with the Typees, agreeable to my original plan. The *Essex Junior* sailed in the afternoon, and I proceeded next morning, at three o'clock, with five boats, accompanied by ten war canoes, blowing their conches as a signal by which they

could keep together. We arrived at the Typee landing at sunrise, and were joined by ten war canoes from the Happahs; the *Essex Junior* soon after arrived and anchored. The tops of all the neighboring mountains were covered with the Tayeh and Happah warriors, armed with their spears, clubs, and slings; the beach was covered with the warriors who came with the canoes, and who joined us from the hills; our force did not amount to a less number than five thousand men. I had brought with me one of those whom I had intended to employ as ambassadors; he had intermarried with the Typees and was privileged to go among them; I furnished him with a white flag and sent him to inform the Typees that I had come to offer them peace, but was prepared for war; that I only required that they should submit to the same terms as those entered into by the other tribes, and that terms of friendship would be much more pleasing to me than any satisfaction I expected to derive from chastising them. In a few minutes after the departure of my messenger he came running back, the picture of terror, and informed me he had met in the bushes an ambuscade of Typees, who, regardless of his flag of truce, which he displayed to them, had driven him back with blows, and had threatened to put him to death if he again ventured among them; and in an instant afterward we had a confirmation of his statement in a shower of stones which came from the bushes. To remain still would have proved fatal to us; to have retreated would have convinced them of our fears and our incapacity to injure them; our only safety was in advancing and endeavoring to clear the thicket, which I had been informed was of no great extent.

“We advanced a mile or more when we came to a small opening on the bank of a river, from the thicket on the opposite side of which we were assailed with a

shower of stones, when Lieutenant Downes received a blow which shattered the bone of his left leg, and he fell. We had left parties in ambush in our rear, which we had not been able to dislodge, and to trust him to the natives alone to take back was hazarding too much. The natives began to leave us; all depended on our own exertions, and no time was to be lost in deliberation. I therefore directed Mr. Shaw with four men to escort Lieutenant Downes to the beach; this with the party I had left for the protection of the boats reduced my number to twenty-four men. As we continued our march the number of our allies became reduced, and even the brave Mouina, the first to expose himself, began to hang back; while he kept in advance he had, by the quickness of his sight, which was astonishing, put us on our guard as the stones and spears came, and enabled us to elude them, but now they came too thick even for him to withstand.

“We soon came to the place for fording the river; in the thick bushes of the opposite banks of which the Typees, who were here very numerous, made a bold stand, and showered on us their spears and other missiles. We endeavored in vain to clear the bushes of the opposite banks with our musketry. The stones and spears flew with augmented numbers. Finding that we could not dislodge them, I directed a volley to be fired, three cheers to be given, and to dash across the river. We soon gained the opposite bank and continued our march, rendered still more difficult by the underwood, which was here interlaced to that degree as to make it necessary sometimes to crawl on our hands and knees to get along. We were harassed as usual by the Typees for about a quarter of a mile through a thicket which, at almost any other time, I should have considered impassable. On emerging from the swamp we felt new life and

spirits ; but this joy was of short duration, for on casting up our eyes, we perceived a strong and extensive wall of seven feet in height, raised on an eminence crossing our road, and flanked on each side by an impenetrable thicket, and in an instant afterwards were assailed by a shower of stones, accompanied by the most horrid yells.

“Finding we could not dislodge them, I gave orders for pushing on and endeavoring to take it by storm ; but some of my men had by this time expended all their cartridges, and there were few who had more than three or four remaining. This discouraging news threw a damp on the spirits of the whole party ; without ammunition our muskets were rendered inferior to the weapons of the Typees, and if we could not advance, there could be no doubt we should be under the necessity of fighting our way back ; and to attempt this with our few remaining cartridges, would be hazarding too much. Our only safety now depended on holding our ground until we could procure a fresh supply of ammunition, and in reserving the few charges on hand until it could be brought to us. I mentioned my intention to my people, exhorted them to save their ammunition as much as possible, and dispatched Lieutenant Gamble with a detachment of four men to the beach, there to take a boat and proceed to the *Essex Junior* for a fresh supply. My number was now reduced to nineteen men ; there was no officer but myself ; the natives had all deserted me except Mouina ; and to add to our critical and dangerous situation, three of the men remaining with me were knocked down with stones. Mouina begged me to retreat, crying *Mattee ! mattee !* The wounded entreated me to permit the others to carry them to the beach, but I had none to spare to accompany them. I saw no hopes of succeeding against the natives, so long as they kept their stronghold ; and determined

to endeavor to draw them out by a feint retreat, and by this means to gain some advantage." For to return without gaining some advantage would, I believed, have rendered an attack from the Happa's certain. I communicated my intentions; directed the wounded to be taken care of; gave orders for all to run until we were concealed by the bushes, and then halt. We retreated for a few paces, and in an instant the Typees rushed on us with hideous yells. The first and second which advanced were killed at the distance of a few paces, and those who attempted to carry them off were wounded. This checked them, they abandoned their dead and precipitately retreated to their fort. Not a moment was now to be lost in gaining the opposite side of the river. Taking advantage of the terror they were thrown into, we marched off with our wounded. Scarcely had we crossed the river before we were attacked with stones; but here they halted, and we returned to the beach much fatigued and harassed with marching and fighting, and with no contemptible opinion of the enemy we had encountered or the difficulties we should have to surmount in conquering them.

"On my arrival I found the boat which had been missing, together with a reënforcement of men from the *Essex Junior*, and a supply of ammunition. I was desirous of sounding the Typees before I proceeded to further extremities, as also to impress our allies with the idea that we could carry all before us. They told my messenger to tell me that they had killed my chief warrior—for such they supposed Mr. Downes to be—that they had wounded several of my people, and compelled us to retreat. They knew their strength and the numbers they could oppose; and held our bouhies in more contempt than ever, they frequently missed fire, rarely killed, and the wounds they occasioned were not

as painful as those of a spear or stone ; and, they added, they knew they would prove perfectly useless to us should it come on to rain. They dared us to renew the contest, and assured us they would not retreat beyond where we had left them.

“Overcome with fatigue and discouraged by the formidable appearance of their fortress, my men also fatigued and disheartened from the number of the wounded, I determined to leave them for the present, but meditated a severe punishment for them. The Happahs had now descended the hills with their arms ; the Shouemes appeared on the other side, and “the Typees have driven the white men,” was the constant topic of conversation. We were still but a handful and were surrounded by several thousand natives ; and although they professed friendship, I did not feel safe. I therefore directed everybody to embark, and proceed to the *Essex Junior*, anxious to know the state of Lieutenant Downes.

“The next day I determined to proceed with a force which I believed they could not resist, and selected two hundred men from the *Essex*, the *Essex Junior*, and from the prizes.”

“That’s what he ought to have done in the first place,” commented Eugene.

“I agree with you,” said the Captain ; “but those Typees were brave fellows.”

“You are right,” assented Eugene ; “but I hope the Commodore did n’t make another mess of it. Go on, Chester,” and his brother continued :

“In the evening I caused the party to be sent on shore and determined to go by land. We had a fine moonlight night, and I hoped to be down in the Typee valley long before daylight, and to take them by surprise. I directed the party sent in advance to halt as soon as they had gained the top of the mountain until I came

up with the main body. There I intended encamping for the night, should our men not be able to stand the fatigue of a longer march. Several gave out before we reached the summit, which we did in about three hours, with great difficulty; but after resting a short time, and finding ourselves refreshed, the moon shining out brightly, and our guides informing us (though very incorrectly) that we were not more than six miles from the enemy, we again marched. Several natives had joined us, but I had imposed silence on them, as we were under the necessity of passing a Happah village, and I was fearful of their discovering us, and giving intelligence to the Typees. Not a whisper was heard from one end of the line to the other; our guides marched in front, and we followed in silence up and down the steep sides of rocks and mountains, through rivulets, thickets, and reed-brakes, and by the sides of precipices which sometimes caused us to shudder. At twelve o'clock we could hear the drums beating in the Typee valley accompanied by loud singing, and the number of lights in different parts of it induced me to believe they were rejoicing. I inquired the cause, and was informed by the natives that they were celebrating the victory they had obtained over us, and calling on their gods to give them rain in order that it might render our bouhies useless. We soon arrived at the pathway leading from the top of the mountain into the valley; but the natives told us that it would be impossible to descend it without daylight; that the mountain was almost perpendicular, and that in many places we should be under the necessity of lowering ourselves down with great caution, and that it would be even necessary for them to assist us in the day-time to enable us to get down with safety. I concluded that it would be most advisable to wait for daylight before we attempted to descend. We were in possession of the pathway to

the valley, and could prevent the Happaes from giving them any intelligence of us; we were on a narrow ridge, running between the valleys of the two tribes, and well situated to guard against surprise and to defend ourselves from an attack from either; and what added to the convenience of our situation, we had a stream of water not far distant.

“After placing guards we laid down on our arms. I had fallen into a doze, when a native came to inform me that it was coming on to rain very hard, and as he expressed himself, would mattee! mattee! bouhie. This appearance of rain caused loud shouts of joy in the Ty-pee valley, and drums were beating in every quarter. I cautioned my men about taking care of their arms and ammunition; but from the violence of the rain, which soon poured down in torrents, I had little hopes that a musket would be kept dry or a cartridge saved. Never in the course of my life, did I spend a more anxious or disagreeable night, and I believe there were few with me who had ever seen its equal. A cold and piercing wind accompanied the deluge, for I can call it nothing else, and chilled us to the very heart; without room to keep ourselves warm by moving about, fearful of stirring, lest we might be precipitated into eternity down the steep sides of the mountains, for the ridge had now become so slippery we could scarcely keep our feet,—we all anxiously looked for morning, and the first dawn of day, although the wind and rain still continued, was a cheering sight to us, notwithstanding our apprehensions for the fate of the ammunition and the condition of our muskets. We were all as perfectly wet as though we had been under water the whole time, and we scarcely entertained a hope that a single cartridge or musket had escaped. The natives kept exclaiming that our muskets were spoiled, and anxiously wished us to retreat in time;

but notwithstanding my fears on the subject, I endeavored to impress them with a belief that water could do them no injury. As soon as it was light enough I went among my men and inquired into the state of their arms and ammunition. The first had escaped better than I had any reason to hope; but of the latter more than one-half was wet and unfit for service.’”

“There, Chester,” exclaimed his brother, abruptly, “pass the book to me; it’s high time for you to take a rest.”

“I am quite willing to do so,” replied the other, as he surrendered the volume, and Eugene, having found the place, prepared to read.

CHAPTER XIII.

THE WAR WITH THE TYPEES.

““THE Happah village,’ began Eugene, ‘lay on one side of the mountain, as I before observed, the Typee on the other, and when it was light enough to see down into the valley of the latter we were astonished at the greatness of the height we were elevated above them, and the steepness of the mountain by which we should have to descend to get to them. A narrow pathway pointed out the track, but it was soon lost among the cliffs. The natives informed me that in the present slippery state of the mountain no one could descend, and as our men were much harassed with fatigue, overcome with hunger, shivering and uncomfortable, I determined to take up my quarters in the Happah village until next day to enable us to refresh, and I hoped by that time the weather would prove more favorable. The chief soon arrived, and I communicated to him my intentions, directing him to send down and have houses provided for us, as also hogs and fruit, all of which he promised should be done. Before I left the hill I determined, by firing a volley, to show the natives that our muskets had not received as much injury as they had expected, as I believed, under their impressions at that moment, the Happahs would not have hesitated in making an attack on us, and to avoid any difficulties with them I thought it best to convince them we were still formidable. I had other motives also for firing. The Tayehs and Happahs, I knew, would accompany us into the Typee valley; and

as I had put off our descent until the next day, I concluded that it would be best to give them timely notice of our approach, that they might be enabled to remove their women and children, their hogs, and most valuable effects; for although I felt desirous of chastising them for their conduct, I wished to prevent the innocent from suffering, or the pillage and destruction of their property by the natives who accompanied us. I accordingly directed my men to assemble on the ridge and to fire a volley; the Typees had not until then seen us, nor had they the least suspicion of our being there. As soon as they heard the report of our muskets, and discovered our numbers, which, with the multitude of natives of both tribes who had now assembled, was very great, they shouted, beat their drums, and blew their war conches from one end of the valley to the other; and what with the squeeling of the hogs—which they now began to catch,—the screaming of the women and children, and the yelling of the men, the din was horrible.

“After firing our volley, which went off better than I expected, we descended, with great difficulty, into the village of the Happaes, and were shown into the public square. Around this place were several vacant houses which had, to all appearance, been vacated on our account. In these I quartered my officers and men, assigning to each ship’s crew their abode. The Happaes assembled about us, armed with their clubs and spears; and the women, who had at first crowded round us, now began to abandon us. Everything bore the appearance of a hostile disposition on the part of the Happaes; our friends, the Tayehs, cautioned us to be on our guard. I directed everyone to keep their arms in their hands, ready to assemble at a moment’s warning. I now sent for their chief and requested to know if they were hostilely disposed. I told him it was necessary we should have some-

thing to eat, and that I expected his people to bring us hogs and fruit, and if they did not do so I should be under the necessity of sending out parties to shoot the former and to cut down their fruit trees, as our people were too much fatigued to climb them. I also directed that they should lay by their spears and clubs. No notice being taken of these demands, I caused many of their spears and clubs to be taken from them and broken, and sent parties out to shoot hogs, while others were employed in cutting down cocoanut and banana trees, until we had a sufficient supply.

“The chiefs and the people of the Happah tribe now became intimidated and brought the baked hogs in greater abundance than were required; friendship was re-established, and the women returned. When night approached, proper lookouts were placed, and fires made before each house. Those of the tribe of Tayeh remained with us, the Happahs retired. All not on guard devoted themselves to sleep, and at daylight next morning we equally divided our ammunition, and the line of march was formed. All had put their arms in a good state for service, and all were fresh and vigorous; each being supplied with a small quantity of provisions for the day.

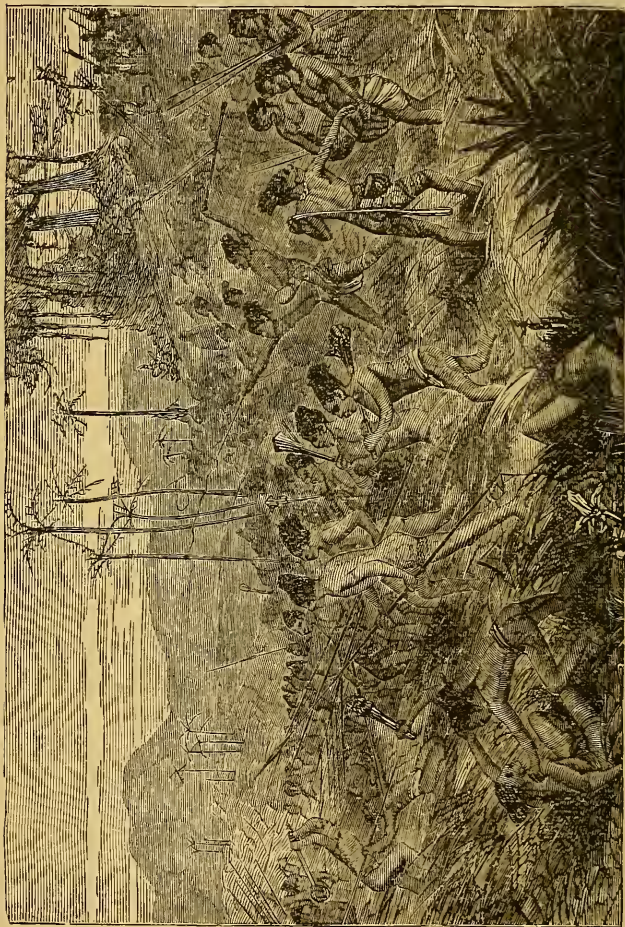
“On ascending the ridge, where we had passed such a disagreeable night, we halted to take breath, and view, for a few minutes, this delightful valley, which was soon to become a scene of desolation. From the hill we had a distant view of every part, and all appeared equally delightful. The valley was about nine miles in length, and three or four in breadth, surrounded on every part, except the beach where we formerly landed, by lofty mountains; the upper part was bounded by a precipice of many hundred feet in height, from the top of which a handsome sheet of water was precipitated, and formed a beautiful river, which ran meandering through the valley and dis-

charged itself at the beach. Villages were scattered here and there; the bread-fruit and cocoanut trees flourished luxuriantly and in abundance; plantations laid out in good order, inclosed with stone walls, were in a high state of cultivation, and everything bespoke industry, abundance, and happiness — never in my life did I witness a more delightful scene, or experience more repugnance than I now felt for the necessity which compelled me to punish a happy and heroic people.

“A large assemblage of Typee warriors were posted on the opposite banks of the river (which glided near the foot of the mountain) and dared us to descend. In their rear was a fortified village, secured by strong stone walls; drums were beating and war conches were sounding in several parts, and we soon found they were disposed to make every effort to oppose us. I gave orders to descend; Mouina offered himself as our guide, and I directed him to lead us to their principal village; but finding the fatigue of going down the mountain greater than I expected, I gave orders to halt before crossing the river, to give time for the rear to close, it having become much scattered, and that all might rest. As soon as we reached the foot of the mountain we were annoyed by a shower of stones from the bushes, and from behind the stone walls; but as we were also enabled to shelter ourselves behind others, and being short of ammunition, I would not permit any person to fire. After resting a few minutes, I directed the scouting parties to gain the opposite bank of the river, and quickly followed with the main body.

“We were greatly annoyed by stones; but before all had crossed, the fortified village was taken without any loss on our side. Their chief warrior and another were killed, and several were wounded. They retreated only to stone walls situated on higher grounds, where they continued to sling their stones and throw their spears.

Three of my men were wounded, and many of the Typees killed before we dislodged them; parties were sent out in different directions to scour the woods, and another



FIGHT WITH THE TYPEES.

fort was taken after some resistance; but the party, overpowered by numbers, was compelled to retreat to the main body after keeping possession of it for half an

hour. We were waiting in the fort first taken for the return of our scouting parties—a multitude of Tayehs and Happahs were with us, and many were on the outskirts of the village seeking for plunder: Lieutenant M'Knight had driven a party from a strong wall on the high ground, and had possession of it,—when a large party of Typees, which had been lying in ambush, rushed by his fire, and darted into the fort with their spears. The Tayehs and Happahs all ran, the Typees approached within pistol shot, but on the first fire retreated precipitately, crossing the fire of M'Knight's party, and although none fell, we had reason to believe that many were wounded. The spears and stones were flying from the bushes in every direction, and although we killed and wounded in this place great numbers of them, we were satisfied, from the opposition made, that we should have to fight our whole way through the valley.

“It became now necessary to guard against a useless consumption of ammunition. The scouting parties had returned, and some had expended all their cartridges; I exhorted them to be more careful of them, and after having given them a fresh supply, forbid any firing from the main body, unless we should be attacked by great numbers. I now left a party in this place, posted in a house with the wounded, and another party in ambush behind a wall, and directed Mouina to lead us to the next village; but before marching I sent a messenger to inform the Typees that we should cease hostilities when they no longer made resistance, but so long as stones were thrown I should destroy their villages. No notice was taken of this message. We continued our march up the valley, and met in our way several beautiful villages, which were set on fire, and at length arrived at their capital, for it deserves the name of one. We had been compelled to fight every inch of ground as we advanced,

and here they made considerable opposition; the place was, however, soon carried, and I very reluctantly set fire to it.

“The beauty and regularity of this place was such as to strike every spectator with astonishment, and their grand site, or public square, was far superior to any other we had met with; numbers of their gods were here destroyed, several large and elegant new war canoes, which had never been used, were burned in the houses that sheltered them; many of their drums, which they had been compelled to abandon, were thrown into the flames, and our natives loaded themselves with plunder, after destroying bread-fruit and other trees, and all the young plants they could find. We had now arrived at the upper end of the valley, about nine miles from the beach, and at the foot of the waterfall before mentioned; the day was advancing; we had yet much to do, and it was necessary to hasten our return to the fort first taken, where we arrived after being about four hours absent, leaving behind us a scene of ruin and desolation. I had hoped that the Typees had now abandoned all further thoughts of resistance; but on my return to the fort I found the parties left there had been annoyed the whole time of my absence; but being sheltered from the stones, and short of ammunition, they had not fired on the enemy.

“The fort was situated exactly half-way up the valley; to reascend the mountain and return by the way we came would have been impossible; it became therefore necessary to go to the beach, where I was informed that the difficulty of ascending the mountains would not be so great; many were exhausted with fatigue, and began to feel the cravings of hunger, and I directed a halt, that all might rest and refresh themselves. After resting about half an hour, I directed the natives to take care of

our wounded. We then formed the line of march and proceeded down the valley, and in our route destroyed several other villages, at all of which we had some skirmishing with the enemy. At one of these places, situated at the foot of a steep hill, they rolled enormous stones down, with a view of crushing us to death, but they did us no injury. The number of villages destroyed amounted to ten, and the destruction of trees and plants and the plunder carried off by the natives is almost incredible. The Typees fought us to the last, and even at first harassed our rear on our return ; but parties left in ambush soon put a stop to any further annoyance. We at length came to the formidable fort which checked our career on our first day's enterprise, and although I had witnessed many instances of the great exertion and ingenuity of these islanders, I never had supposed them capable of contriving and erecting a work like this, so well calculated for strength and defense.

“‘There are but three entrances into this valley, one on the west, which we descended, one on the east, and one from the beach. No force whatever had before dared to attack them on the west, on account of the impossibility of retreating, in case of a repulse, which they calculated on as certain. The passage on the east led from the valley of their friends, and that from the beach was guarded by fortresses deemed impregnable, and justly so against any force which could be brought against them unassisted by artillery. On viewing the strength of this place I could not help felicitating myself on the lucky circumstance which had induced me to attack them by land, for I believe we should have failed in any attempt on this place.

“‘On my arrival at the beach I met Tavee and many of his, the Shoueme tribe, together with the chiefs of the Happahs. Tavee was the bearer of a white flag, and

several of the same emblems of peace were flying on the different hills around his valley; he was desirous of knowing whether I intended going to their valley, and wished to be informed when he should again bring presents, and what articles he should bring; he inquired if I would still be his friend, and reminded me that I was Temaa Typee, the chief of the valley of Shoueme, and that he was Tavee. I gave him assurance of my friendship, requested him to return and allay the fears of the women, who, he informed me, were in the utmost terror, apprehensive of an attack from me. The chiefs of the Happahs invited me to return to their valley, assuring me that an abundance of everything was already provided for us; and the girls, who had assembled in great numbers, dressed out in their best attire, welcomed our return with smiles, and notwithstanding our wet and dirty condition — for it had been raining the greater part of the day — convinced us by their looks and gestures that they were disposed to give us the most friendly reception.

“Gattanewa met me on the side of the hill as I was ascending. The old man’s heart was full, he could not speak; he placed both my hands on his head, rested his forehead on my knees, and after a short pause, raising himself, placed his hands on my breast, exclaiming, ‘Gattanewa! and then on his own, saying, Opotee! to remind me that we had exchanged names.

“When I had reached the summit of the mountain, I stopped to contemplate that valley which, in the morning, we had viewed in all its beauty, the scene of abundance and happiness — a long line of smoking ruins now marked our track from one end to the other; the opposite hills were covered with the unhappy fugitives, and the whole presented a scene of desolation and horror. Unhappy and heroic people! the victims of your own courage and

mistaken pride, while the instruments of your fate shed the tears of pity over your misfortunes, thousands of your countrymen — nay, brethren of the same family — triumph in your distresses !

“ I shall not fatigue myself or the reader by a longer account of this expedition. We spent the night with the Happahs, who supplied us most abundantly, and next morning, at daylight, started for Madisonville, where we arrived about eight o'clock, after an absence of three nights and two days, during which time we marched upward of sixty miles, by paths which had never before been trodden but by the natives. Several of my strongest men were for a long time laid up by sickness, occasioned by their excessive fatigue, and one — Corporal Mahan of the marines — died two days after our return.

“ The day of our return was devoted to rest ; a messenger was, however, dispatched to the Typees to inform them I was still willing to make peace, and that I should not allow them to return to their valley until they had come to terms of friendship with us. The messenger, on his return, informed me that the Typees, on his arrival, were in the utmost consternation, but that my message had diffused the most lively joy among them. There was nothing they desired more than peace, and they would be willing to purchase my friendship on any terms. He informed me that a flag of truce would be sent in next day to know my conditions.

“ On the arrival of the Typee flag, which was borne by a chief accompanied by a priest, I informed them that I still insisted on a compliance with the conditions formerly offered them, to wit, an exchange of presents and peace : with myself and the tribes who had allied themselves to me. They readily consented to these terms, and requested to know the number of hogs I should require, stating that they had lost but few, and should be

enabled to supply us abundantly. I told them I should expect from them four hundred, which they assured me should be delivered without delay. Flags were now sent to me again from all the tribes on the island, even the most remote and inconsiderable, with large presents of hogs and fruit, and we had never at any time since we had been on the island experienced such abundance.

“Peace now being established throughout the island, and the utmost harmony reigning, not only between us and the natives, but between the different tribes, they mixed with one another about our village in the most friendly manner, and the different chiefs with the priests came daily to visit me. They were all much delighted that a general peace had been brought about, that they might now all visit the different parts of the island in safety, and many of the oldest men assured me that they had never before been out of the valley in which they were born. They repeatedly expressed their astonishment and admiration that I should have been enabled to effect so much in so short a time, and that I should have been able to extend my influence so far as to give them such complete protection, not only in the valley of Tieuhoy, but among the tribes with which they had been at war from the earliest periods, and had heretofore been considered their natural enemies. I informed them that I should shortly leave them, and should return at the expiration of a year. I exhorted them to remain at peace with one another, and assured them that if they should be at war on my return, I should punish the tribe most in fault. They all gave me the strongest assurances of a disposition to remain on good terms, not only with me and my people, but with one another.

“I now was enabled to make little excursions occasionally into different parts of the valley, and visit the natives at their homes, which was what I had not been

enabled to do heretofore, as my various occupations had kept me much confined to our village. On these occasions I always met the most hospitable and friendly reception from the natives of both sexes. Cocoanuts and whatever else they had were offered me, and I rarely returned home without several little *tie-ties* as a token of their regard. I generally took with me seeds of different kinds, with which I was provided, such as melons, pumpkins, peas, beans, oranges, limes, etc., together with peach-stones, wheat, and Indian corn, which were planted within the inclosures, in the most suitable places for them, the natives always assisting in pulling up the weeds and clearing the ground for planting them. The nature of the different kinds of vegetables and fruit that each kind of grain would produce was explained to them, and they all promised to take the utmost care of them and prevent the hogs from doing them any injury. I directed them not to pull any of the fruit until they had consulted Wilson to know if they were ripe. Among all the seeds that were sown there was none which gave them so much pleasure as the wheat, which they called *maiè*, which is the name they give the bread-fruit; they would not believe, however, at first that it was from this grain we made our bread (which they also called *maiè*, but sometimes potato) until I had ground some of the grain between two stones, and showed them the flour, which produced from them the most joyous exclamations of *maiè! maiè! maiè!* and all began to clear away spots for sowing the grain, and bringing me leaves and cocoanut shells, begging that I would give them some to take home to plant.

“I endeavored to impress them with an idea of the value of the seeds I was planting, and explained to them the different kinds of fruit they would produce, assuring them of their excellence, and as a farther inducement to

them to attend their cultivation, I promised them that, on my return, I would give them a whale's tooth for every ripe pumpkin and melon they would bring me; and to the chiefs of the distant tribes, to whom I distributed the different kinds of seeds, I made the same promise. I also gave them several English hogs of a superior breed, which they were very anxious to procure. I left in charge of Wilson some male and female goats, and as I had a number of young Galápagos tortoises, I distributed several among the chiefs, and permitted a great many to escape into the bushes and among the grass.

“In one of these excursions, I was led to the chief place of religious ceremony of the valley. It is situated high up the valley of the Havvous, in a fine grove, and I regret extremely that I had it not in my power to make a correct drawing of it on the spot, as it far exceeds in splendor everything of the kind described by Captain Cook, or represented in the plates which accompany his voyage.

“Sometime previous to this I had been tabooed at my request by Gattanewa; this gave me the privilege of visiting and examining all their places of religious worship, and I now took advantage of my right in going into the grove among the gods, accompanied by the attendants on the place. Wilson could not accompany me there, and I was not enabled to make enquiry on many subjects; but observing that they treated all their gods with little respect, frequently catching them by their large ears, drawing my attention to their mouths, their flat noses, and large eyes, and pointing out to me, by signs, all their other deformities, I told Wilson to inform them I thought they treated their gods very disrespectfully. They told me that those were like themselves, mere attendants on their divinity, as they were on the priest; that I had not yet seen their greatest of all gods, that he was in a small

house, which they pointed out, situated at the corner of the grove; and on my expressing a desire to see him, after a short consultation among themselves, they brought him out on the branch of a cocoanut tree, when I was surprised to find him only a parcel of paper cloth secured to a piece of a spear about four feet long; it in some measure resembled a child in swaddling clothes, and the part intended to represent the head had a number of stripes of cloth hanging from it about a foot in length. I could not help laughing at the ridiculous appearance of the god they worshiped, in which they all joined me with a great deal of good humor, some of them dandling and nursing the god as a child would her doll.

“I endeavored to ascertain whether they had an idea of a future state, rewards, and punishments, and the nature of their heaven. As regards the latter, they believed it to be an island, somewhere in the sky, abounding with everything desirable; that those killed in war and carried off by their friends go there, provided they are furnished with a canoe and provisions, but that those who are carried off by the enemy never reach it unless a sufficient number of the enemy can be obtained to paddle his canoe there, and for this reason they were so anxious to procure a crew for their priest, who was killed and carried off by the Happahs. They have neither rewards nor punishments in this world, and I could not learn that they expected any in the next. Their religion, however, is like a plaything, an amusement to them, and I very much doubt whether they, at any moment, gave it a serious thought; their priests and jugglers manage those matters for them; what they tell them they believe, and do not put themselves to the trouble of considering whether it is right or wrong. They are very credulous, and will as readily believe in one religion as another. I have explained to them the nature of the Christian

religion, in a manner to suit their ideas; they listened with much attention, appeared pleased with the novelty of it, and agreed that our God must be greater than theirs. Our Chaplain, Mr. Adams, endeavored to collect from one of their priests some notions of his religion, and among other things inquired of him whether, according to their belief, the body was translated to the other world or only the spirit; the priest, after a considerable pause, at length replied, that the flesh and bones went to the earth, but that all within went to the sky. From his manner, however, the question seemed greatly to embarrass him, and it appeared as though a new field was opened to his view.

“Besides the gods at the burying-place, or *morai*, as it is called by them, they have their household gods, which are hung round their necks, generally made of human bones; and others, which are carved on the handles of their fans, on their stilts, their canes, and more particularly on their war-clubs; but these gods are not held in any estimation; they are sold, exchanged, and given away with the same indifference as any other object, and indeed the most precious relics, the skulls and other bones of their relations, are disposed of with equal indifference.

“When we were at war with the Typees, the Happahs and Tayehs made a strict search in the houses of the enemy for the skulls of their ancestors who had been slain in battle (knowing where they were deposited); many were found, and the possessors seemed rejoiced that they had recovered from the enemy so inestimable a relic. Dr. Hoffman seeing a man with three or four skulls strung round his waist, asked him for them, and they were given up immediately, although they had belonged to his father, brother, or some near relation. Next day several appeared at the village with the skulls

to traffic for harpoons. A very old man came to the village as a representative from one of the tribes, and wishing to make me a present, and having nothing else to give me, took from his neck a string of bones cut in the form of their gods, and assured me they were the bones of his grandmother.

“In religion these people are mere children; their morals are their baby-houses, and their gods are their dolls. I have seen Gattanewa with all his sons, and many others, sitting for hours together clapping their hands and singing before a number of little wooden gods laid out in small houses erected for the occasion, and ornamented with strips of cloth; they were such houses as a child would have made, of about two feet long and eighteen inches high, and no less than ten or twelve of them in a cluster, like a small village. By the side of this were several canoes, furnished with their paddles, seines, harpoons, and other fishing apparatus, and round the whole a line was drawn to show that the whole place was tabooed. Within this line was Gattanewa and others, like overgrown babies, singing and clapping their hands, sometimes laughing and talking, and appearing to give their ceremony no attention. He asked me if the place was not very fine; and it was on this occasion that he tabooed me, in order to give me an opportunity of approaching the gods and examining them more closely. The whole ceremony of tabooing me consisted in taking a piece of white cloth from the hole through his ear, and tying it around my hat as a band. I wore this badge for several days, and simple as it was, every one I passed would call out *taboo*, and avoid touching me. I inquired the cause of this ceremony of Gattanewa, and he told me he was going to catch tortoises for the gods, and that he should have to pray to them several days and nights for success, during which time he should be tabooed and dare not enter a house frequented by women.”

Eugene came to a pause; then, after a moment, "Here's a paragraph about tattooing," he said; "shall I read it?"

"We've had a good deal on that subject, already," objected his brother.

"No matter," interposed the Professor; "he's pretty sure to give us something new, so let's hear him," and Eugene at once resumed:

"Tattooing among these people is performed by means of a machine made of bone something like a comb with the teeth only on one side; the points of the teeth are rubbed with a black paint made of burnt coconut-shell ground to powder, and mixed with water; this is struck into the flesh by means of a heavy piece of wood which serves the purpose of a hammer. The operation is extremely painful and streams of blood follow every blow, yet pride induces them to bear this torture, and they even suffer themselves to be tied down while the operation is performing in order that their agony may not interrupt the operator. The men commence tattooing as soon as they are able to bear the pain; they begin at the age of eighteen or nineteen, and are rarely completely tattooed until they arrive at the age of thirty-five. The women begin about the same age; they have only their legs, arms, and hands tattooed—which is done with extraordinary neatness and delicacy—and some slight lines drawn across their lips. It is also the practice with some to have the inside of their lips tattooed, but the object of this ornament I could never find out, as it is never seen unless they turn out their lips to show it. Every tribe on the island, I observed, was tattooed after a different fashion, and I was informed that every line had its meaning, and gave to the bearer certain privileges at their feasts. This practice of tattooing sometimes occasions sores which fester and are sev-

eral weeks in healing; it, however, never produces any serious consequences, or leaves any scars behind.

“On the 9th of December I had all my provisions, wood, and water on board, my decks filled with hogs, and a most abundant supply of cocoanuts and bananas, with which we had been furnished by the liberality of our Nukahiva friends, who had reserved for us a stock of dried cocoanuts, suitable for taking to sea, and calculated to keep for some three or four months.

“I now found it necessary to stop the liberty I had heretofore given my people, and directed that every person should remain on board and work late and early to hasten the departure of the ship; but three of my crew determined on having a parting kiss, and to obtain it, swam on shore at night; they were caught on the beach and brought to me. I immediately caused them to be confined in irons, and determined to check any further disobedience of my orders by the most exemplary punishment. I next morning caused them to be punished at the gangway, and set them to work in chains with my prisoners. This severity excited some discontent and murmurings among the crew, but it effectually prevented a recurrence.

“Nukahiva had many charms for a sailor, and had part of my crew felt disposed to remain there, I knew they would not absent themselves until the moment before my departure. This affair had, however, like to have ended seriously; my crew did not see the same motives for restraint as myself; they had long been indulged, and they thought it hard now to be deprived of their usual liberty; one kiss now was worth a thousand at any other time; they were restless, discontented, and unhappy. The girls lined the beach from morning till night, and every moment importuned me to take the taboo off the men, and laughingly expressed their grief

by dipping their fingers into the sea and touching their eyes, so as to let the salt water trickle down their cheeks. Others would seize a chip, and holding it in the manner of a shark's tooth, declared they would cut themselves to pieces in despair; some threatened to beat their brains out with a spear of grass, some to drown themselves, and all were determined to inflict on themselves some dreadful punishment if I did not permit their sweethearts to come on shore. The men did not bear it with so much good humor; their situation, they said, was worse than slavery.'

"And I don't blame them for thinking so," added the reader, emphatically, as he closed the book with a slam.

"What! is that all?" demanded Chester, hastily.

"Yes," was the reply; "so far as the Commodore is concerned."

"Did Porter leave the island with his whole fleet?" asked Captain Bradford.

"No," said Eugene; "he sailed on the 12th of December, with the *Essex* and *Essex Junior* only. The other vessels he had warped in under the guns of the fort before he left."

"Then some of his force was left behind?" observed Mr. Morgan.

"Yes, the command of the fort was given to Lieutenant Gamble, of the marines, who had under him Feltus and Clapp, two of the midshipmen, and twenty-one men."

"What was the Commodore's idea in leaving the prizes there?" asked Captain Bradford.

"To secure the means of future repairs, and to avoid any unnecessary detention."

"But he must have had some understanding with Gamble as to what he should do, in case he didn't return in a given time," said the Captain.

"Yes, it was understood that if the lieutenant did not

hear from him within five and a half months, he was to leave the island and make the best of his way home."

"Well," said Chester, "in a word, what happened after the Commodore left?"

"The *Essex*," rejoined his brother, "had no sooner disappeared than the savages began to show a turbulent disposition. This was, for the time, quieted. Soon after, one of the men was drowned, and four deserted in a whaleboat. In April a part of the men mutinied and sailed away in the *Seringapatam*. In May the natives attacked them and killed Midshipman Feltus and three of the men, and severely wounded another. The whole party was now reduced to eight individuals, of whom only four were fit for duty. With these Mr. Gamble got to sea in the *Sir Andrew Hammond*, and went to the Hawaiian Islands, where he was soon after captured by the *Cherub*. He then learned the fate of the *Essex*, which, on the last of March, after a bloody and long-sustained battle with the British ships *Phæbe* and *Cherub*, in the neutral harbor of Valparaiso, had surrendered."

"Yes," exclaimed the Captain, quickly, "and that was a dastardly piece of business on the part of the British."

"It was so," assented Eugene, with emphasis.

"But how did Porter come to let the enemy get the best of him at last?" asked Mr. Morgan, much interested.

"The action," explained Eugene, "was fought under great disadvantages, with a far superior force of the enemy. Just before going into battle, a squall of wind had carried away the maintop-mast of the *Essex*, so that Commodore Porter could not manœuvre his ship. She therefore lay completely at the mercy of the enemy, who could choose his own position and distance, and, with his guns of longer reach, pour in the shot upon his crippled antagonist, without the latter having the shadow of a chance for a successful defense. But, notwithstanding it

all, the brave Commodore made a splendid fight ; indeed, he refused to surrender until his principal officers and more than one-half of his crew had been killed or wounded."

"Well, I hope he was well treated when he reached home," said Morgan.

"He was everywhere received with the highest honors. Congress and the several States gave him a vote of thanks, and by universal acclamation he was called 'The Hero of the Pacific.'"

"Good ; I am glad to hear it."

"And so am I," said Chester ; "but I should like very much to know just what permanent effect his visit had on those islanders. Can you tell us, Professor ?"

"No," was the reply ; "but I think I can give you some idea, after consulting an author who has been quoted here more than once during the past few days."

"As you will want time for that, Professor," suggested the Captain, "I move we postpone further consideration of the subject until to-morrow."

The motion was unanimously carried, and the little group soon broke up.

CHAPTER XIV.

UAHUGA — NUKAHIVA.

NO one was disposed to linger long at the breakfast table next morning; and on rising, all, with one accord, sought the quarter-deck. It was a lovely day, not too warm, though but little air was stirring, and the broad expanse of ocean round was truly pacific. The most comfortable chair was pushed forward into the best place, and the Professor ordered to take possession, which, after a mild protest, he proceeded to do. Then, with eager haste, Eugene demanded to know what information his researches had brought him since the day before.

“Not so much that is new as I had hoped,” answered the Professor, with a smile; “still, I have been greatly interested in noting the many corroborations of Porter’s statements that I find in other works.”

“And you have formed some idea of the impression left on the Marquesans by the Commodore’s visit?” asked Chester.

“You shall hear.” Then, after settling himself comfortably in his chair, and glancing at a memorandum in his hand, he continued:

“Sixteen years after Porter sailed away from Nukahiva, the United States ship *Vincennes* visited the group, with C. S. Stewart on board, as chaplain, and as you doubtless know, that gentleman has left us an entertaining account of the visit.

“The *Vincennes* first sighted Uahuga, the most eastern island of the northern cluster. They at once bore down

for it, and weathering the southeast point, coasted for a distance of fifteen miles along its southern shore. On this side, Stewart says, it seemed lofty, precipitous, and barren; and he estimates its greatest height at from fifteen hundred to two thousand feet.

"Like most other high, tropical islands, it is deeply furrowed with narrow glens, separated from each other by sharp spurs of mountain, running from the highland in the center to the shore. Here and there, he tells us, a small plain or table-land, and occasionally a short sand beach appears, but no alluvial interval, and generally a bold coast, with breakers dashing high against its dark cliffs. No woodland is to be seen except on the loftiest peaks of the interior; but all the high ridges and valleys, and the whole surface of the country, is beautifully verdant from a heavy growth of tufted grass.

"As they sailed along, the wildness of the formation rapidly increased, until they made the southwest point. As yet they had discovered no sign whatever of the inhabitants. 'Everything on shore,' he says, 'seemed solitary as the desert.' Disappointed in this respect, and the night rapidly approaching, we were about to bear away for Nukahiva, already dimly descried in the west, when a high bluff of rocks directly abreast of the ship became suddenly crowned with islanders, whose light skins and naked figures were perfectly distinguishable, while the shore rang with wild shouts, as they waved streamers of white cloth high on their spears, and tossed their mantles above their heads in the air. Having too much sail set readily to check the way of the ship, we soon shot past, while the natives, scampering along the heights and over a hill ahead, shouted and whistled with every variety of intonation of voice, and still wildly gesticulated with their hands and arms, and waved their tapas on high.'

“They reduced sail as rapidly as possible, and getting at the same time under the lee of the land, their progress soon became almost imperceptible. And now, from every direction, they saw the natives hurrying toward them, some climbing down the face of a rocky promontory just ahead, and all shouting, and beckoning, and waving streamers.

“The hills behind this bluff rise precipitately, and are beautifully wooded. ‘In coming abreast of it,’ Stewart says, ‘we found it to shelter by its projection, a short, pebbly beach, opening into a narrow ravine, filled with heavy groves to the water’s edge. The front of the glen is but a few rods in width, and so completely occupied with trees as to appear but one deeply-shaded bower. Nothing like a habitation could be discerned, and it is probable that the shelter of the groves and the recesses of the rocks constitute the only abodes of the forty or fifty natives seen hanging among the cliffs, or clustering in rude excitement on the shore.

“‘The scene was one of the wildest imaginable; and such as few have it in their power ever to behold. The picturesque beauty of the wooded hills and glen brightly gleaming in the setting sun, the naked figures of the islanders, and their rude and extravagant gestures and vociferations, exhibiting man in the simplest state of nature, still the unclothed tenant of the forest, could scarce fail in producing a most powerful sensation among those who had never before witnessed anything of the kind. And I suspect no one on board was disappointed in the depth of the impression or degree of excitement occasioned by this first scene in the South Seas.

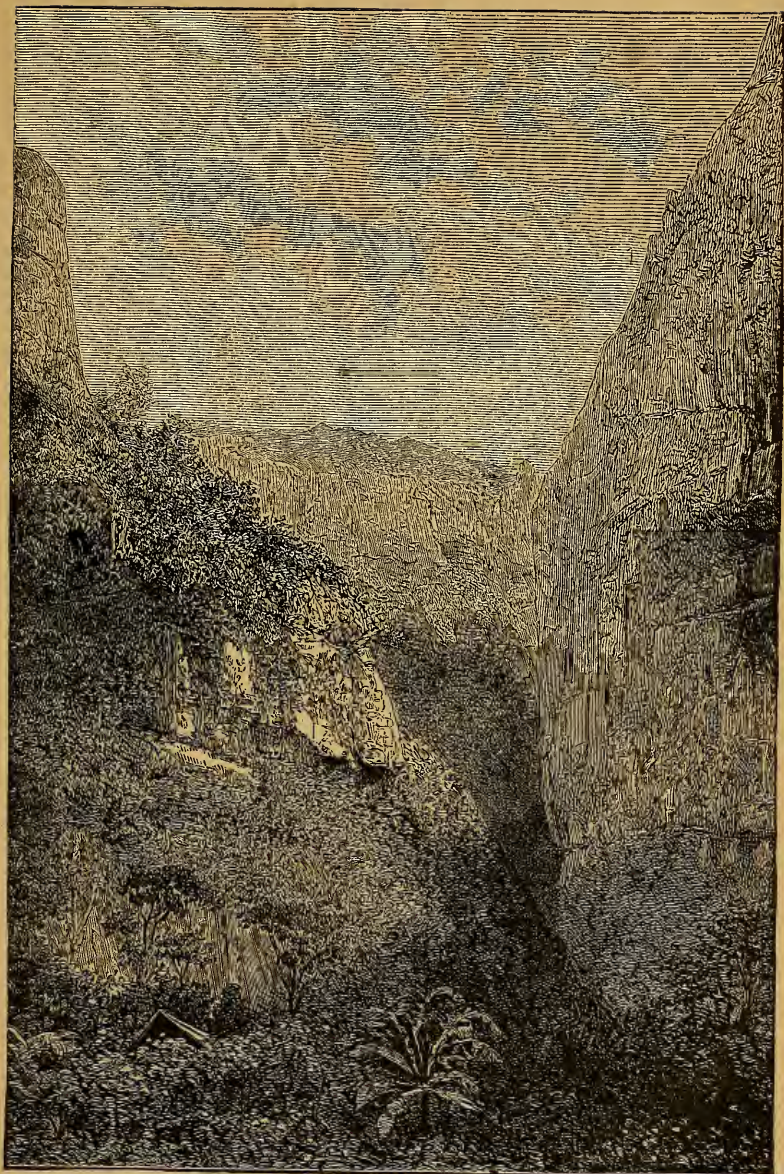
“‘In the midst of the shouting and apparent impotunity for us to land, the Captain ordered the music on deck; and the moment its full and animated strains reached the shore, the effect on them was most evident.

They instantly crouched to the ground in perfect silence, as if under the influence of a charm. Nothing of the kind, it is probable, ever broke upon their ears before, and well might there have been a mingling of superstition in their minds with the sudden swelling on the breeze of sounds new and seemingly unearthly. As the night was rapidly approaching, there was no time to attempt sending a boat off; and while the band continued to play a succession of airs, the ship was headed for Nukahiva, and all sail again set. We were soon beyond the reach of their voices; but they were seen, while the shades of the evening gathered round them, still seated on the rocks and under their dark bowers, as if absorbed in silent wonder and admiration.'

"It is probable that few ships, if any, had ever before been so near this little spot; and to its inhabitants the great man-of-war, with its full-toned band, its many flags, and its numerous crew, must have seemed for the moment like a vision of brightness from another world.

"The channel between Uahuga and Nukahiva being less than thirty miles wide, they ran only a part of the night, lying to the remainder. Next morning they were eight or ten miles from the latter, with the whole east end in view. Uapoa, the third island in the cluster, was also in sight, twenty miles to the south.

"As they approached Nukahiva, the only object that attracted particular attention was the headland forming the southeast point, for which they were steering. Stewart describes it as a bold and lofty promontory, surmounted by a gigantic rock, having a most striking resemblance to the ruinous watch-tower of some dilapidated castle, upheld by ponderous bastions, and terminating in a formation which requires but little fancy to transform into battlements and a parapet. This point they called Tower Bluff.



GLEN, HEAD OF THE VALLEY OF TIENHOY.



“On passing it, they came to the bay and valley of Oomi, inhabited by the Typees, the tribe, you remember, with which Commodore Porter fought. The valley was filled with verdure, and richly covered, to the mountain tops, with groves of the cocoanut and bread-fruit. A high green point, and an arm of the sea running three or four miles inland, separate this valley and its waters from that of the Happahs, the only tribe intervening between the Typees and the Tayehs, the occupants of Tieuhoy, where they at length came to anchor.

“While off the valley of the Happahs, they were boarded by a naked swarm of the natives, male and female, and soon ascertained from them that their tribe and the Typees were, as usual, at war; and that, only two days previous, there had been a sea fight between them near the spot where they then were. Their grimaces of detestation and deadly hatred to their enemies, as they pointed to their habitations and valley, and pantomimic representations of the battle, the discharge of the muskets, and effect of the shot, were, says Stewart, quite amusing. They used all the eloquence of speech and gesture to induce the new-comers to espouse their cause and pour destruction on the poor Typees, whose very name seemed a terror among them. For this purpose they wished them to come to anchor near their valley; but finding them determined to proceed to Tieuhoy, they remained on board, the Tayehs, just then, being their friends and allies.

“They found Tieuhoy very much as Porter first saw it. From the beach in the center, luxuriant groves spread thickly and widely among bright unwooded hills, and velvet-like lawns through the valleys behind, and up the lower hills skirting them, to the highest elevations. At the head of the principal valley a gigantic pyramid of rock presents an object strikingly unique in its form and

position. On the right, and behind this, a perpendicular basaltic wall of several hundred feet crowns the summit of the loftiest mountain; and opposite, on the left, an immense projecting cliff of gray stone, mantled with trees and richly hanging parasitical plants, seems ready, momentarily, to leap from the face of the precipice against which it stands, to the bosom of the green valley below. Innumerable sharp ridges and deep glens intersect the whole, down which the mountain streams tumble and foam in rapids and cascades, gleaming in their dark channels like streams of silver on the eye.

"The valleys are so thickly covered with trees that few of the habitations of the natives are seen. Three or four occupy the open summit of some of the nearest hills; the bleached thatch of others, here and there, peep through the heavy foliage embowering them; and one or two are discerned, hanging like birds' nests, high in the solitudes of the mountain forests.

"They had come to anchor just opposite the former encampment of Commodore Porter, the place he called Madisonville. While yet under way, two or three canoes were seen paddling toward them from the fishing grounds, near the sea, and others from the center of the bay; and they had hardly let go their anchor before scores of both sexes came swimming in all directions from the shore, soon surrounding the ship, sporting and blowing like so many porpoises. They were all received on board; and speedily there was noise and confusion in abundance. Many of them, both men and women, were entirely naked, though most of the latter brought with them a *pau* or *kihei* (petticoat or mantle) tied up in leaves or native cloth, and elevated on a short stick, which they held above their heads with one hand, while they swam with the other. Till they gained the deck, however, and had time to make their toilet there, they all stood *à la*

Venus de Medici; an attitude which many, from an entire deficiency in their wardrobe on this aquatic excursion, were obliged to retain. The number on board, our informant tells us, amounted to between one hundred and fifty and two hundred.

“It was not till three hours later that a canoe of chiefs arrived alongside. The party consisted of Moana, the prince or king of the tribe, a boy about eight years of age; Haapé, the guardian of the prince, and regent during the minority; Tenaé, his son, of the same age as Moana, and Piaroro, a chief of rank from the neighboring tribe of the Happahs. Neither men nor boys had any other clothing than the simple maro of an inferior kind of tapa or native cloth. The prince and his companion were bright little fellows, and, as if by common consent, became great favorites with all the officers.



PIARORO'S HAND.

“Haapé was a middle-aged man of mild countenance and seemingly of a kind and amiable disposition. He welcomed the visitors with great cordiality, taking it for granted that, by the arrival of one of ‘*Opotee's ships*,’ as they call all American vessels, he had gained just the kind of ally against the Typees that he needed.

“Piaroro was a noble-looking fellow, tall and large,

not very muscular, but of admirable proportions, with a general contour of figure and roundness and polish of limb that would have done grace to an Apollo. His skin was so perfectly covered with tattoo, in a variety of tasteful and symmetrical figures, as to give him the appearance of being clothed; and, though it was apparent that naturally his complexion was as fair as most of his countrymen, his whole face and head, chest and shoulders, were, from this cause, as black as a negro's. The dressing of the head constitutes a principal labor of the toilet of both sexes; and Piaroro's hair was arranged with the greatest care, being tied very smoothly and closely, with white tapa, in two bunches on the top.

"After informing the chiefs, through an interpreter, of the object of his visit, the captain of the *Vincennes* offered them refreshments; and while they were eating, the band struck up on deck. They at once hurried from the cabin, and until evening gave themselves up, with all the abandon and delight of children, to the enjoyment of the music.

"On entering the harbor a white flag had been hoisted at the fore-top-mast-head, as a signal that the ship was free of access to all who might choose to come on board. The captain informed them of the design in setting it, and told the chiefs that any of the people might come off whenever they saw it flying, but that the taking of it down would show that the ship was tabooed till it should be hoisted again; that now it was to be lowered for the night, and all on board, men and women, must start for the shore.

"This Haapé and Piaroro made known to the crowds thronging the decks and rigging from stem to stern, and mildly used their authority with them. At first, little attention was paid to the order; but when the captain repeated the injunction to the chiefs, assuring them that

the ship must be cleared, they assumed a more authoritative and decided tone toward the people, and the men began plunging overboard amidst the confusion of a general chatter and exclamation.

“The women manifestly considered the order as referring only to the other sex, and very composedly remained, clustered about, in the belief that, like all other ships probably that had ever visited them, the *Vincennes* was to be their home till her anchor was raised for sea again. And when, after repeated declarations that they too must go, they began to suspect the truth of the case, scarce anything could exceed the looks of surprise and inquiry they cast on one another and on the ship’s company. They seemed determined, by their dilatory movements in obeying the order, still further to test the reality of such an unknown measure; and it was not till the drum had beat to quarters, and the officers had very courteously pointed out with their swords the steps at the gangway to them, that they too began, with many a ‘*taha! taha!*’ to leap, one after another, into the water, and *pull away*, as they have learned themselves to express it, for the shore. The chiefs said, laughingly, as they took their leave to enter their canoe, ‘*This is a strange ship!*’ And no doubt it was the first in which they had ever known any restriction to be placed on the grossest licentiousness.

“The next day, by special invitation of the regent, the officers paid him a visit on shore. His house was located on the brow of a small hill near the beach, and overlooked the bay. It was small, but was a conspicuous object from the anchorage, and had a pretty cottage-like appearance. Moana, the young king, resided with him.

“With regard to the houses, Stewart says: ‘Though of very different sizes, from twenty to one hundred feet in length, from eight to sixteen in height, and from ten

to fourteen and sixteen in breadth, they are all of one shape and style, and vary materially, in their form and construction, from the Hawaiians.

“Here, the roofs, instead of descending to eaves on both sides of the ridge-pole, have rafters in front only, while the back of the house descends perpendicularly, or in a very slight inclination, from the peak to the ground, giving to the exterior the appearance of an ordinary hut, cut lengthwise in two. They are universally erected, so far as I have observed, on a platform of rough, but in many cases massive, stone-work, from one to four feet in height, which extends two or three feet beyond the area of the house. The rafters descend in front to a plate, or timber, extending the whole length of the house, supported by a row of thick, round pillars, from three to five feet in height, over which the eaves project sufficiently to screen the entrance from the weather.

“At the peak the rafters rest on a similar stick of timber, supported by two or more posts, from eight to fourteen feet in height. The space between them is filled with poles of bamboo, or of the light wood of the hibiscus, laid parallel, two or three inches apart, over which lighter sticks are placed horizontally, at regular intervals; the whole being neatly lashed together at the points of intersection. The back and ends are filled up in the same manner, and thus prepared for the external covering. This is of thatch, composed either of the leaf of the bread-fruit tree, the cocoanut, or palmetto — *Chamærops humilis* — all of which are prepared for this purpose in different methods. The cocoanut leaf is from twelve to sixteen feet long, and deeply feathered on either side of the rib running through the middle of it. This rib or stem is split from end to end, and the leaflets on each braided closely together, forming a matting of that length, and one and a half or two feet in breadth.

Thus prepared, they are placed on the rafters double, the higher ranges lapping over the lower, in the manner of slate or shingles.

“The leaf of the bread-fruit is two feet in length, one and more in width, and deeply indented. It is prepared for thatching by stringing the leaves as closely as possible upon a rod of light wood, ten or twelve feet long, and half an inch in diameter, through a slit made in the stem of each leaf; it is then attached to the roof and sides in the same manner as the cocoanut, and forms a more durable and better thatch. But the palmetto affords the valued covering, and the most used, especially for the roof, wherever found in sufficient abundance. Its fan-like leaves are fastened one by one, with their centers about a foot from each other, upon long, split pieces of the hibiscus, which are then ranged upon the roof, sixteen or eighteen inches apart, and, thus disposed, lap considerably, every way, over each other. All these kinds of thatch, instead of becoming dark and sunburned, like the grass of the Hawaiian huts, bleach beautifully; and, when seen at a distance, gleam among the groves, in the brightness of the day, like neatly whitened cottages in our own country.

“The fronts of the habitations are seldom thatched. Sometimes they are entirely open; in which case, the timber supporting the roof, and the pillars beneath, are generally neatly hewn and ornamented by braids of sennit, of various colors, tied on in horizontal stripes, in diamonds, or in checks, in a pretty and fanciful manner. In most of the houses, however, the front is composed of bamboos, lashed horizontally to the pillars, at intervals of an inch or two, or in lattice-work, for the admission of light; in which case there is a small door in the middle, furnished with a shutter, in a slide, to be closed or opened at pleasure. Such as this last was the

front, and such the door by which the officers entered the dwelling of Haapé.'

"There were a number of persons in the house, besides the regent's wife and female relatives, children, and servants; some sitting, and others lying and lounging around. All of the women wore more or less clothing, and most of them had paid particular attention to their hair. The wife of Haapé, a fine-looking and graceful person, was nursing a child, of which she seemed very fond.

"'In every house,' the Chaplain explains, 'the internal arrangement is the same. A smooth trunk of a cocoanut tree extends the whole length, a foot or two from the farther side. At an interval of about four feet another lies parallel to it; and the space between, spread with grass and covered with mats, constitutes the bed of the whole family and household; the innermost log forming a general pillow, and the second a support for the lower limbs, which extend over it. The rest of the area is a paved floor, a foot or two above the platform without, upon which they partake of their meals, and perform their indoor work.

"'Calabashes of food and water, wooden bowls and trays, some stone adzes, with other rude implements, numerous spears and war-clubs, and a few muskets sticking in the thatch, constituted the furniture of the establishment.'

"The crowd following the party in, added to the heat and closeness of the house; and this, together with swarms of flies and the smell of cocoanut-oil, soon made them very uncomfortable; so that, after a few expressions of civility, the Captain hastened to distribute among the chiefs of both sexes some small, but to them valuable and useful presents, and then, with his party, hurried away. It was noticed that the presents were received

with the utmost eagerness and cupidity, and with an evident jealousy of one another; each secreting immediately, under some garment or beneath him, whatever was placed in his possession.

“Once in the open air, they determined to take a walk inland, among the groves and plantations of the valley. The surface of the lowland they found uneven, and entirely covered with groves of the bread-fruit, cocoanut, and various other trees, with scarce a sign of any artificial cultivation. In a walk of more than a mile, they saw one or two small inclosures only, containing clusters of the cloth plant or paper mulberry, sugar-cane, and roots of the *dracæna terminalis*, and a few tobacco plants; these, however, appeared well kept; and the fences surrounding them very neatly constructed of bamboo, lashed horizontally to stakes set in the ground, with cords formed of the shreds of the cocoanut-shell.

“After a delightful walk of some miles, they came to a *tahua* — theater, or opera-house — a large, rectangular platform of stone pavement, surrounded by low terraces also laid with stone. The first is designed for the public exhibitions of the song and the dance, and the last for the accommodation of the spectators who assemble to witness the performance. Entertainments of this kind are the favorite amusements of the Marquesans, and every district has its *tahua*, or public theater, some of them so extensive, it is said, as to be capable of accommodating ten thousand people.

“They next came to a *meae*, or temple, which they found in a sadly dilapidated condition. To account for its ruinous state, the natives told them that during the past year they had been at war with the Happaïs, that the enemy had proved victorious, and carried their spoliations even to the temples — bearing away all the images, and leaving the buildings in ruins. No attempt, it ap-

peared, had been made to replace the idols, or repair their former dwellings — an evidence of indifference to the symbols of their superstitions quite surprising. To the same cause was to be attributed the many appearances of neglect and decay in the district, and the manifest poverty of the chiefs and people. Haapé himself was in a state of vassalage, and the whole valley in surveillance to Piarro, the chieftain of the Happahs — with them nominally as a guest, but in reality as ruler and exactor of imposts.

“After partaking of refreshments, furnished them by the chiefs, they retraced their steps, amid admiring crowds, to the beach. The Chaplain’s robes and scarf were the subjects of the highest attraction. They seemed to take the fancy of the people even more than the glitter and lace of his companions; and when his hands were discovered in a pair of black kid gloves, stitched with white, he could scarce free himself from the throngs gathering round with wonder and delight. They appeared to think them a species of tattoo inseparable from the hand; and as they gazed at, and felt his fingers through them, ‘*motaki! motaki!*’ — *good! good!*’ in tones of the highest satisfaction, burst from a hundred lips.

“The writer, after intimating that they at length parted with their simple friends on the beach and proceeded to the ship, next refers to the taboo, — but perhaps we have had enough on that subject already?” and the Professor regarded his auditors with a questioning look.

“Yes, indeed,” exclaimed Eugene quickly; “please go on with something a little more interesting.”

“Wait a moment,” interposed his brother; “I would like very much to know what the author has to say as to the effect of the taboo on the women and common people of the island.”

"Well, then," said the Professor, "he observes that, as in other groups where this system prevails, the restrictions of the taboo particularly affect the women and all of the common class, in points respecting their habitations and food. The houses of the men of the tabooed class, he says, can never be entered by a woman or other person of the common order; consequently, the wives of such, and other females with their attendants in their families, whether in a stated or temporary residence, have separate houses for cooking and eating. But though the house and food of the man is prohibited to them, theirs are all free to him, and he can enter them at pleasure."

"Decidedly, he has the best of it," commented Chester.

"Yes," continued the Professor, "and in regard to food, the bread-fruit, cocoanut, yam, and various mixed dishes formed of these articles, with most kinds of fish, are eaten indiscriminately by both classes, except such as become incidentally tabooed by being placed in a basket, calabash, or other utensil of a tabooed person; all such contact consecrating them to a restricted use. But bananas, hogs, turtles, cuttle-fish, bonetta, and albacore, are always tabooed to those not belonging to the privileged order."

"The tabooed class are very jealous of their dignity," observed Captain Bradford; "you can't even pass anything over the head of one of them."

"That is true," assented the Professor; "and on this point Stuart says: 'Anything passing over the head of a person, or even the hand of a tabooed man, must never itself be passed over, sat, or lain upon. To suffer this, would be a profanation of it, in their view, which would bring the displeasure of the gods upon the individual through whom it became restricted, by its being passed over his head. Consequently, when this infringement

takes place, whether by accident or design, the individual causing the profanation, by applying the article to any common use, becomes an object of revenge to the other; and his life is sought as the only atonement for his carelessness or presumption. Till his death is secured, the person through whom the article became tabooed is supposed liable to the power of some fatal disorder or the infliction of other dreadful calamities.

“‘If a woman steps over, or lies on anything which has been consecrated by passing over a tabooed man, the article thus profaned can never be used as before, and the woman must be put to death. In general, however, the chief inconvenience that arises from this incidental consecration of an article, is the restriction of its particular use. For instance, if a tabooed man places his hand beneath a sleeping-mat, it can never be used as such again; but it may be worn as a mantle or fitted to a canoe for a sail, though a mantle or sail — having been over the heads of others — cannot be used as a sleeping-mat.”

“Well, for my part,” began Eugene, with great energy, “I—”

“There’s the summons to lunch, gentlemen!” exclaimed the Captain, abruptly.

“And a very good point to leave off at,” said the Professor, starting to his feet.

CHAPTER XV.

MARQUESANS, THEIR HABITS AND AMUSEMENTS.

WHEN our little party had assembled on the quarter-deck the next morning, Eugene suddenly said :

“I’ve been thinking about the *tahuas* or theatres that were mentioned yesterday ; I’d like to know a little more about them.”

“I think *pahooa* is nearer the correct pronunciation,” observed the Captain.

“Ah, you know something about them, then ?” rejoined Eugene.

“Yes,” was the reply ; “and as the Professor said, you will find one of these amphitheaters in every village. They are generally situated in a sheltered and level spot, surrounded on all sides with rising banks. The middle of the amphitheater is carefully smoothed and covered with mats, and the rising banks serve as seats for the spectators. When a dance is to be performed, the mats are laid afresh and a large amount of food is prepared. The spectators take the food with them, and, seated on the banks, remain there throughout the greater part of the day.”

“Tell us something about the dances.”

“To tell the truth, they are not very graceful, and consist principally of jumping, without moving from the same spot. Various ornaments are used by the dancers, the most curious of which are the finger-rings, which are made of plaited fiber, adorned with long tail-feathers of the tropic bird. When women dance they are not

allowed to wear clothing of any description, and this for a curious reason."

"What can the reason be, I should like to know?" exclaimed Eugene.

"Why," explained the Captain, "none dance except those whose husbands or brothers have been killed in war or taken prisoners, and the absence of clothing is accepted as an expression of sorrow on their part, and of vengeance on the part of the spectators."

"Does Stewart have anything to say on this subject, Professor?" asked Chester, turning to the palæontologist.

"Yes," was the reply, "he mentions a grand entertainment, to which he and the other officers of the *Vincennes* received a special invitation."

"We would like to hear something about it."

"Well," said the Professor, as he opened the little volume he held in his hand and glanced through its pages, "after describing their long and tedious walk, and referring to the throng of gaily-dressed natives they met or overtook by the way, and the shouts of welcome that greeted them on their arrival at the theater, he says: 'The whole scene, as we came in among them and threw a hasty glance around, transported us at once to the times of Cook and the first navigators of these seas, when the discovery of the existence and habits of a people so novel, struck them with a surprise and charm amounting almost to fascination.'

"The grove is one which the Muses themselves might covet. Noble and majestic trees cluster widely round the tahua or dancing ground, on the margin of the mountain torrent. Their lofty tops so thickly interlace each other above, as completely to embower the whole glen; and the rays of the torrid sun, beneath which we had been walking, instead of striking us with a scorching glare, fell in such rich and grateful mellowness on the

groups below, as to seem but the moonlight of a fairy land; an illusion which the sound of water, as if spouting from a hundred cool fountains, the half-clad figures, flowing drapery, and sportive manners of the throng, had little tendency to break.

“The assembly consisted of several hundred persons of both sexes, in all the display of dress which their condition allows. The warriors in battle array, and the dancers in their fanciful costumes, were the most conspicuous objects; while the appearance of all, especially that of the females, evidenced great attention in the preparations of the toilet. In justice to the Happahs, I must say, that in many instances they exhibited proofs of gracefulness and taste, in the arrangement of their head-dresses and mantles, that would have gained them credit in more polished circles of fashion than are known in their sea-girt isles.

“White appears to be the favorite hue, especially for decorations of the head. Their turbans are of various shapes; the most common consists of a piece of native cloth, of the size of an ordinary pocket-handkerchief, bound closely to the head, having the ends twisted into a large knot immediately in front or on one side over the temple. The ends of others are longer, and formed into large puffs or cockades on the top or sides. In some there is an opening on the crown for the hair, which, tied closely to the head, then hangs down in ringlets on the neck and shoulders. Some wear fillets or bandeaus only, either with or without bows or hanging ends, and many leave their black tresses entirely unconfined, and flowing carelessly over their mantles.

“The pau, or native petticoat, is much less worn here than at the Sandwich Islands; and often the only dress of the females is the large kehei or mantle in which the Hawaiians wrap themselves in the coolness of the even-

ing or morning. Here, this is unfastened, except as gathered round the figure in thick folds by the hands, over both shoulders or under one arm, leaving the other uncovered. When it became deranged, the grasp is let go, and the whole readjusted, though often at a sacrifice of every appearance of delicacy.

“‘Till now, I had begun to doubt, from all I had seen at the sea-side, whether the natives of this group are so decidedly a finer race and handsomer looking people than the Society and Sandwich Islanders, as they are generally accredited to be. But judging from those seen on this occasion, I am fully persuaded they are; particularly in the female sex. Many of these present were exceedingly beautiful; and two or three, so strikingly like some of the most distinguished beauties in our own country I ever met, that the first glance brought them to my recollection. Their eyes have a rich brilliancy, softened by long, glossy eye-lashes that can scarce be surpassed; which, with a regularity and whiteness of teeth unrivaled, add greatly to the impression of features of a more European mould than most uncivilized people I have seen. In complexion, many of them are very fair; scarce, if any, darker than a clear brunette, admitting even, in some cases, of a distinct mantling of color in the cheek and lips; while in figure, they are small, and delicately formed, with arms and hands that would bear comparison with any in the drawing-rooms of the most polished noblesse.

“‘The arrival of our party could scarce fail interrupting the songs and dance a few moments; and for a time there was no little confusion and uproar. But after being received and welcomed by the chiefs, and placed in seats of honor and of good observation beside them, they were quickly renewed.

“‘The performers in the part we witnessed, were a

young chief eighteen or twenty years old at one end of the arena, and two boys of eight or ten at the corners of the other. The music, if such it can be called, was that of four drums on each side of the inner pavement, and the voices and loud clapping of hands of about one hundred and fifty singers, seated on the upper platform with the chiefs and warriors. The drums were small, not more than two feet and a half in height, and ten or twelve inches in diameter, formed from the trunk of a kou tree (*cordia*), hollowed to the thickness of an inch nearly two-thirds of the length from the top. They were excavated at the bottom also, leaving a partition between the two with a small hole in the center. The heads were of shark skin, laced on with flat sennit of the cocoanut fiber, in a manner similar to that in which they are tightened in common drums with us. They stand upright on the ground before the performer, and are beaten with the hand only, in rapid strokes of the fingers joined together, while the ball rests on the edge. Around the bottom long oval holes are cut vertically, to cause an increase of sound.

“The dance commenced by a slow beating on the drums, followed by graceful movements of the hands, arms, and feet of the dancers in a similar time, but increasing quickly with the rapidity of the beat, to a display of great activity. The singers joined in, upon the first motions of the dancers; these last also taking a part, sometimes in solos, and sometimes in duet, followed by responses from the orchestra, or grand choruses by the whole.

“The principal dancer was uncommonly handsome, both in face and figure; of great roundness of limb, and though not large, admirably proportioned. The use of the *papaw*, and seclusion from the sun, had rendered him almost as fair as any one of our number, making his

whole style more that of an Adonis than of an Apollo. His dress was little calculated for ornament. It consisted of a large quantity of white human hair, worn high and much frizzled around his head; of heavy bunches of the same material, but black, about the wrist and ankles; and of a profuse quantity of white cloth around the loins as a maro. That of the boys was more striking and fanciful. One wore on his head the feathered helmet, and other decorations of the ear and neck of a warrior; the cap and plumage being of a height equal to all the rest of his figure. Above his girdle was a full sash of white cloth, tied in a large bow with long ends in front; and from it four white cords of platted tapa, two behind and two before, descended to the knee, each terminating in monstrous tassels of black hair, fastened to flat, circular pieces of wood, whitened with pipe clay. His waist, wrists, and ankles were also hung with the same, and in either hand he held a small tuft of white.

“The head-dress of the other was a bandeau of white cloth, in a thick roll over the forehead; and above this, a wreath of black feathers, surmounted by a high ornament of white tapa gathered into folds at the frontlet, and spreading above into a large cockade in the shape of a peacock’s tail; the whole having an airy and tasteful appearance. His necklace was composed of alternate bunches of a brightly shining aromatic vine, and the flower of the cape jessamine; while his maro, of the purest white, arranged in neat folds, was intertwined with garlands of the same.

“The dance ceased at the end of twenty or thirty minutes; and a company of young females, forty or fifty in number, seated on an adjoining and elevated platform, began singing, in the dull and monotonous repetitions of the same intonations of voice characterizing all their songs, accompanied by a loud and simultaneous clapping

of the hands, brought together in a manner to produce a very peculiar sound. An inquiry into the meaning of this, made us acquainted with the occasion of the present celebration.

“The learning of a new set of songs had been enjoined some months previous on these girls, and they were placed under certain restrictions of the taboo till it should be accomplished. This had now been done, and the dance was held in commemoration of it.

“These exhibitions are known by the general name of *koika*. They are celebrated on a great variety of occasions, but the most noted are those which take place at the ingathering of the bread-fruit harvests, and at a ratification of peace, when two or more tribes have been at war. Such is the passion of the people for the amusement, that to enjoy it they not only make the longest and most fatiguing journeys from all parts of an island, carrying their food and suffering the greatest inconvenience, but not unfrequently hazard their lives by voyages in their wretched boats to other islands; besides being exposed, while there, to murder, in the conflicts which almost invariably arise among parties from different tribes, at their close, and in which all are obliged, on one side or the other, to take part.

“The singers by profession, called *kaioi*, are the poets and composers, as well as performers of the songs sung on these occasions. The subjects are various, often furnished by some passing event, such as the arrival of a ship, or any less novel incident; and not unfrequently, like ballads in our own country, the songs become extensively fashionable and popular, and are sung in private by all classes. In almost every instance, language and allusions of the most objectionable character, as is the case every day in their ordinary conversation, are introduced; and many of them are abominable, almost beyond belief.

““ I was too much occupied with my pencil to pay very particular attention to the words now repeated; and from previous knowledge on this subject, was well satisfied to remain ignorant of them. Before they had concluded, the throng around became so annoying in their rudeness, and every appearance indicated such a disposition to utter licentiousness, that the charm at first felt from the novelty and wild beauty of the scene, was speedily broken; and accompanied by one or two others, and soon followed by all the party, I began gladly to retrace my way to the ship.

““ A principal object on my part, in making the excursion, was to see pure heathenism — heathenism as it is before one ray of Christian light has beamed upon its darkness — that I might, from the observation of my own eyes, testify to its true character; and that object has been most fully answered. Before the grossness of one-half that was forced upon me had passed in view, I was compelled in the thoughts of my very soul to exclaim, ‘Stop — it is enough!’ but I had gone beyond the point of escape, and the whole truth in its abominable details was riveted upon me.

““ There was less of licentiousness in the dance than I had expected; but in a hundred things else there were such open outrages on all decency, that I hurried away in a horror of disgust, with a heart too much humbled for the race to which I belong, and too much depressed at the depravity and guilt of man, to think or feel upon any other subject. At first, I could scarcely find spirits to interchange a word with my companions, but hastened on before, or fell far behind, that the oppression within me might escape their notice.’”

The Professor closed the book, and after a moment’s silence, Chester said:

“I don’t wonder the good chaplain felt terribly op-

pressed; and for my part, I am quite ready to turn to a more attractive subject. You said the other day, Professor, that this people had no history; did you mean also to say that they had no traditions?"

"I hardly meant to go so far as that," was the reply; but all the traditions they possess are embodied in their sacred songs. These give a fabulous account of the origin of their islands, the names of others in whose existence they believe, the genealogies of the chiefs from their first origin, the feats of their heroes, with the histories of their wars, and all other events of which they profess any knowledge."

"What account do they give of their origin?" asked Chester.

"They say that the land composing their islands was once located in *Hawaiki*, or the regions below — the place of departed spirits, and that they rose from thence through the efforts of a god beneath them. At that period, they say, there was no sea; but that it and all animal and vegetable productions were afterwards born of a woman; and that originally men and fish were locked up in caverns in the depths of the earth, which burst with a great explosion, leaving the men upon the land, and casting the fish into the sea."

"That's a queer idea," commented Eugene.

"Do they have any positive knowledge of the distant islands about them?" asked Chester.

"In their songs they enumerate the names of forty-four besides their own. In the number are evidently some of the Georgian and Tahitian groups; and the description of another is that of a Lagoon island, to which none of this cluster have the least resemblance."

"There are other traditions?"

"Yes; and one of them, respecting these foreign islands, gives an account of the introduction of the cocoanut here."

"We would like to hear that," said Eugene.

"It is merely," rejoined the Professor, "that a god, on a visit to them from an island, which they call Oatamaaua, finding them destitute of this important tree, fetched it to them in a stone canoe; the whole transaction being described in a minute and equally incredible manner. They have similar accounts of the visits of the gods of other islands; and in the traditions of them, we find the reason of their calling the first visitors from America and Europe *atuas* (gods), the name now given to all foreigners."

"I suppose, then," said Eugene, "Commodore Porter was looked upon by them as a very great god indeed."

"Yes," rejoined the Professor; "and he was held in very general and kind remembrance by the Tayehs. The elder chiefs and people often inquired of the officers of the *Vincennes* where and how he was, and whether he would ever return to see them, and the younger as frequently asked, referring to the Captain, whether this chief was 'Opotee.'"

"Did they take any care of the village that had been built for him?"

"Stewart and another officer took a stroll over the ground occupied by the village, one afternoon. It was just abreast of the ship, you remember, on the eastern shore. He says a small plain, skirted and studded with thickets and coppices of hibiscus, with a fine sand beach, lay in front of the spot, and that it was guarded on the side toward the ocean by the rocky promontory terminating in the East Sentinel, and in the rear by steep and wooded acclivities. The whole was separated from the inhabited parts of the valley by a spur of the mountain and a small round hill, jutting into the bay with a rocky base, on which was placed the breastwork and battery, which commanded every approach to the village. Not a

trace of the Commodore's occupation, however, was to be discovered."

"Not a trace anywhere!" exclaimed Eugene, in astonishment.

"No," replied the Professor. "A kind of wild cucumber, which they found spread widely over the hills in the vicinity, they at first supposed must have been introduced by him, but afterwards learned that it was a plant indigenous to the country, and one capable of being converted into a fine pickle."

"Did not Stewart visit the valley of the Typees during his stay?" asked Chester, presently.

"Yes," responded the Professor; "and notes many things of interest that came under his observation there."

"Did he make the trip by land, crossing the mountains, and all that?" asked Eugene.

"No; Captain Finch, of the *Vincennes*, in order that the Typees might have no reason for supposing him any more the friend of the other tribes than he was theirs, removed the ship to their waters, taking with him the young prince Moana and most of the principal chiefs of the Tayehs and Happahs."

"Ah! I see; and that pleased the Typees, no doubt."

"At first the appearance of the ship in their harbor was regarded with suspicion by them; few of the natives were anywhere to be seen, and none except at a distance. 'We were not surprised at this,' says Stewart; 'nor to learn, as we since have, that it was believed we had come only for war. By established and universal usage at this group,'—as you will remember Porter tells us,—'any member of a tribe nearly related by blood or marriage to persons in another, may, in times of war as well as peace, pass with impunity from the territories of one to those of another, and be regarded as a friend. Acquainted with this fact, we had brought with us a

native Typee who had married a woman at Tieuhoy, and was residing there; and, hoisting a white flag at the foremast head, we landed him on the rocks abreast the ship, as a messenger of peace. Morrison, the interpreter, was also dispatched in a boat to the beach, to give assurance to the chief personages of our pacific intentions, and to invite them to an interview with the captain. These manifestations of good will soon brought a canoe or two alongside, with cocoanuts for barter; and in the course of an hour, many men and boys swam off, and came on deck.

“‘The rain poured in torrents for two or three hours in the afternoon,’ says Stewart, ‘but ceased in time for “the chief of the gods” — the style of the Tauas, according to Morrison — accompanied by his compeer in civil life, to come on board before night. They were less imposing in their personal appearance than any of the higher classes we had seen, not differing, either in figure or address, from the most common of their fellows. There was no attempt at a display of costume or ornament in either, except a full wreath of red and white feathers much soiled, in alternate bunches over the forehead and temples of the Tauga. They quite amused us, in expressing the fears they had entertained on seeing us approach, fully believing, as they said, that “like Opotee we were coming in war only.” This persuasion was the greater, from a *ruse de guerre* practiced on them by the Happaes. These last, after learning from the captain that he should visit the bay of Oomi, though only for purposes of peace, sent a messenger to the Typees to excite a panic through our means, if they could secure nothing more effectual, by spreading the intelligence that Opotee’s ship was coming up to attack them by water, while they and the Tayehs were to fall upon them by land. In consequence of this rumor, they had been

busily engaged in throwing up a breastwork of stone across the front of the valley, which they pointed out, as some little defense, in case of our invasion. After making known these impressions and fears to the captain, and expressing their joy at finding them groundless, they said: "Now all is right, you come in peace; have brought Moana our king with you; and our valley and all it contains is yours. Yourself and ship's company may land at any time in perfect safety, and take whatever you please."

"Captain Finch then fully explained to them his views, in the manner he had already to the other chiefs; and urged on them the importance of following his advice, instead of continuing to shed the blood of their fellows, and of devastating each others' valleys. At every sentence, they, with great animation and seeming pleasure, exclaimed—"motaki! motaki!" It is good—it is right; adding, "but you are the only chief that ever talked to us in this manner and gave us such advice. This is the first ship in which we were ever told that it is wrong to fight; with Opotee it was all fight!" He told them that whatever others might have thought it necessary and expedient to do, war was one of the greatest of evils; and pointing to the heavy guns of our battery, to the muskets and cutlasses, battle-axes and boarding-pikes of our well-guarded ship, assured them that all this array was not designed to promote bloodshed and war, but to secure peace, both at home and abroad.

"They manifested great intelligence and deep interest in the subject; and, as argument after argument was pressed upon them, with an earnestness that elicited the closest attention, and a disinterestedness that proved itself to them to be sincere, my own feelings became deeply enlisted. The scene exhibited was one of no

ordinary character; a captain of a vessel of war, in the cabin of his battle-ship, surrounded by chieftains and warriors stained with each other's blood, unfolding the miseries attendant on the prosecution of violence and war; and importuning them to friendship and lasting peace, while they hung on his lips, seemingly with the delight of children listening to a new-told tale.

“‘So highly were the Typees pleased, and so completely was their confidence won, that they voluntarily proposed to sleep on board the *Vincennes*, that they might be in readiness to escort us on shore in the morning; and show us every attention in their power.’ Places were prepared for them, but owing to the strong winds which swept down upon the ship from the eastern hills, no one passed a very agreeable night.

“At ten o’clock they went on shore; the high-priest, the civil chieftain, the Prince Moana, and the chaplain accompanying the captain in his gig, and many of the other officers, with a guard of marines, following in the first and second cutters, all in official dress; ‘and,’ says Stewart, ‘observing as much ceremony as we should in attending a court in Europe. This,’ he remarks, ‘might be thought by many unnecessary, and out of place, in the visit of an hour to one of the most uncivilized tribes of the South Seas; but, when viewed in connection with its circumstances and design, it evidently was not only proper, but decidedly advisable.

“‘We early had direct proof of the wisdom of this determination,’ he adds, ‘and of the capacity of these savage chieftains rightly to appreciate the dress and etiquette of a ceremonious visit, in comparison with a common-place and informal call, in the disappointment and chagrin openly expressed by the Taua of Taioa, because the parties visiting his valley and people went in the undress suitable for a picnic, and not in the display in which he had first met us at Tieuhoy.’”

“Oh, bother!” exclaimed Eugene, “let them put on all the fuss and feathers they like; but do get them safe on shore.”

“Very good,” smiled the Professor. “‘The beach,’ he says, ‘was not much thronged when we landed; great numbers of the men being on board the *Vincennes* with cocoanuts and different articles for barter, while crowds of females covered the rocks abreast of her; and could not make their way to the place of landing as rapidly as we did. The Taua conducted us to his house, a few hundred yards in the rear of the stone-wall across the front of the valley. It is a large building of the usual construction, darkened by the thickness of the groves overhanging it, and the luxuriance of the various growth within its inclosures. Here, upon their own territory, and within one of their own dwellings, surrounded by their wives and children and in presence of the officers of our party, Captain Finch chose again to enforce on them the various advice previously given, before distributing the cloth, calicoes, iron implements, and so forth, brought on shore for the purpose. They reiterated their cordial approbation of his sentiments; said they were good, and such as no other person had ever suggested to them; that they would gladly make peace with the other tribes, and be happy to dwell hereafter in harmony and friendship.

“‘They admitted the practice of stealing from other tribes victims to offer in sacrifice; and excused themselves by saying that the Happaes and Tayehs were guilty of the same outrage against them. In answer to the direct question, whether it were true that they did eat the bodies of their enemies, and of prisoners taken in battle, they without a moment’s hesitation declared positively and repeatedly that they did. On expressing our horror at such an abomination, they said they would do

so no more ; and the Taua added, that he would interdict the sacrifice of human victims at his death, so that there need be no occasion then for the inhuman crime of man-stealing.

““ Ascertaining that there was a meae or temple in the immediate vicinity, after finishing the conversation we walked to it. The principal building was empty, but strewed with the fragments of different vegetable offerings ; while in a smaller house adjoining, there were three rudely carved idols similar to all we had before seen, except that one was a *Janus Bifrons*, the first double-faced god we have met.

““ The thick and heavy groves of bread-fruit, overtopped by the more lofty cocoanut, and the rankness of all the undergrowth, entirely intercepted the air from the sea-side ; and finding the walking wet and unpleasant, and the heat very oppressive, we soon prepared to rejoin our boats.

““ On emerging from the thickets, we found the change from the damp and heated atmosphere within, to the freshness of a delightful sea-breeze on the beach, so grateful that we stopped half an hour under the shade of a clump of the hibiscus, the better to enjoy it ; and soon had a subject for contemplation in the crowds of both sexes and of every age, which gathered round in all their rudeness, to gaze and admire, and express their good will in noisy exclamations and merriment. The variety in admirably modeled figures, in costume and savage ornaments, thus presented, would have made a desirable study for a master. I busied myself in seizing the outlines of some of the most striking objects, till our boats were called in from beyond the surf.

““ Our departure afforded another interesting sketch. As we lay upon our oars, after gaining the smooth water, waiting the safe embarkation of the whole suite, we had

a full and beautiful view of the semi-circular beach sweeping round the bottom of the bay, with its richly topped groves and overhanging mountains. Many hundreds of the islanders covered the shore; some entirely naked, many nearly so, while others appeared in war-caps of feathers playing gaily in the breeze, and in tufted turbans and other fanciful head-dresses, below which their mantles of various hues floated gracefully about their limbs; all mingled in one living mass, from children still in their mother's arms, to withered dames of three-score years and ten, and veteran warriors with snowy locks and fleecy beard, seeming to need the spears they held for staves to support the decrepitude of their tottering frames, rather than as weapons of defense against an enemy. Among them might here and there be discerned the glittering buttons, epaulets, and laced hat of an officer thickly thronged; or the less expensive but gayer uniform of a marine, affording a strong contrast to the wild islander, with his tattooed skin, savage ornaments, unlanced spear, and war club tufted with the hair of enemies slain by him in battle.

“It was one of the most characteristic and novel scenes we had witnessed at the island; and fixed our gaze till we had nearly reached the ship.

“In the afternoon,’ he says, ‘I went on shore again, intending to spend an hour in sketching; but a friendly native, whom I had seen in the train of a chief in the morning, urged me to go with him up the valley, to see, as he expressed it, “the country of the young king Moana;” and notwithstanding the terrific character given us of the Typees, I committed myself to his guidance, and walked a mile and a half or two miles inland. The valley is watered in its whole length by a pure and lively stream; and everywhere exhibits the same richness of soil and heavy growth seen on the beach. Judging from

the number of dwellings, it must contain a large population; though from the ship it appears very contracted in its boundaries. I saw two houses only that seemed of a religious character, one a burial-place with the shrines and bier of the dead, adjoining a building containing, as usual, three idols; and the other a taboo-house of some person of distinction, on an elevated platform, at the corners of which were two images of stone, green with the moss which time had spread over them.

“The Tahua, or dancing-ground, about a mile from the shore, is as regular and well built as that in the upper valley of the Happahs; and one of the dwelling-houses near is larger, more neatly built and ornamented, than any seen, either at Tieuhoy or Taioa. I stopped to take a drawing of it, much to the amazement of the people around, and to their seeming admiration, when, on showing it to them, they recognized the sketch, and probably understood, in some degree, the design in taking it.

“After having crossed the mountain torrent several times, on the back of my kind and attentive guide, and gone the distance mentioned, a native overtook us, walking rapidly and talking loudly and angrily with my companion, without noticing anything said by me. The latter immediately manifested some uneasiness, and said, “Let us return.” On asking why, the only answer I could get was: “Let us go to the sea-side,”—and taking me by the hand he hurried on. Though many we met exchanged a friendly “aloha” with me on passing, with as much kindness as usual, I perceived from the sour and angry looks of others, that all was not right; and was confirmed in the belief, as a large, fierce-looking fellow, seated between the stone images at the taboo-house mentioned, scowled on me like a demon, without taking the least notice of my salutation. All the explanation I could get from the guide was, “*Kakino!*” “*It is bad!*” as

he hastened me forward, in evident apprehension till we came in sight of the ship, and to the beach, where the boat had already arrived, and those on shore were beginning to assemble.’”

“What was the trouble, I wonder?” asked Eugene, with interest.

“Ah! that is more than I am able to tell you,” answered the Professor: “and more than the chaplain could tell you, either; for he says, in conclusion: ‘I have not yet learned the cause of anxiety expressed by my conductor, or of the manifest ill will exhibited by many met on our return.’”

“That’s all he has to say, then?” exclaimed Eugene, in some surprise.

“Oh, no; he mentions the bay of Oomi, and has much to say of the beautiful valley of Hakapaa. He also gives an interesting account of a visit to Tana-tini, the Prophet of the Happaes, in whose favor all the officers were very much prepossessed.”

“Let us hear —”

“Sail ho!” rang out the clear voice of the lookout forward.

“Where away?” called the Captain, as he hastily left the quarter-deck.

“Almost dead ahead, sir.”

“Can you make her out?”

“Not yet, sir.”

The Captain took the glass offered him by Mr. Cook, and ran up the ratlines of the foremast.

Presently the lookout exclaimed:

“I make her out now, sir; a schooner, and American built.”

“You’re right, Rawdon,” said the Captain, in a tone of satisfaction; “that’s the conclusion I had come to,” and descending to the deck, he hastened to rejoin his passengers.

CHAPTER XVI.

CORALS—ATOLLS.

“IT’S a schooner ahead of us?” said Eugene, eagerly, as the Captain approached.

“Yes,” was the answer, “and American built, as I am sure the *Rover* was.”

“And you think it may be her?”

“I am confident it is.”

“Then,” cried Eugene, now all excitement, “let us overhaul her in short order.”

“We shall not be long in doing that,” smiled the Captain. “There’s nothing in these waters that can get away from the *Albatross*; certainly nothing that depends on the wind alone for motive power.”

But none the less, the chase now became an exciting one; and all eyes were fixed upon the schooner, as they drew nearer and nearer.

At length the *Albatross* showed her colors, and signaled that she wanted to speak the other vessel.

Almost immediately the schooner raised the stars and stripes, and hove to. In a short time the two vessels were within speaking distance.

“What schooner is that?” called Captain Bradford, through his trumpet.

“The *Columbia* of Portland; Simpson, master,” came back the answer.

“Where from and where bound?” was the next question.

“From San Francisco to the Samoas,” was the reply.

"Have you seen anything of the schooner *Rover*; Thompson, master?" asked the Captain.

"No," returned Simpson; "but gammed with the *Maria Watson*, of New Bedford, yesterday, and she had just parted company with her."

"What did the *Watson* learn?"

"That the *Rover* was from the Galápagos last, and bound to the Marquesas, and from thence to the Low Archipelago."

"The Low Archipelago!" exclaimed the Captain and his passengers, in a breath.

"Why, yes," answered the master of the *Columbia*, in some surprise; for the yacht and schooner were now so near each other that all that was said on board one could readily be heard on board the other. Then thinking it his turn to question, he asked.

"What steamer is that?"

"The *Albatross*, a pleasure yacht; Bradford, master," was the reply.

"Ah! I've heard of you," said the other, quickly, "you're hunting for a man lost somewhere in this broad ocean."

"Exactly. Can you help us to find him?"

"Perhaps. Where are you bound now?"

"To the Marquesas."

"Well, after that try the Low Islands, and then Tahiti."

"I think that's very good advice."

"But," said Simpson, suddenly, "I'm thinking you'll get in to the Marquesas ahead of your game."

"Ah!" rejoined Captain Bradford, "we had thought it more than likely."

"Well, then," pursued the master of the *Columbia*, "wait there awhile; and I reckon, if you keep up the waiting and searching long enough, you'll find your man at last."

"It's to be hoped so," responded the Captain, and as nothing more was to be learned from the schooner, the two vessels parted company.

The information obtained, while it was not all they could have wished, was quite enough to turn the current of thought wholly toward Lyman Pierpont and the chances of falling in with him during the next day or so. A sharp lookout was therefore kept up, and a liberal reward promised to the man who should be the first to report the *Rover*; but day after day went by, and not a single vessel was seen; nothing of importance occurred, until at last the brothers were almost startled to learn that Uahuga was in plain sight from the quarter-deck.

With what interest they viewed this beautiful isle, the reader can easily imagine. They longed to stop there for a little while, but the Captain was anxious to reach the bay of Tieuhoy; and so they steamed steadily on, and at four o'clock in the afternoon dropped anchor near the very spot where the *Essex*, and later the *Vincennes*, had laid.

They were not obliged to go on shore that night in order to obtain information; for the *Albatross* was speedily overrun with natives of both sexes, and even a few Frenchmen, including the representative of the French government, were among the visitors.

Of course nothing had been seen or heard of the *Rover*; the steamer had outsailed her, and it was decided that the best plan was to remain quietly at anchor until the schooner should come in.

The brothers were well satisfied with this decision, and promised themselves a week, at least, of unalloyed pleasure.

The run on shore commenced with the next morning. The Professor, the Captain, and Seth Cook, helped to make up the party. Mr. Morgan remained with the

yacht, to be on hand in case the *Rover* should unexpectedly come into the bay.

Hardly had the little party landed when they were accosted by an American gentleman named Clark, who, for a year or more, had made the island his home. He greeted them cordially, invited them to his house, and afterwards acted as their guide and interpreter during their extended excursion through the island.

They everywhere found the country and people very much as Stewart had described them. Eugene, in particular, was disappointed in not being able to discover more signs of advancement among the natives; but this lack of progress, Mr. Clark emphatically declared to be due, in a great measure, to the pernicious influence of the French. He said that, whereas the influence of the Americans, and particularly the American missionaries, and those sent by them from the Hawaiian Islands, had been for good, that wherever the islanders had come in contact with the French, even with their priests, the influence had all been the other way. He said it was a sin and a shame that France, with her loose ideas of morality and right, should have been permitted to gain such a foothold as she possessed in the fair islands of the Pacific; and he blamed the United States and England very much for having suffered it, by apathy on the part of the former, and from selfish motives in the case of the latter.

The end of the week found the little party among the Typees and their ancient allies of the valley of Hannahow. They had enjoyed their visit here very much, and were just preparing to return to Tieuhoy by another and more circuitous route, when a native messenger was announced.

He had come with all speed, and brought a letter from Jasper Morgan. It was very brief, and ran as follows:

“The *Rover* arrived an hour ago; she is now lying at

anchor in the bay. Have seen 'George Thompson;' he is not communicative. Return at once; no telling how long the schooner will remain here.

"Yours, in haste,

MORGAN."

The Captain and his party, without loss of time, set out on the return journey. They did not take the route they had previously decided upon, but followed the same path Porter and his men had trod more than seventy years before. But although they exerted themselves to the utmost, it was far into the night when they at last reached the Tieuhoy valley, and saw Mr. Morgan and a boat's crew on the beach waiting for them.

"Make haste! make haste!" cried the first mate, impatiently; "the *Rover* left her anchorage more than an hour ago."

"Left more than an hour ago!" echoed the brothers, in dismay.

"Yes; and it was only with the greatest difficulty that I was able to learn that she has gone to Uapoa."

"You are sure of her destination?" asked Captain Bradford, eagerly, as he sprang into the boat.

"Yes," answered the mate, as he made room for the other members of the party; "I paid liberally for the information."

"I don't understand," said the Professor, mildly.

"Why," explained the mate, "Thompson disposed of a part of his cargo to the French official here, and I suspected he would know where the *Rover* had gone with the rest. I went to him. Money will do anything with these Frenchmen. He knew what I wanted to learn, and I bought the secret."

By this time they were all seated in the boat; and having bid Mr. Clark a warm but hurried good-bye, the sailors pulled away for the yacht.

Steam was already up, and once on board, the anchor

was raised, and the beautiful vessel glided swiftly out of the bay.

Uapoa was but twenty miles to the south, and they soon came up with it; but now arose a difficulty: It was too dark to distinguish the coast line, much less a small vessel lying in any of the sheltered coves. Then, too, there were some dangerous reefs to be avoided. There was nothing for it but to wait for daylight. They might just as well have remained in Tieuhoy Bay.

It was an anxious night. The Professor and his companions blamed themselves very much for having remained away from the yacht so long and taking the risks they did. But there was no help for it now, and they could only hope to see the schooner in the morning.

Morning came, with Uapoa plainly in sight, but no signs of the *Rover*. Slowly they steamed round the island. Still no *Rover*. They visited the other islands in the cluster, with no better success; and then returned to Nukahiva. The schooner had not been there. They sailed to the southern cluster; and having landed on Hiwaoa and learned that no vessel had been seen there for some time, went to the neighboring islands, but could hear nothing of the missing schooner.

"I have it!" said Eugene, at last. "The Frenchman took Mr. Morgan's money, and then lied to him. The *Rover* is now in the Low Archipelago,—among the 'Cloud of islands'; and the question is, how shall we find him?"

"I believe you're right," exclaimed Mr. Morgan, quickly; "the Frenchman lied."

"Yes," said the Captain, in a thoughtful way; "the Frenchman has purposely misled us. For some reason Mr. Lyman Pierpont does not want an interview with us."

"That's evident," exclaimed Eugene; "and where could he more effectually lose himself than in Paumotou?"

"Nowhere," returned the Captain; "but we must do our best to find him among the coral islands, and if we fail, we must go to Tahiti and wait for him there."

This course being decided upon, the yacht was headed for the Low Archipelago; and gradually their disappointment was forgotten in the interest awakened by the thought that they were now rapidly approaching myriads of the ever-wonderful coral isles.

After a day or two they met with bad weather, and were forced to confine themselves for a good part of the time to the cabin. One morning the Professor entered the saloon and found Captain Bradford and the brothers bending over the table, apparently absorbed in some branch-like objects they were examining.

"What have you there that seems to interest you so much?" he asked, as he advanced toward them.

"Specimens of coral, the Captain was showing us," answered Chester; "and fine ones, too, some of them."

The Professor took a branch in his hand.

"Ah! this is indeed a beautiful specimen," he said; "a worthy daughter of the sea."

"Daughter of the sea!" repeated Eugene. "That's what the name implies, isn't it?"

"So it is held by some Greek scholars," was the answer; "and certainly it is an appropriate designation."

"That's true; and see what a variety the Captain has."

"Yes; the number of species is very great, and the variety of forms and hues is almost endless. In their native element many of them rival in beauty the finest flowers."

"And yet," said the Captain, as he examined a peculiar specimen, "I suppose it is nothing more than limestone, after all."

"Carbonate of lime constitutes the principal chemical ingredient of coral," rejoined the Professor.

"I must make such a collection as this," said Eugene, enthusiastically; "and I suppose right here in the Pacific is the place to do it."

"Yes; it is in the Pacific and Indian Oceans that the coral formation is most important," said the Professor; "but many kinds are found along the American coasts of the Atlantic, especially about the West Indies and Florida — which, with its reefs, is based upon coral, — and along parts of the coast of Brazil, where the reefs are very dangerous to navigation."

"Then there's the red coral of the Mediterranean," suggested Chester.

"Yes," assented the Professor, "the red coral of the Mediterranean and Red Seas is among the more remarkable kinds, and is of considerable value in the manufacture of ornaments. Then there is the still more valuable black coral; the *millepora*, and others."

"The *millepora* is produced by acalephs, and not by polyps, I believe?" said Chester.

"You are right," answered the Professor, with a pleased expression; "and I am glad you show so much interest in the subject."

"I don't see how one can help showing and feeling an interest in it," exclaimed Eugene. "To my mind the study of corals is full of interest."

"It is, indeed; and the more we study, the more interested we become."

"At one time these stony products of the sea were supposed to be plants, were they not?" asked the Captain, as he held up a tree-like branch.

"Yes, and naturally," said the Professor; "for their growth very much resembles the productions of the garden."

"And some writers even claim that the name is derived from a Greek word signifying a growing plant, do they not?" asked Eugene.

"It's very likely," was the reply; "indeed, it's not difficult to make out a genealogy for a word, and prove its descent from the Greek or Latin, as you please."

"These branches are perfect imitations of the forms of trees and shrubs," remarked Chester, indicating several rare specimens he had been examining.

"Yes," assented the Professor, "and the brilliant hues of the blossoms that once crowned them, made beautiful the gardens in the depths of the sea."

"If I remember rightly," said Chester, "the naturalists were rather reluctant to give up the plant theory?"

"They were, indeed."

"Who was the first to advance an opinion that the coral blossoms belonged to the animal and not the vegetable kingdom?" asked Captain Bradford.

"A Neapolitan naturalist, Ferrante Imperato, in 1599. But his theory attracted little attention until 1751, when Peyssonnel came to his support in an elaborate memoir, which he sent to the Royal Society."

"How were his views received by the naturalists?"

"Coolly enough; even Réaumur pronounced his paper too absurd to be discussed."

"But I should think some of them would have given it a little attention," said Eugene.

"Ah," rejoined the Professor, "but you see, as a certain writer puts it, 'the power of vegetation to produce stately forests and the minutest plants was familiar to the naturalists. To ascribe still greater power and elaborate skill to "poor, helpless, jelly-like animals" seemed like an insulting demand upon their credulity.'"

"I see; and how long did the controversy continue?"

"Through the greater part of the last century. As the writer whom I have just quoted, says: 'The coral animals were shown in form resembling blossoms, sending forth their petal-like tentacles in series around the

mouth, and drawing into this their prey. Still Linnæus would admit their possession only of a nature intermediate between plants and animals, and the word zoöphyte (Greek ζῶον, animal, and φέρειν, to grow like a plant) was applied by him to the organic bodies, with reference to their supposed relation to both kingdoms."

"The word is still in use with naturalists, is it not?" asked Chester.

"Certainly," was the reply; "it is used as a distinctive term for the division of animals in which the sponges are included." Then, after a pause: "The whole compound animal mass produced by budding is called by Professor J. D. Dana, of Yale, a zoöthome (Greek ζῶον, animal, and φωμός, a heap, you remember, Chester), and the single animal is called by him a polyp."

While he was speaking, the Captain had hurried away. He now returned with a large book open in his hand. This he handed to the Professor, at the same time indicating a passage with his finger.

"Ah, very good," exclaimed the palæontologist, as the words caught his eye, "this is quite *a propos*. Listen, young gentlemen," and he read:

"'Coral is the stony frame which belongs to these animals'—the polyps, you understand—'as a skeleton belongs to an individual of the higher orders of the animal kingdom. It is called by Professor Dana the corallum, and the coral of a single polyp in the mass is called a corallet. It is formed within the mass of them by animal secretion, each individual adding to the common structure, not by actual effort directed to this purpose, but by the involuntary secretion of calcareous matter. Hence it will be seen that corals are not, as formerly supposed, the products of the labor of the coral animals, but are the results of a growth analogous to that of the bones in other animals. A single polyp of

the genus *astræa*, for instance, has a disk above surrounded with tentacles, like the actinia or sea anemone, to which it is closely allied; the mouth at the center of the disk opens into a stomach, and is the passage for the food and for the exit of refuse matters. Below and around the stomach space is divided radiately by a series of pairs of fleshy plates, the larger of which extend from the stomach to the sides of the polyp. The coral is secreted between the plates of these several pairs, as well as through the tissues; and hence comes the radiate character of the interior of the cells over the surface of a coral, that is, the star-like interior of each corallet. The material of the coral'—as the Captain has already said—'is carbonate of lime, or the same that constitutes limestone, and it is taken by the polyp from the sea-water or from its food.'"

The Professor here took up a piece of branching coral, and as he touched the several tips, said :

"In the living state, each of these little prominences was the interior of a separate flower-like polyp. Examine them carefully, my young friends."

They did so; and presently Eugene asked :

"How are the polyps reproduced, Professor?"

"Besides producing eggs and young like other animals," was the reply, "coral polyps generally multiply also through a process of budding which is closely like growth by buds in the vegetable kingdom. Listen," and again turning to the book, he read :

"A new polyp commences as a mere prominence on the side of an old one; soon the mouth and tentacles appear; then both continue growing, each adding to the calcareous accumulation within, and each sending forth new buds to be developed into new polyps. According to the manner in which the buds develop the mass receives its shape. In some species they branch out

into tree-like forms from the buds putting forth laterally. In many species of the madrepora family each branch terminates in what is called the parent polyp, this terminal polyp continuing to grow on and at the same time making new polyps for the sides of the branch by the process of budding. In a few species of other kinds each polyp forms a separate branch, at the termination of which it is seated; at these extremities the growth goes on, while the stem below is left behind, dead. Other species, in which the polyps form massive corals, put forth the young polyps in the spaces which are produced between the older ones as these extend upward, or they make new ones by a subdividing of an old polyp; thus keeping the hemispherical form symmetrical, till in a single *astræa* dome a diameter of even twelve feet has been attained, and the polyps, each occupying a square half inch only, have increased to more than 100,000 in number. Many polyps are of still smaller dimensions. A porites of the same size should contain, according to Prof. Dana, more than 5,500,000 individuals. The genus is often met with over the coral reefs, in rudely shaped hillocks sometimes measuring twenty feet across.

“He then speaks of the brain coral, — of which there is a fine specimen before you, Chester, — and after mentioning the star coral and one or two other species, he refers to Prof. Dana, who says:

“Some species grow up in the form of large leaves rolled around one another like an open cabbage, and cabbage coral would be no inapt designation for such species. Another foliated kind consists of leaves more crisped and of more delicate structure, irregularly grouped; lettuce coral would be a significant name. Each leaf has a surface covered with polyp flowers, and was formed by the growth and secretion of these polyps. Clustered leaves of the *acanthus* and oak are at once called to mind by

other species ; a sprouting asparagus bed by others. The mushroom is here imitated in very many of its fantastic shapes, and other fungi, with mosses and lichens, add to the variety. Vases of madrepores are common about the reefs of the Pacific ; they stand on a cylindrical base, which is enveloped in flowers when alive, and consist of a network of branches and branchlets, spreading gracefully from the center, covered above with crowded sprigs of tinted polyps. The actiniæ may well be called the asters, carnations, and anemones of the submarine garden ; the tubipores and alcyonia form literally its pink beds ; the gorgoniæ and militæas are its flowering twigs ; the madrepores its plants and shrubbery ; and astræas often form domes amid the grove a dozen feet or more in diameter, embellished with green or purple blossoms which stud the surface like gems, while other hemispheres of meandrina appear as if enveloped in a network of flowering vines.'

" 'Over the surface of all these corals,' the writer then goes on to say, 'each depression is the site of a polyp ; and the radiated form of this cell corresponds in its plates to the similar structure of the animal. As young polyps are produced, they communicate for a time or permanently with the parent stock, through the internal cavity, in some species each having in the early period of growth nothing externally to mark its separate existence but the new mouth and incipient tentacles. In a living polyp, the tentacles are expanded and made rigid by injection with sea-water. When disturbed, the water is ejected, the tentacles contract and disappear beneath the margin of the disk which is rolled inward over them, and conceals also the mouth. In many even of the larger corals the living portion is but a thin outer part of the mass, the rest having become dead by the drying up of the tissues as growth went on. The various forms of coral are produced by as many species of polyps.' "

"And they are widely distributed, I should judge," remarked Chester.

"Yes," said the Professor; "and this very writer says: 'Among the tribes of corals, some species or other are found in all oceans from the equator to the polar regions, and to the lowest depths explored by man. But the range of individual species and families is limited by the physical conditions of light, heat, pressure, etc., appropriate to their organization. Those tribes which produce the great coral reefs, as the astræas, madrepores, meandrinæ, etc., are developed with peculiar luxuriance in the warmest parts of the Pacific, where the temperature varies from 75° to 85° ; but they are also found in waters the temperature of which during the coldest winter months does not fall below 68° , and in other oceans and seas.'"

"What are the limits of coral reefs, Professor?" asked Eugene.

"This authority says, 'Two isothermal lines of 68° , one north, the other south of the equator, near the parallel of 28° , but varying therefrom according to the marine currents and the vicinity of continents, will include all the growing coral reefs of the world.'"

"The higher the temperature, the greater is the profusion and variety of the coral reefs, I suppose," said Chester.

"Exactly."

"What is the range in depth of the reef-forming corals?" asked Eugene.

"It appears to be limited to one hundred and twenty feet," answered the Professor; "and comparatively few are found below half that depth."

"But," exclaimed Eugene, "coral is often found extending from a few feet to hundreds and even thousands of feet below the surface of the sea."

“That is true, and various theories have been advanced to account for it, but they have all been rejected, and the explanation first offered by Mr. Darwin is now very generally adopted by the scientific world.”

“And just how does Mr. Darwin account for it, Professor?”

“His theory, which, by the way, is supported and more fully developed by Professor Dana, is, that the bottom of the ocean where atolls are found has been for ages slowly subsiding, while the coral reef has *pari passu* been growing up. Hence, as this writer says, while the living coral has never existed more than fifty or one hundred feet below the surface of the water, the coral rock, the product of former ages, exists at immeasurable depths. The dead corals and shells of the coral seas become ground up by the waves as they sweep over the reef, and thus the beds of coral débris are made which become by consolidation the coral reef rock.”

“I wonder how Darwin first came to think out the origin of the atoll,” mused Eugene.

“Dana says the Gambier group, near the Paumotous, whither we are now bound, gave him the first hint. ‘The contrast,’ he says, ‘and, at the same time, the resemblance, were striking,’ and I agree with him that the conclusion was natural and most happy.”

“Had any one else noticed the resemblance?” asked Chester.

“Captain Beechey, in his ‘Voyage in the Pacific,’ as Professor Dana points out, implies it when he says of the Gambier group, which he surveyed, ‘It consists of five large islands and several small ones, *all situated in a lagoon formed by a reef of coral*, and Balbi, the geographer, as Darwin remarks, describes those barrier reefs which encircle islands of moderate size by calling them atolls, with high lands rising from their central expanse.”

"The whole theory, as set forth by Darwin and Dana, is very fascinating," said Chester.

"It is indeed," assented the Professor. Then turning to the Captain: "Have you a copy of Dana's 'Corals and Coral Islands' in your collection?"

"Certainly," was the reply; "I'll get it for you," and stepping across the saloon, he took the volume from its place, and returning, handed it to the Professor.

Opening the book at the section treating on Lagoons of atolls, and calling their attention to a sketch of the Gambier Islands, and another illustrating the origin of atolls, the Professor said:

"These give us an excellent idea of how reefs and atolls are formed."

"Yes," exclaimed Eugene; "and as the author says of the first, 'The very features of the coast of the included islands, — the deep indentations, — are sufficient evidence of subsidence to one who has studied the character of the Pacific Islands; for these indications correspond to valleys or gorges formed by denudation, during a long period while the island stood above the sea.'"

"Now look at the other sketch," said the Professor. "It shows the manner in which a further subsidence results in producing the atoll. When the islets have sunk out of sight, the ring or barrier-reef remains, leaving nothing within but the lagoon of the new atoll."

"I see," said Eugene. Then turning abruptly to his brother: "Chester, what have you there? If it's anything interesting, let's know it."

"Oh," responded Chester, "it's only a clipping from the San Francisco *Call*. I came across the paper at Callao."

"Does it treat on the subject under consideration?" asked the Professor.

“Yes, sir, and confirms the views of Darwin and Dana.”

“Then let us hear it, by all means.”

Thus admonished, Chester read as follows :

“Captain Herandeen, a mariner, who has spent years in sailing the restless Pacific, related to a reporter, a few days ago, facts that he had observed, which tend to prove the theory set forth by Professor Dana, that there is an immense area of the Pacific Ocean bed, lying under the equator, about 6,000 miles in length and about 2,000 in breadth, that has been gradually sinking lower and lower for thousands of years, till now land that once was lying in the sun and washed by waves is buried in fathomless depths. The following is the interesting story told by the captain :

“There is ample evidence that a vast area in the central Pacific Ocean, now sunk far deeper than the fathom line goes, was once above the surface of the sea, and most probably inhabited by a race of people far superior in intelligence and civilization to the Polyynesians and Kanakas who now dwell on the rocky islands, which in former times were the tops of mountain peaks. An immense area of the ocean bed has been sinking for thousands of years, and the character of the people who have lived in that region of the world seems to be sinking lower and lower as the land subsides. The first thing that called the attention of scientific men to this great fact was the formation of the innumerable atolls and barrier-reefs in that part of the Pacific Ocean. They found on the outskirts of this area that there were islands fringed with coral reefs. As they sailed past these beautiful islands they saw other islands with a barrier circling them. A coral reef, a few feet below the surface of the water, girdled the island at a distance from it varying from a half mile to thirty miles, and whose presence was

marked by a ring of snowy foam made by the breakers. As they penetrated further into the region of the sea they came upon atolls, which are formed by circles of coral inclosing a smooth sheet of water. These lagoons were found to vary in diameter from thirty miles, or more, to only a few feet; but corals do not build their reefs at a greater depth than about one hundred feet, and yet, by sounding these singular reefs in the Pacific Ocean, it was found that the coral reached as far as the fathom line went. The conclusion of scientific men, was, that the bed of the ocean was gradually sinking, and that the corals began to build fringing reefs on the islands, and as the land sank, the corals kept steadily at work, building up as fast as the land went down. As the island disappeared the fringing reefs became atolls or circles of coral, inclosing a calm lagoon. It was found that the reefs below one hundred feet are dead, and it is inferred that at a lower depth than that, the corals were killed by cold. This is the generally accepted theory in regard to the subsidence in the Pacific.

“But there is other evidence which is more interesting, because it relates to the decay of a great race of people that once inhabited this region. A few years ago I stopped at Ponynipete Island, in the Pacific, in east longitude $158^{\circ} 22'$ and north latitude $6^{\circ} 50'$. The island is surrounded by a reef, with a broad ship channel between it and the island. At places in the reef there were natural breaks, that served as entrances to the harbors. In these ship channels there were a number of islands, many of which were surrounded by a wall of stone five or six feet high, and on these islands there stood a great many low houses, built of the same kind of stone as the walls about them. These structures seem to have been used as temples and forts. The singular

feature of these islands is that the walls are a foot or more below the water. When they were built they were evidently above the water and connected with the mainland, but they have gradually sunk until the sea has risen a foot or more around them. The natives on the island do not know when these works were built; it is so far back in the past that they have even no tradition of the structures. Yet the works show signs of great skill, and certainly prove that whoever built them knew thoroughly how to transport and lift heavy blocks of stone. Up in the mountains of the island there is a quarry of the same kind of stone that was used in building the wall about the small islands, and in that quarry to-day there are great blocks of stone that have been hewn out ready for transportation. The natives have no tradition touching the quarry; who hewed the stone, when it was done, or why the work ceased. The natives are in greater ignorance of the great phenomena that are going on about them than the white man who touches at their island for a few hours for water. There is no doubt in my mind that the island was once inhabited by an intelligent race of people, who built the temples and forts of heavy masonry on the high bluffs of the shore of the island, and that as the land gradually subsided these bluffs became islands. They stand to-day with a solid wall of stone around them, partly submerged in water.’”

“All very true,” commented the Professor; “but the good mariner gives us nothing new, as I can see.”

“What!” exclaimed Eugene, “did you know about the stone structures he mentions — temples and forts, he calls them?”

“Yes, and I have made myself somewhat familiar with the curious canals, and the remarkable walls and ruins on Kusaie or Strong’s Island.”

“Canals and ruins!” exclaimed Eugene; “I never heard of them. Tell us something about them, Professor.”

“With pleasure, my young friend; but not to-day. See, the steward is impatient to get possession of this table. We have been so interested in corals and atolls that we have failed to note the flight of time.” And so the little party broke up.



FEATHER APRON.

CHAPTER XVII.

KUSAIE—COMPLETED ATOLLS.

THE next morning, when they were again assembled in the saloon, Eugene gently hinted to the Professor that they would be glad to take up the subject they were considering when disturbed the day before.

“Let me see,” said the Professor, musingly; “we were speaking of the canals, and curious walls and ruins on Kusaie, I believe.”

“Yes, sir; you were just going to tell us about them.”

“I should like it much better if you could see them for yourselves; however, I will try to give you some idea of the mysterious wonders.” Then, after a pause: “Kusaie, one of the Caroline Islands, as perhaps you know, is entirely surrounded by a coral reef, varying from a few rods to more than half a mile from the shore. Through the reef there is the usual opening, in this case quite one hundred yards wide, giving passage to ships of the largest size. The main island is large—some thirty miles in circumference, and on the north side the shore forms a deep lagoon. In front of this lagoon is a small island, which extends from one extreme point of the bay to the other, being separated on the western side from the large island by some three or four hundred feet of shallow water, of not sufficient depth to admit the passage of a vessel of any size, and this is bordered by the reef. The channel is on the eastern side of the small island.

“The king and a large number of his people, including the more important chiefs, reside on the small island, for

KUSAIE, CAROLINE ISLANDS.



what good reason I am not prepared to say. But on this island there are a great number of canals, cut through in all directions, and at high tide of sufficient depth to float the largest canoes. These canals, as well as some of the more important roads, are walled up from fifteen to thirty feet high. The walls are exceedingly well built, and are from six to ten feet in thickness. Immense stones, many of them weighing several tons, may be seen in the walls, and that, too, at quite a distance from the ground."

"That's very strange, and seems to bear out Captain Herandeen's idea of a superior race having inhabited these islands, — or continent, as it may have been," said Captain Bradford.

"Yes; there is something very suggestive about these walls and canals," returned the Professor.

"Don't the natives pretend to know anything about them?" asked Eugene.

"No; and the more intelligent of them say that the oldest traditions they have give no account of them whatever."

"But they must have some idea — some theory as to how they came there."

"A very convenient one; they say the evil spirit built them for his own use."

"Are there any other wonders on this island?" asked Chester, who was also greatly interested.

"Yes," answered the Professor; "there are what appear to be the ruins of an extensive building. It is surrounded by a massive stone wall, six or eight feet high, on all four sides, with but a single entrance, which is reached by a flight of stone steps. Within this is a second wall, somewhat smaller, but similar to the first; and on ascending several more steps, a level space paved with large, flat stones is reached. In the center of this last there are two square pits, about twenty feet deep, walled up with stone in a workmanlike manner."

“And of these interesting ruins the natives know no more than they do about the canals, I suppose?” said Eugene, impatiently.

“No,” rejoined the Professor; “if you ask them, they will only tell you it is the work of the Devil, and that is all the satisfaction you will be able to get from them.”

“I think I could guess nearer than that,” said Captain Bradford, who had listened to the Professor with a thoughtful air.

“Ah, you have a theory!” exclaimed the palæontologist. “I should be glad to hear it.”

“It is only this,” returned the Captain: “Look at the chart and note the position of Kusaie. Well, it seems to me that at one time it may have been the stronghold of a community of pirates, and if so, that would explain everything that seems mysterious now.”

“Hum,” mused the Professor; “you may be right. Certainly, there are indications that point that way.”

“Then the admirable situation,” the Captain went on; “the almost perfect harbor, with its narrow entrance, in which a vessel might readily be wholly shut out from view at sea; the mild and salubrious climate; all these combined would render it a most desirable rendezvous.”

“But it does n’t seem possible to me,” objected Eugene; “for had pirates held possession of the island, it could n’t have been so very long ago, and the present inhabitants would have some knowledge of them through tradition, at least.”

“They ought to, Eugene,” said the Professor; “but after all the Captain’s supposition is not so very improbable. It is well known that this ocean, years ago, was infested by swarms of Chinese and Malay pirates, and these very natives bear a striking resemblance to the Malays.”

“Then you assume that in a comparatively short time they have forgotten their ancestors and their calling?”

"It would not be so very strange if they have. Most of the able-bodied men may have sailed away on some plundering expedition, leaving only the women and children, and perhaps a few infirm old men at home, and their vessels may have been captured or lost; and so, the children growing up without large vessels, and, it may be, without the means to make them, were forced to give up their fathers' trade, and in the course of time lost all remembrance of their piratical sires."

"I acknowledge the force of your argument, and confess that you have nearly converted me to the Captain's theory." Then turning abruptly to the commander of the *Albatross*: "Captain, you must manage in some way to give us a glimpse of Kusaie."

"I presume it can be done without any very great difficulty or loss of time," was the reply, after a moment's consideration. "And to tell the truth, I should like very much to see the place myself; I never have been there."

"That's a little strange, is n't it?"

"Yes; but it has happened so."

While the others were talking, Chester had taken up the book the Professor had laid down. Now he said:

"Here is an explanation—in fact, the answer to a question I have asked myself more than once of late, and that is, how do certain coral islands become nearly circular in form and filled in?"

"Read it," said the Professor. And Chester, complying, read:

"'One obvious result of its continuation'—that is, the subsidence of a coral island, you understand—'is a gradual contraction of the lagoon and diminution of the size of the atoll, owing to the fact already noted, that the detritus is mostly thrown inward by the sea. The lagoon will consequently become smaller and shallower,

and the outline of the island in general, more nearly circular. Finally, the reefs of the different sides may so far approximate by this process, that the lagoon is gradually obliterated, and the large atoll is thus reduced to a small level islet, with only traces of a former depression about the center. Thus subsidence aids detritus accumulations in filling up the lagoon; and as filled lagoons are found only in the smallest islands, such as Swain's and Jarvis's, the two agencies have, beyond doubt, been generally united."

"I am glad you read that," said the Professor, approvingly, "now let us hear the next paragraph or two. I think they will tell us something about dead reefs and barrier-reefs that it will be well for us to know."

Chester continued:

"This subsidence, if more rapid than the increase of the coral reef, would become fatal to the atoll, by gradually sinking it beneath the sea. Such a fate has actually befallen two atoll-formed reefs of the Chagos group, in the Indian Ocean, as stated by Darwin; a third has only "two or three very small pieces of living reef rising to the surface," and the fourth has a portion nine miles long, dead and submerged. Darwin calls such reefs *dead reefs*. The southern Maldives have deeper lagoons than the northern, fifty or sixty fathoms being found in them. This fact indicates that subsidence was probably most extensive to the south, and perhaps also most rapid. The sinking of the Chagos Bank, which lies further to the south, in nearly the same line, may therefore have had some connection with the subsidence of the Maldives."

"I think there is no doubt about that," remarked the Professor. "But go on."

"In view of the facts which have been presented," Chester continued, "it appears that each coral atoll

once formed a fringing reef around a high island. The fringing reef, as the island subsided, became a barrier-reef, which continued its growth while the land was slowly disappearing. The area of waters within finally contained the last sinking peak. Another period, and this had gone—the island had sunk, leaving only the barrier at the surface, and an islet or two of coral in the enclosed lagoon. Thus the coral wreath thrown around the lofty island, to beautify and protect, becomes afterward its monument, and the only record of its past existence. The Paumotou Archipelago is a vast island cemetery, where each atoll marks the site of a buried island. The whole Pacific is scattered over with these simple memorials, and they are the brightest spots in that desert of waters.’”

“Very beautifully expressed, and very true,” remarked the Professor, in a commendatory tone.

“Here is something about the completed atoll,” observed Chester, glancing his eye down the page.

“I should like to hear that,” said Eugene.

“You can read it for yourself,” laughed his brother.

“No; let us enjoy it together,” said the Professor, and without further demur Chester read:

“‘The atoll, a quiet scene of grove and lake, is admirably set off by the contrasting ocean. Its placid beauty rises to grandeur when the storm rages, and the waves foam and roar about the outer reefs; for the child of the sea still rests quietly, in unheeding and dreamy content. This coral-made land is firm, because, as has been already explained, it is literally *sea-born*, it having been built out of sea-products, by the aid of the working ocean. And so with the groves: they were planted by the waves; and hence the species are those that can defy the encroaching waters, and meet the various conditions in which they are placed. The plants therefore take firm hold of the soil, and grow in all their natural strength and beauty.

“‘Only an occasional coral island has a completely encircling grove, and is hence a model atoll. But the many in which a series of green islets surround the lagoon are often but little less attractive, especially when the several islets present varied groupings of palms and other foliage. To give perfection to the coral island landscape there ought to be, here and there, beneath the trees, a pretty cottage or villa, and other marks of taste and intelligence; and now and then a barge should be seen gliding over the waters. As it is, the inhabitants are swarthy and nearly naked savages, having little about them that is pleasant to contemplate; and their canoes, with a clumsy outrigger to keep them right side up, as well as their thatched huts, are as little in harmony as themselves with nature’s grace and loveliness.

“‘Where the islets of a coral reef are heaped up blocks of coral rock, blackened with lichens, and covered with barely enough of trailing plants and shrubs to make the surface green in the distant view, the traveler, on landing, would be greatly disappointed. But still there is enough that is strange and beautiful, both in the life of the land and sea, and in the history and features of the island, to give enjoyment for many a day.

“‘The great obstacle to communication with a majority of atolls, especially the smaller, is the absence of an entrance to the lagoon, and hence of a good landing-place. In that case landing can be effected only on the leeward side, and in good weather; and best, when the tide is low. Even then the sea often rolls in so heavily over the jagged margin of the reef, that it is necessary for the boat to take a chance to mount an in-going wave and ride upon it over the line of breakers, to a stopping-place somewhere on the reef or shore-platform.

“‘Less easy is the return through the breakers, espe-

A MODEL ATOLL.



cially if the sea has risen during the ramble ashore. The boat, in order to get off again, would naturally take one of the narrow channels or inlets indenting the margin of the reef. But, with the waves tumbling in one after another, roughly lifting and dropping it, as they pass, and with barely room between the rocks for the oars to be used, there is a fair chance of its being dashed against the reefs to its destruction, or thrown broadside to the sea and swamped under a cataract of waters. If another boat with its crew were lying at the time off the reef, a line, carried to it through the surf by an expert swimmer, might prove a means of rescue;—and so, one day, we safely reached our ship. To those approaching such a shore in a boat, prudence would give the advice—first, drop, some distance outside of the breakers, a kedge or anchor, for aid both in landing on, and leaving, the reef. But the bottom off a coral island is often bad anchoring ground. And then, if the kedge thus planted holds firm, in spite of the jerking waves, well and good. If not —”

“Ah! if not —” exclaimed Captain Bradford, drawing in his breath.

“You know what a slip would mean, Captain,” said the Professor, gravely.

“Indeed, I do,” was the answer.

“It would mean, I suppose,” said Eugene, “that the poor fellows in the boat would never get back to their ship alive.”

“That’s pretty near the truth,” assented the Captain.

“I’m afraid, Chester,” said his brother, “we shall have to be careful if we attempt to land on any of the Low Islands we are now approaching.”

“I would strongly recommend it,” said the Professor.

“Well, what does Dana say next?” asked the Captain.

“He mentions Fakaafo or Bowditch Island,” answered Chester.

"That is the easternmost of three small atolls, between the meridians of 171° and $172\frac{1}{2}^{\circ}$ west, and a little south of the equator," said the Captain.

"And two hundred miles north of the Samoan group," added the Professor.

"Exactly," said Chester.

"Well, what does he say about it?" asked Eugene.

"In another place, I notice, he says it is the type of a large part of the coral islands. 'The bank and reef,' he remarks, 'has only here and there emerged from the waves and become verdant; in other portions the reef is of the usual height,—that is, near low-tide level,—excepting a few spots elevated a little by the accumulation of sand.' Then, in the passage before me, he says: 'This island and the two others near it were among the few, perhaps the last, examples that remained until 1840, of Pacific lands never before visited by the white man. The people, therefore, were in that purely savage state which Captain Cook found almost universal through the ocean in the latter part of last century. A few words respecting our reception at this coral island, may not, therefore, be an improper digression.

"The islanders knew nothing of any other land or people—an ignorance not surprising, since the lagoons of the group have no good entrances, and a nation cannot be great in navigation or discovery without harbors. As a consequence, our presence was to them like an apparition. The simple inhabitants took us for gods from the sun, and, as we landed, came with abundant gifts of such things as they had, to propitiate their celestial visitors. They, no doubt, imagined that our strange ship had sailed off from the sun when it touched the water at sunrise or sunset, and any child among them could see that this was a reasonable supposition. The king, after embracing Captain Hudson, as the latter states in his

journal, rubbed noses, pointed to the sun, howled, moaned, hugged him again and again, put a mat around his waist, securing it with a cord of human hair, and repeated the rubbing of noses and the howling; and the moment the captain attempted to leave his side, he set up again a most piteous howl, and repeated in a tremulous tone: "*Nofo ki lalo, mataku au,*" "Sit down, I am afraid." While thus in fear of us, they showed a great desire that their dreaded visitors should depart; some pointed to the sun, and asked by their gestures about our coming thence, or hinted to us to be off again.

"But with all their reverence toward their mysterious guests, they became after awhile quite familiar, and took advantage of every opportunity to steal from us. Our botanist gave his collecting-box to one of them to hold, and, the moment his back was turned, off the native ran, and a hard chase was required to recover it—a most undignified run on the part of the celestial.

"While the men wore the maro, the equivalent of tight-fitting breeches, six inches or less in length, the women were attired in a simple bloomer costume, consisting solely of a petticoat or apron, twelve to eighteen inches long, made of a large number of slit cocoanut leaves, and kept well oiled. Besides this they had on, as ornaments, necklaces of shell or bone. The girls and boys were dressed *au naturel*, after the style in the garden of Eden. These primitive fashions, however, were not peculiar to the group, being in vogue also in other parts of the Pacific.'

"In a beautiful grove of cocoanut trees, the sacred or public house of the island is situated—'a well-made structure,' he says, 'measuring fifty feet by thirty-five, in length and breadth, and twenty feet in height. In front of the building stands the deity of the place, consisting of a block of stone fourteen feet high, enveloped

in mats; and also near by, a smaller idol, partially covered with matting.' Here and there are young cocoanut palms—usually more beautiful objects than the full-grown trees.

"As a set off against the geographical ignorance of these islanders, the Professor remarks, that Captain Hudson and the best map-makers of the age knew nothing of the existence of Bowditch Island until he discovered it; and from him comes the name it bears, given in honor of the celebrated author of 'Bowditch's Navigator' as well as of the translation of Laplace's '*Mécanique Céleste*.'"

"Wilkes says of these people that they are all finely formed, and are manly in appearance, with pleasing countenances that express good nature," observed the Professor, presently.

"Yes, I remember," assented the Captain; "and he says they wear eye-shades and ornaments, and are curiously tattooed."

"Ah, yes; very much after the manner of the Duke of York islanders," rejoined the Professor.

"That island is not far distant from Bowditch or Fakaafo, is it?" asked Eugene.

"No; it is just to the north," answered the Captain; "and in Wilkes's time was subject to Fakaafo."

"I suppose it is similar in size and general appearance?"

"It is much smaller, being only three miles in length, and not more than two and a half miles wide in its broadest part. It is a lagoon island, and, of course, of coral formation. The islets that have been formed on the reef are eight or ten feet above the water, and are covered with cocoanut and pandanus trees."

"The inhabitants, I infer, are very like their neighbors, in habits and disposition."

"They are said, in general, to be very shy, especially

of white men," answered the Captain; "but some of them, I am told, display confidence and boldness in the presence of strangers."

"Do they live together, or scattered over the island?"

"They live in villages, on the inner or lagoon side of the island, one of which contains some forty houses, which are raised a foot or more above the surrounding earth. They are of oblong shape, about fifteen feet high to the ridge-pole, sloping gradually, and of a convex form to within two or three feet of the ground; the roof is supported on high posts, while the lower part rests on short ones, three feet within the eaves, having a strong piece extending around, on which the rafters are tied; the gable-ends are over-topped by the roof, and seem necessary to protect them from the weather. Below the eaves, the whole are open from the ground to the roof. The thatching, made of pandanus leaves, is of great thickness, and put on loosely. The interior of the houses are very clean, but there is no furniture except a few goards, and a reclining stool, cut from a solid block of wood, having two legs at one end, which inclines it at an angle of nearly forty-five degrees. This stool they consider a great luxury.

"The most remarkable constructions of the islanders near the principal village, is several small quays, five or six feet wide, and two feet above the water, forming slips about ten feet wide. At the end of each of these is a small house, built of pandanus leaves, partly on poles in the water. These appear to be placed for securing their canoes, and keeping their fishing implements, which are of the greatest importance to them."

"Who discovered the island," asked Eugene, turning to the Professor.

"It was discovered by Byron, in 1765," was the answer; "but he supposed it to be destitute of inhabitants, and so reported it."

"What name do the natives give it?"

"They call it Oatafu."

"I like that better than the Duke of York's, and therefore shall use it."

"The Duke of Clarence Island is in the immediate neighborhood, I believe," remarked Chester.

"It is only a few miles distant," said the Professor.

"It is larger than the Duke of York's."

"Yes; it is almost seven and a quarter miles long, and five miles wide. It is of a triangular shape."

"A great many of these coral islands are uninhabited, are they not?" asked Eugene.

"Yes," answered the Professor; "and for my part, I confess, I have always been fascinated by Wilkes's description of his visit to one of them."

"Tell us about it, Professor," exclaimed Eugene, eagerly.

"The island was Henuake, Houden, or Dog Island, one of the Paumotous," said the Professor, "and they came up with it about noon. 'The boats,' remarks Wilkes, 'were at once dispatched, in order to ascertain if a landing could be effected, and the ships began the surveying operations. The number of birds seen hovering over the island was an indication that it was not inhabited, which proved to be the case. Several turtles were caught, and a number of specimens obtained. The survey of the island not having been completed, we lay by all night, and early in the morning dispatched boats to complete the examination of it, and to effect a landing. The greater part of the day was spent on the island.

"'The landing on a coral island,' he then says, 'effectually does away with all preconceived notions of its beauty, and any previous ideas formed in its favor are immediately put to flight. That verdure which seemed

from a distant view to carpet the whole island, was in reality but a few patches of wiry grass, obstructing the walking, and offering neither fruit nor flowers to view; it grew among the rugged coral *debris*, with a little sand and vegetable earth.’”

“Nothing fascinating about that, as I can see,” said Eugene, in a disappointed tone.

“No; but wait a little,” returned the Professor, and then continued:

“‘The principal trees and shrubs are the pandanus, boerhaavia, and pisonia. It is somewhat surprising that a few trees, forty or fifty feet high, should have found sufficient soil to protect their growth. Most of the trees, however, are of stunted size, being not more than ten to fifteen feet in height, and eighteen inches in diameter.

“‘The number of birds on the island was incredible, and they were so tame as to require to be pushed off their nests to get their eggs. The most conspicuous among them was the frigate-bird; many of the trees were covered with their nests, constructed of a few sticks. The old birds were seen, as they flew off, inflating their blood-red pouches to the size of a child’s head, and looking as if a large bladder were attached to their necks. The gannets, sooty terns, and the beautiful tropic-bird, were in countless numbers; the former guarding their eggs (which were laid on the ground without a nest) with care, remaining by them, and even suffering themselves to be captured without resistance. Their hoarse croaking was quite deafening.

“‘Some droll sights were seen of crabs walking off with snakes, and both again seized by some stout bird and borne away. Armies of soldier or piratical crabs (*Paguri*) were seen moving in all directions with their shells. We enjoyed ourselves much, and found no use for our guns, powder, and shot; as many specimens as

we could desire were taken with the hand, both old and young. In some cases the tropic-birds were taken off their nests, and from others their eggs were taken without disturbing them; indeed, I have never seen any barn-yard fowls half so tame.

“The various snakes, the many-colored fish, the great eels, enormous and voracious sharks, large mollusks, curious lepidoptera, and spiders, with their webs stretching in every direction, and occasioning us much annoyance, seemed to have quiet possession; all gave a novelty to the scene, that highly interested and delighted us. In the afternoon we returned on board, loaded with specimens; and the survey being completed, we bore away on our course.”

“No wonder you were fascinated,” exclaimed Eugene, with enthusiasm; “and I fancy you would like a few of the specimens he mentions.”

“I don’t deny it,” smiled the Professor.

“But I noticed he says nothing of the cocoanut palm,” observed Chester.

“There are no cocoanut palms on the island,” returned the Professor; “nor is there any fresh water to be found.”

“And yet you speak of armies of the robber crab!” exclaimed Chester.

“Well, and what then?”

“I thought they lived on cocoanuts, chiefly. What do they find to eat?”

“You forget the snakes.”

“True; but I fancy there are not enough snakes to supply armies.”

“No; but there are plenty of fish and young birds.”

“Do the crabs eat fish and birds?”

“Darwin says, in speaking of his visit to St. Paul’s, an island, or rather a cluster of rocks in the Atlantic, near the equator, ‘By the side of many of these nests [terns’]

a small flying-fish was placed; which, I suppose, had been brought by the male bird for its partner. It was amusing to watch how quickly a large and active crab (*Graspus*), which inhabits the crevices of the rock, stole the fish from the side of the nest, as soon as we had disturbed the parent birds. Sir W. Symonds, one of the few persons who have landed here,' he adds, 'informs me that he saw the crabs dragging even the young birds out of their nests, and devouring them.'"

"Why," said Chester, "it was from him I got the impression that they live chiefly on cocoanuts."

"What does he say about it?" asked Eugene.

His brother picked up a book, and having speedily found the place, answered:

"This is what he says: 'I have before alluded to a crab which lives on the cocoanut; it is very common on all parts of the dry land, and grows to a monstrous size; it is closely allied or identical with the *Birgos latro*. The front pair of legs terminate in very strong and heavy pincers, and the last pair are fitted with others weaker and much narrower. It would at first be thought quite impossible for a crab to open a strong cocoanut covered with the husk; but Mr. Liesk assures me that he has repeatedly seen this effected. The crab begins by tearing the husk, fiber by fiber, and always from that end under which the three eye-holes are situated; when this is completed, the crab commences hammering with its heavy claw on one of the eye-holes till an opening is made. Then turning round its body, by the aid of its posterior and narrow pair of pincers, it extracts the white albuminous substance. I think this is as curious a case of instinct as ever I heard of, and likewise of adaptation in structure between two objects apparently so remote from each other in the scheme of nature, as a crab and a cocoanut tree. The *Birgos* is diurnal in its

habits; but every night it is said to pay a visit to the sea, no doubt for the purpose of moistening its branchiæ. The young are likewise hatched, and live for some time, on the coast. These crabs inhabit deep burrows, which they hollow out beneath the roots of trees; and where they accumulate surprising quantities of the picked fibers of the cocoanut husk, on which they rest as on a bed. The Malays sometimes take advantage of this, and collect the fibrous mass to use as junk. These crabs are very good to eat; moreover, under the tail of the larger ones there is a great mass of fat, which, when melted, sometimes yields as much as a quart bottle full of limpid oil. It has been stated by some authors that the Birgos crawls up the cocoanut trees for the purpose of stealing the nuts: I very much doubt the possibility of this; but with the pandanus the task would be very much easier. I was told by Mr. Liesk that on these islands the Birgos lives only on the nuts which have fallen to the ground.

“‘Captain Moresby informs me that this crab inhabits the Chagos and Seychelle groups, but not the neighboring Maldiva Archipelago. It formerly abounded at Mauritius, but only a few small ones are now found there. In the Pacific, this species, or one with closely allied habits, is said to inhabit a single coral island, north of the Society group. To show the wonderful strength of the front pair of pincers, I may mention, that Captain Moresby confined one in a strong tin box, which had held biscuits, the lid being secured with wire; but the crab turned down the edges and escaped. In turning down the edges, it actually punched many small holes quite through the tin!’ There, what have you to say to that?” demanded Chester in triumph, as he threw down the book.

“That’s all very well, my young friend,” responded the Professor, quietly, “but I must inform you that the

robber crab (*birgus*) is not the same as the hermit or soldier crab. I noticed your mistake at first, but thought I would lead you on a little, and so hear what you had to say before I set you right."

"Not the same!" exclaimed Chester, "why, Darwin says, only a few pages back, and speaking of the same islands, 'In every part one meets hermit crabs of more than one species, carrying on their backs the shells which they have stolen from the neighboring beach.' And you know Wilkes distinctly says, 'the soldier or piratical crabs were seen moving in all directions *with their shells.*'"

"Very true," rejoined the Professor; and yet, you have got two species mixed. Let me put the matter plainly before you: Without doubt Darwin found on the Keeling or Cocos Islands, of which you have just been reading, both the hermit and the robber crab, and, perhaps, other species. Now the hermit's peculiar habit of living in the spiral shells of mollusks is well known. The shells which they inhabit are often covered with hydroids or other foreign substances, and some species always have an actinia upon the shell, as Dana will tell you. The hind part of the body and the abdomen are soft, protected only by a thin integument, and the abdomen is one-sided and curved spirally, so as to fit the shells which they always inhabit and drag about with them, while the legs and claws are all directed forward and occupy the opening of the shell. From time to time, as they increase in size, they exchange their shells for larger ones. When changing the shells, combats between individuals sometimes take place for the possession of the more desirable shells, and this has given rise to their familiar name. Some of the species in the tropics are terrestrial, like the land crabs, and travel long distances from the sea and even up among mountains,

carrying the marine shells with them. The robber crab, Chester, is an enormous terrestrial crab, allied to the hermit crabs, I admit, but it does not inhabit shells, the abdomen being shorter and covered with a hard integument. It feeds upon cocoanuts, climbing the trees, as I am able to state on other authority than Darwin, and breaks open the fruit with its claws, which, as you have informed us, are adapted to the purpose."

"I give in," said Chester, decidedly; "you have the best of it this time, Professor, without the shadow of a doubt."

"Then, that being settled," said the Captain, "I beg we may stop right here for to-day," and the others acquiescing, he hurried on deck.

CHAPTER XVIII.

THE PAUMOTOU ARCHIPELAGO.

THE next morning, the weather being fine, our friends once more sought their old places on the quarter-deck; and Eugene, eager to take up the subject in which all were so deeply interested, before they were hardly seated, abruptly asked:

"Was n't it said yesterday that Paumotou was nominally subject to Tahiti?"

"Very likely," answered the Professor. "At any rate, Tahiti has claimed sovereignty over the archipelago for years."

"Then," said Eugene, "Tahiti, having become subject to France, I suppose that greedy nation claims Paumotou also."

"Without doubt she does," rejoined the Professor. "She has a Catholic mission at Maugareva, and priests stationed here and there throughout the group. On the most frequented islands the natives now wear clothes of European fashion."

"What is the population of the group?" asked Chester.

"The best authorities put it at between 10,000 and 12,000," was the answer.

"Is it possible!" exclaimed Eugene. "And all living on low coral islands!"

"Ah, but you must remember there is 'a cloud' of them — between eighty and ninety of considerable size."

"Which of them is the best known?" asked Chester.

"Perhaps Anaa or Chain Island, and then there is Pitcairn."

"Chain Island!" exclaimed Eugene. "What have I heard about that? They were a warlike people, were they not?"

"They *were*, but are so no longer," was the answer.

"Is it a large island?"

"On the contrary, it is one of the smallest, yet it is the most densely populated of the group."

"How many inhabitants are there?"

"It is said to contain five thousand, which large number is accounted for by the conquest, years ago, of the other islands, and taking their inhabitants off as captives."

"Why, it contains nearly half the population of the archipelago!"

"Yes, and I have just explained how it came about."

"I should think they would be over-crowded. Can they find enough to eat, without devouring each other?"

"The whole island is one great cocoanut grove, and the principal food is fish and cocoanuts. The former are caught in large quantities in the lagoon. Hence, notwithstanding the numerous population, they have an abundance of food. A great change was brought about in the character of these islanders by the Tahitian missionaries who settled at Anaa. Before their coming, the inhabitants were cannibals. Since then they have imbibed better tastes; and the Christian influence has also made them more peaceful. This change was first evinced by the treatment of their captives, whom they permitted to return, if they chose, to their own islands; but very many of them had married at Anaa, and become permanent residents there, and few took advantage of the permission to depart."

"The Paumotouans were considered more warlike than the Tahitians, were they not?" asked Chester.

"Yes," was the answer; "and for that reason Pomare

I. kept a body-guard of them in preference to his own subjects. They have a reputation, too, for being an honest and trustworthy people."

"Are they all of the same race?"

"They are not; that is a settled fact. The inhabitants of the Disappointment group in particular differ from the others. They have strong, wiry beards and mustaches; and strange as it may seem, greatly resemble the Fijians."

"There are only two islands of any consequence in that group, or cluster, I believe?" said Chester, inquiringly.

"That is all: Wytoohee and Otooho. Wytoohee is formed of islets connected by a washed coral reef, of irregular shape, with a lagoon having many knolls in it, of various sizes, some four or five feet above the surface. The islanders speak, or at least understand, the Tahitian language, are naturally shrewd, and inclined to be peaceable. They spend much time upon the water, fishing. Their canoes are quite small, being only from twelve to fifteen feet in length. They generally contain two, and sometimes three natives. Each canoe has an outrigger, and a projecting point, both before and behind, by which they get into them from the water. They are formed of strips of cocoanut-wood sewed together. Two persons can carry them. Their paddles are curved backwards. Their neighbors on the island of Otooho, though not numerous, have a bad name."

"You mentioned Pitcairn Island as one of the best known of the Paumotous," remarked Eugene. I was not even aware that it was classed with the group."

"While in one sense it is an isle by itself,—a lone isle," replied the Professor, "in another it rightly belongs to the archipelago, and is so classed by the best authorities."

"At any rate, it is not of coral formation," persisted Eugene.

"Certainly not; it is volcanic, and is greatly elevated, the highest peak being nearly 2,500 feet above the sea. Far off it looks like a desolate rock, rising steep from the ocean, and, indeed, it is surrounded by cliffs which preclude the possibility of landing except in two or three spots."

"It is very small, I believe," said Chester.

"Yes; its extreme length is only two and a quarter miles, and its breadth but one mile."

"Is it well watered?"

"There are a few small streams, but they are liable to fail at certain seasons, when the inhabitants depend upon water preserved in tanks."

"It's a lovely spot, any way," exclaimed the Captain. "The temperature ranges between 59° and 90°, and the climate is remarkably healthy. The soil is rich and fertile, and the island is everywhere thickly clothed with a luxuriant vegetation."

"Then, too," added the Professor, "several tropical fruits and vegetables are indigenous, and many others, together with some of those belonging to temperate regions, have been successfully introduced."

"They have a variety of domestic animals, I have heard," said Chester.

"All the domestic animals except the horse are to be found on the island, and goats are very numerous in the more inaccessible parts."

"When was the island discovered?" asked Eugene.

"In 1767, by Carteret," was the answer.

"He named it, I suppose," said the young man.

"Yes; after one of his officers, who was the first to see it."

"Pitcairn, — there was a British officer of that name who was killed in our War of the Revolution."

"Yes," assented the Professor; "Major Pitcairn; it was his son."

"The island is quite a monument to his memory," said Chester; "for it is not only, as you remarked a while ago, one of the best known of the Paumotous, but of all the isles of the Pacific."

"Quite true," assented the Professor; "and its chief interest is derived from the results of a great crime."

"A crime! I beg to differ with you there, Professor," said Chester, quite warmly, "I hold that Christian was perfectly justified in what he did. Bligh was a brute and a tyrant."

"Well, well, my dear young friend, we won't dispute about the matter. I by no means hold Captain Bligh guiltless. His after life proves him all you say."

"I have often read the story of the *Bounty*," remarked Eugene; "but I wish you would give us the main facts, Professor; just to refresh our memories."

"The British government," said the Professor, acquiescing, "sent out the *Bounty* to convey plants of the bread-fruit tree from Tahiti to the West Indies. The vessel arrived at Tahiti at the wrong season for transplanting, and was compelled to remain there six months, during which time the crew enjoyed unusual liberties, and formed strong attachments among the natives. A few days after sailing, April 28, 1789, the crew mutinied, and turned the captain and those who would not join them adrift in an open boat. Marvelous to relate, this boat and all on board made a safe voyage of three thousand miles, and landed at Timor in the East Indian Archipelago. The mutineers returned to Tahiti. Nine of them took Tahitian wives, and with nine other Tahitians put to sea in the *Bounty* and made for Pitcairn Island.

"They reached the island in safety, landing at Bounty Bay, and destroyed their ship to avoid discovery. The Tahitian men were now reduced to slavery, and made

to work. Houses were built and land cultivated. For a time all went well; but at length the slaves rebelled, and in the struggle which followed all were destroyed, together with several of the whites, including Christian himself.

“Within a few short years only one of the *Bounty’s* men was left alive on the Island. This was John Adams. But he was not alone, with him were the Tahitian women, and twenty fatherless children, all looking to him for guidance. He formed a noble resolution. He became their instructor, and soon the children learned to love him, and called him father.

“This would have been a happy time for John Adams but for one drawback: he always lived in fear of discovery. But no vessel of any nation touched at the island until 1808, when Captain Folger of Nantucket, while on a sealing voyage in this ocean, called there, supposing it to be uninhabited. He was greatly surprised therefore to see a canoe with two men of a light brownish complexion approach his ship, and request in good English that a rope should be thrown them. These of course, were two of Adams’s pupils, and to the astonished captain they told their fathers’ story.

“Still, although the lost had been found, the English seem not to have heard of it; for it was not until 1814 that two British men-of-war entered *Bounty Bay*. They too were visited by the young islanders, and appear to have been as much astonished by their story as was Captain Folger. The young Pitcairners were generously entertained, and the officers accompanied them ashore. They found a community of forty-six persons, mostly grown-up young people, with a few infants. The young men and women were tall, handsome, athletic, and graceful, and their faces beamed with kindness and good humor. Adams assured the visitors that they were

strictly honest and religious, industrious, and affectionate. They were dressed in native cloth made from the bark of trees. Their houses were neat, pleasantly situated, and comfortably furnished. They had some useful tools and utensils, made out of the iron of the *Bounty*; and before leaving, the English officers gave them more.

"The next vessel to visit the island was an American whaler, she had on board a serious-minded man named John Buffett, who was so pleased with the people that he resolved to remain among them and devote his life to their service. He became the school-master, and was soon a prominent personage in the community.

"In 1825 Captain Beechey, in the English ship *Blossom*, arrived. He spent some days on shore with several of his men. Almost every family entertained them, and they became thoroughly familiar with baked pig, sweet-potatoes, taro, and yams. These were cooked in holes in the ground, after the Polynesian manner.

"Does n't Captain Beechey say something about their beds in one of his letters?" asked Captain Bradford.

"He says the mattresses were made of palm-leaves, covered with sheets of cloth made out of the bark of the paper-mulberry tree."

"The people at this time were intensely religious, were they not?" asked Eugene.

"Yes; and like wise men they were careful to keep holy the Sabbath-day. No work was done on that day, nor any boat allowed to leave the shore. And Beechey says of them: 'They live in perfect harmony and contentment, are virtuous and cheerful, and are hospitable beyond the limits of prudence.'"

"When did good John Adams die?" asked Chester.

"In 1829," was the reply; "and while the Pitcairners greatly mourned his loss they were not left without a leader. The year before, George Nobbs, who had been

an officer in the Chilian service, came to live among them. He was a sincere follower of our Saviour, and a very worthy man. He married a granddaughter of Christian, and became the pastor, teacher, and physician for the islanders, who now numbered sixty-eight persons."

"He has recently died, I believe," said Chester.

"Yes; at the advanced age of eighty-five, after serving this people for fifty-six years."

"I am sure he was a good man," said Eugene, musingly.

"I tell you, my young friends," rejoined the Professor, impressively, "his was a worthy life, and he has gone to a sure reward."

"What astonishes me," remarked the Captain, after a moment's pause, "is the indescribable charm these people throw around them. No sailor, however bad he may be, ever thinks of doing wrong there. He seems to feel the influence of the place the moment he touches land."

"There is no liquor to be had on the island, I suppose," said Eugene.

"No, indeed," answered the Captain; "no intoxicating liquors are allowed there, except, perhaps, a little for medicinal purposes."

"Sensible people!" quoth Eugene, approvingly.

"A part of them, and, indeed, the larger part, are now living on Norfolk Island, are they not?" asked Chester.

"Yes," answered the Professor; "in 1856 the population had increased to 194, and it was thought the island was getting over-crowded. The British government therefore transferred the people to Norfolk Island. Six families, numbering forty persons, becoming dissatisfied, and perhaps home-sick, have returned to Pitcairn, and have now increased, I hear, to 114, while the Norfolk Islanders number not far from 500."

"Did Mr. Nobbs return to Pitcairn?" asked Eugene.

"No," said the Professor; "he remained with the larger number, and died on Norfolk Island."

"Has their more frequent contact with the world made any bad impression on them?" asked Chester.

"No; they remain the same kind, true-hearted, God-fearing people; and so, I trust, they will continue to the end."

"Ah!" exclaimed Eugene, "if all the islanders in the Pacific were only like these, one might gladly make his home among them, and enjoy an earthly paradise."

"If they only were," said the Captain; "but just think of some of them!"

"We must have patience, my friends," said the Professor. "The good work is going on. The missionaries have done much here already, and are doing more now."

"But are they, really?" asked Eugene. "I have heard so many conflicting stories on that point that I hardly know what to believe."

"There is not a shadow of doubt on the subject," was the Professor's emphatic reply. "Did n't Mr. Clark bear willing testimony to the fact? and have n't our best naval officers spoken in the missionaries' praise? What does Wilkes say, on the occasion of his visit to Raraka, just after leaving the Disappointment Islands? 'Nothing,' he says, 'could be more striking than the difference that prevailed between these natives and those of the Disappointment Islands, which we had just left. The half-civilization of the natives of Raraka was very marked, and it appeared as though we had issued out of darkness into light. They showed a modest disposition, and gave us a hearty welcome. We were not long at a loss as to what to ascribe it to; the missionary had been at work here, and his exertions had been based upon a firm foundation; the savage had been changed to a reasonable creature.'"

"Then he goes on to say: 'Among the inhabitants was a native missionary, who had been instrumental in

this work. If the missionaries had effected nothing else, they would deserve the thanks of all those who roam over this wide expanse of ocean, and incur its many unknown and hidden dangers. Here all shipwrecked mariners would be sure of kind treatment, and a share of the few comforts these people possess. No savage mistrust and fear were seen here. The women and children came about us, receiving our trifles. They showed much joy and curiosity at the sight of us, and were eager to supply our wants. I was particularly struck with the modest and quiet behavior of the native missionary, who was a Tahitian. He kept himself aloof, while all the others were crowding round to partake in the presents we were distributing, and seemed much gratified and astonished when I selected him out as the recipient of a present similar to the one I had given the chief.'

"Then, as cleanliness is next to godliness, he says: 'All the males' heads were shaven, somewhat after the fashion of a Dominican friar. This practice is said to have been adopted by the missionaries at Tahiti, for the sake of cleanliness, and also to distinguish the Christian from the heathen party. The women have theirs cut close, and some are clothed in a pareu, consisting of three or four yards of cotton, others in a loose gown. They were anything but good-looking; but the men were tall and well made. The variety of apparel was droll enough. As for the children, I have seldom seen finer; all were well formed, and as cheerful as they could be. They were for the most part naked.

"'This,' he adds, 'was the first island on which we observed the dawning of Christianity and civilization. The native missionaries, although they are yet ignorant of most of the duties enjoined upon a Christian, still do much good in preparing the way. Many learn to read, and some even to write, under their tuition; yet they

have many impediments thrown in the way of their efforts by the introduction of spirits by the whites. The old chief, and others, are much addicted to the use of it, and the vessels resorting here for the pearl-fishery generally employ native divers, and pay them for the most part in rum or whisky.’”

“Ah!” exclaimed the Captain, forcibly, “rum! that’s the great curse here, as it is all over the world. Who can calculate the harm it has done, and is doing every day?”

“I fear it will never be known till the final judgment,” said the Professor, gravely; “and then what a reckoning for those who have carried on the nefarious traffic here, as well as for the great army whose business it is to ruin immortal souls in the more civilized parts of the world!”

“Ah, happy little Pitcairn!” sighed Eugene.

“Yes, happy Pitcairn,” repeated the Professor, “and may the day soon come when all the isles of the sea shall follow her wise example!”

“And now,” he added, a moment later, “as I have some writing to do, I think I must excuse myself for a time.”

“But, Professor,” objected Chester, “that old chief, you have n’t told us all about him yet; as I remember it, he was quite a comical fellow.”

“Yes,” smiled their friend, “and during the Commodore’s stay, he stuck to him closer than a brother, professing the warmest attachment. Having some business on board his ship, the Commodore invited the chief to go off with him; he first inquired if all the boats and men were to stay, and on being informed that they were not, he said he would go on board if the Commodore would also take his wife and her brother; to which he consented.

“The chief had lost one hand, which had been bitten off by a shark, while he was employed in diving for

shells. On reaching the ship, he approached the Commodore in a very mysterious manner, and, untying a knot in the tail of his shirt,—which was the only garment he wore besides his maro,—after much difficulty, with one hand and his teeth, drew from it a small, dirty piece of linen, tied up like a bag; this he produced with great form, and evidently expected to astonish his friend. The contents proved to be a few small discolored pearls; these he begged the Commodore to accept, but, as a matter of course, he declined to receive them.

“He now ordered everything to be shown them. Their surprise was very great. The number of men on board in particular astonished them. Many presents were given them; but when they were about to depart, the old chief complained of being very sick, and his actions showed that he was greatly dissatisfied. The reason could not be imagined. The ship had so little motion, it was thought it could not originate from sea-sickness, and so, at last, the Commodore begged to know what was the matter. No answer was given for some time, but the chief and his friends consulted much among themselves, in a low tone. The question was repeated, when the old chief's wife explained, that the Commodore had not returned the present that had been offered him, and that her husband was not pleased; for, according to their custom, the mere offering a present entitled him to receive one in return. As a great many gifts had been made him already, this amused the Commodore exceedingly. On asking what it was they wanted, they promptly signified whisky, which they said was always given them when they went on board ship; and the chief wanted some, for he was very sick. Wilkes accordingly ordered a bottle of water with a gill of whisky in it to be given them, and the moment they smelt it their manner was changed; they became all animation, and left the ship in great good humor.

"The brother, Wilkes says, was an intelligent native; he drew with a piece of chalk, on the deck, with considerable accuracy, all the islands he was acquainted with, giving their relative situations and the native names. He located Taiara, and Vincennes Island, which he called Kawahe. He informed them of three small islands to the southward of Sacken, which were afterwards found by the *Porpoise*; his knowledge of the western part of this group was quite surprising."

"Raraka is quite a large island, is it not, Professor?" asked Chester.

"It is nearly of the shape of an equilateral triangle, and is fifteen miles on each side. Its southern and eastern sides are formed by a submerged reef."

"Then it must have quite an extensive lagoon."

"It has; Wilkes attempted to sound it, beginning at the entrance, but he found, within a very short distance, that the depth increased to thirty fathoms, the water being as blue as that of the ocean. The depth being so great he was forced to give up the undertaking.

"What did he find so far as he went?" asked the Captain.

"The sounding, in every case of any depth, was coral sand."

"I suppose," said Chester, "The Commodore did n't get away from Raraka without quite a scene with the old chief."

"You are right," smiled the Professor, "the leave-taking was decidedly amusing. The chief with all his household and retinue began to cry and whine over him, so that he was glad to escape from the display of so much friendship and parental affection."

"The Commodore visited a vast number of these islands, did he not?" asked Eugene.

"Quite a large number," was the reply; "but I do not

know that it would be particularly interesting to follow him. It may be well, however, to recall the names of some of the larger or more important, and among these are, Anaa or Chain Island, Manga Reva or Gambier, King George's group, Raraka, Mauhii, which also has other names, Ahii or Peacock, Aratica or Carlshoff, Nairsa or Dean's, Krusenstern's Island, Metia or Aurora, Arutua or Rurick, Kawahe or Vincennes. The Disappointment Islands, Hau or Bow Island, Serle Island, Clermont de Tounerre or Minerva, Katiu or Sacken, King's Island, and Tetuaroa."

"Tetuaroa," repeated Chester, "that island was formerly quite a resort of the Tahitians."

"Yes," said the Professor, "they retired there for the purpose of recovering from the bodily diseases brought on by their debaucheries. It is a low island, about six miles long, with a few trees upon it, and a reef off its southern end, extending half a mile. It is plainly to be seen from the high ridges of Tahiti."

"Metia or Aurora Island is unlike the others of the archipelago," remarked Captain Bradford.

"Yes," assented the Professor, "it is totally different in appearance, though evidently of the same formation. It is a coral island uplifted, exposing its formation distinctly, and as such is very interesting. On approaching its eastern end, Wilkes sounded at about one hundred and fifty feet from its perpendicular cliff, and found no bottom with one hundred and fifty fathoms of line. The cliff is worn into caverns. He landed close in its neighborhood, and on measuring its height, found it to be two hundred and fifty feet."

"I wish we could know more of the past of this great archipelago," said Eugene, regretfully.

"Little appears to be known of the history of Paumotu or its inhabitants," rejoined the Professor. "Chain

Island, as I have before intimated, has been the principal seat of power, the natives of which had frequently waged war on the others, and succeeded in conquering all to the west of Hau or Bow Island, with which they have frequently fought. In the reign of the first Pomare, under Tomatiti, they even attempted the conquest of Tahiti, and succeeded in overcoming the small peninsula of Taiarabu. The story is that they were about to continue their attack on the larger island, when Tomatiti received a written letter from Pomare, which caused hostilities to be suspended; and, after further negotiation, finally led to Tomatiti's retiring from the island with a large present of hogs, tapa, and fruit. Notwithstanding this, the Chain Islanders remained nominally under the government of Tahiti, and so continued till the coming of the French."

"There is no more cannibalism among them, of course," said Eugene; "and from what has been said, I judge they are becoming quite civilized."

"Yes; their intercourse with the whites, together with the missionary influence I have mentioned, has put an end to cannibalism, advanced them in civilization, and promoted peace among all the islanders of the group; thus not only ameliorating the condition of the natives, but protecting the unfortunate mariner who may be wrecked in this dangerous archipelago."

"It does n't seem to me that there is much chance for commercial enterprise here," remarked Chester.

"Evidently the group can afford few advantages for trade," returned the Professor; "the only article which of late years has been sought for among the islands, is the pearl oyster-shell, of which considerable quantities have been obtained. The vessels engaged in the fishery belong to foreigners, who reside at Tahiti. The mode of taking the oysters is by natives, who are employed as divers, for a very small compensation. It is much to be

regretted, I cannot help repeating, that the traders should have recourse to the demoralizing effects of spirits, in stimulating their exertions."

It was a day or two later, while the friends were still deep in their favorite subject, that the lookout's cry warned them that a coral island was in sight.

All eagerly peered in the direction indicated, but could see nothing. At length Eugene caught sight of something he declared to be a ship, but quickly remembering the experience of others, he exclaimed, "No, it is not a ship, but trees!" and then with what eager interest they watched the isle as it seemed to grow into a thing of beauty before their very eyes!

Captain Bradford told them it was uninhabited, had half a dozen names, and lay some miles to the west of the Disappointment Islands.

"Let us land there," cried Eugene, in his impetuous way.

"It isn't worth while," replied the Captain, quietly. "Besides, I fear it would hardly pay for the trouble."

"Where are you going first, Captain?" asked Chester, with some show of interest.

"To the King George's group," was the answer.

In due time these islands were reached, and here the passengers went ashore.

The islands are well inhabited, and have entrances to their lagoons on the west side. The native names for the two islands are Tiokea and Oura. The latter is about four and a half miles from the former.

Nothing had been seen or heard of the *Rover* here, and after a few hours' stay, the yacht steamed to Manhii and Ahii. At the latter, rather unexpectedly, they obtained information which decided them to proceed to Tahiti without loss of time, and so their course was laid for that famous island.

CHAPTER XIX.

THE GILBERT ISLANDS.

“**W**HAT islands shall we see now, before we reach Tahiti?” asked Eugene, when they were fairly under way, and the Captain had joined his guests on the quarter-deck.

“We shall round the north side of Nairsa, or Dean’s Island,” was the answer; “and while we shall doubtless see many small islands on either hand, it is hardly likely we shall get a view of any other of importance.”

“I had hoped we might visit the Gambers, and the Gloucester group,” said Eugene.

“Both worth a visit, without doubt,” rejoined the Captain; “but we are hardly likely to see them during this cruise.”

“Captain, have you ever been among the Gilbert Islands—the Kingsmill or Ellice’s groups?” asked Chester.

“Never,” was the reply.

“I don’t remember much about the Ellice’s group,” said Eugene. “It is not of any very great importance, is it?”

“It is an extensive ring of small islets, situated on a coral reef, surrounding a lagoon. These are so far separated as to give the idea of distinct islands, which has probably led to their having the name of ‘group.’ These islets are well covered with cocoanut and other trees, which give them a sufficient elevation to be seen at ten or twelve miles’ distance. I am able to tell you so much,” said Chester, “but very little more.”

"You might have added, however," suggested the Professor, "that the reef which links the islets is a wash, over which the sea breaks with great violence."

"How large is the island?" asked Eugene.

"It is thirteen miles long and between seven and eight wide," answered the Professor.

"Can you tell us anything about the islanders?"

"Very little. They speak a purely Polynesian dialect, and understand the Samoan language. They call the island Fanafute."

"How many do they number?"

"Not three hundred; possibly less than two hundred and fifty."

"There are other groups in the immediate vicinity," remarked Chester.

"Yes," assented the Professor, "only three and a half miles to the northwest are the De Pyster Islands, and a few miles further, Tracy's Island, which the natives call Oaitupu."

"Yes," added the Captain, "and a little east of these is the Union group, of which Oatafu, Nukunono, and Fakaafu are the principal islands."

"And now about the Gilbert group," said Chester; "can't you or the Professor tell us something concerning that?"

"I can tell you this much," replied the Captain; "the islanders of the Gilbert or Kingsmill group are a pack of arrant thieves, and a blood-thirsty set of savages."

"What, to this day?"

"Aye, to this day?"

"Professor, were you aware of the fact?"

"Yes, unfortunately, it is but too true," was the reply. "In a recent publication, the Rev. Hiram Bingham, Jr., who is a missionary to Micronesia, and long stationed on Apaiang, says: 'We had hardly been in our new home

three months, when a party of Gilbert Islanders from Tarawa, not far off, made an attack upon our people in a fleet of one hundred proas. Our king assembled his army about our house to await the onset, as the other party seemed to be coming directly towards us. They changed their course, however, and the battle was fought some six miles away. The king who had befriended us when we landed, was killed, but his people were victorious.

“‘Next morning I visited the battle-ground; and there I saw among the dead six women, who had helped their husbands in the fight. We were very sorry that so many had been killed; but we were thankful that the savages had been driven off; for it is quite possible that they might have slain us, and taken possession of our little house.’

“Then, speaking of the Gilbert Island warriors, he says: ‘Formerly this people had no guns, but fought with clubs and spears; and even now they like to take their old weapons into battle with them, to use when their powder is gone. Some of the spears are armed with sharks’ teeth, and are almost twenty feet long. To protect themselves they have a kind of armor, made of cocoanut fiber-cord. A part of this resembles a great-coat; and it comes up behind their heads, to shield them from behind, or when they run. They also make coverings for their legs, arms, and head, of the same material, and still another covering for the head, of the skin of the porcupine-fish.’

“Well, I am astonished,” exclaimed Eugene; “they are truly a blood-thirsty, war-loving lot; apparently not one whit better than they were years ago in Wilkes’s time.”

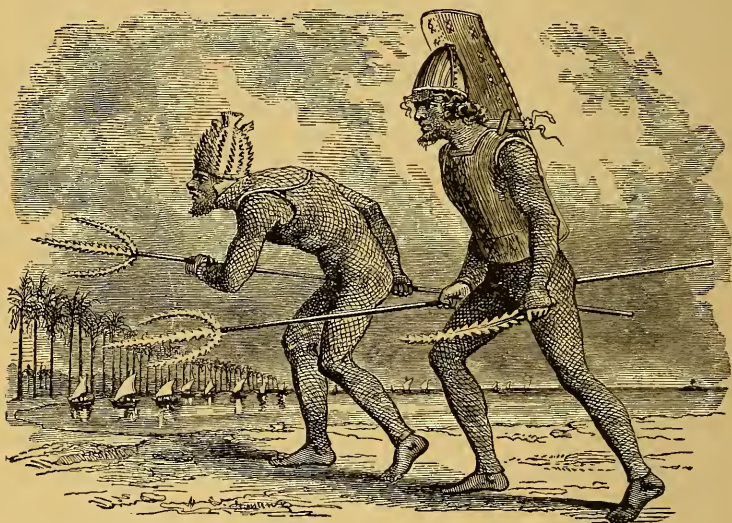
“Not much, I fear,” assented the Professor.

“But wait!” exclaimed Chester. “Isn’t Apaiang one of the Gilbert Islands?”

"Yes," answered the Professor, slowly; "it is in the northwestern part of the group."

"Then," said Chester, "the fact that an American missionary is stationed there, proves that all the Gilbert Islanders are not thoroughly bad."

"Of course there are exceptions," said the Captain; "and possibly a few of the natives of Apaiang come under that head."



GILBERT ISLAND WARRIORS.

"Possibly? Why, you know how kindly Mr. Bingham was received on the island, and defended afterwards, and it stands to reason he must have done some good there."

"I don't know much about it," said Eugene; "if you do, I beg you will enlighten us."

"Well," rejoined his brother, taking up a little paper-bound book, "he says: 'It was on the 13th of November that I climbed almost to the top of the mast, and caught the first sight of what proved to be, for so many

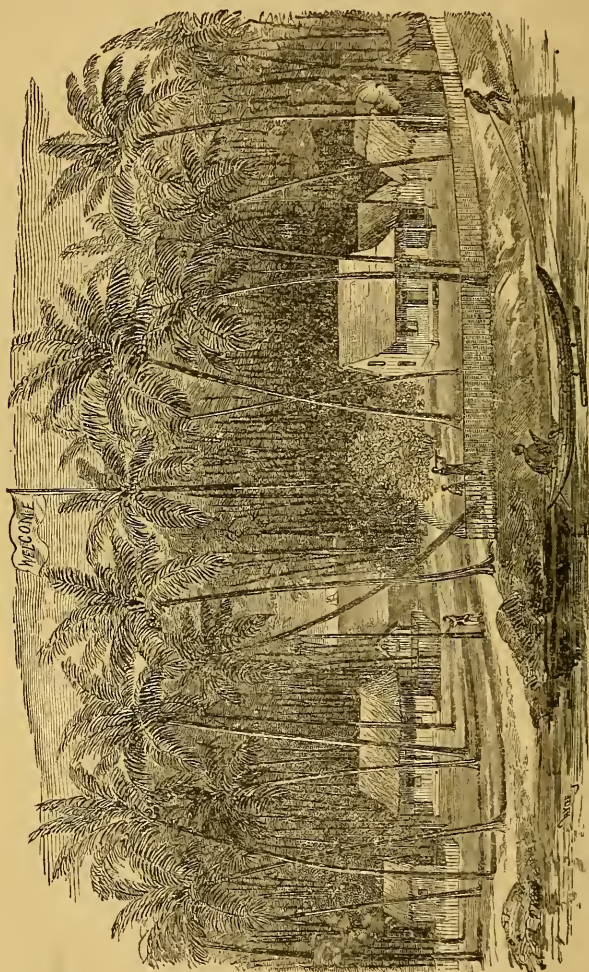
years, our island-home. It was Apaiang, a low coral reef, some fifty miles in circumference, enclosing one of those great lagoons which I have already described. The highest parts of the reef were only a few feet above the ocean; but on these were many cocoanut and pandanus trees. The lowest parts were covered with water at high tide. The lagoon was about eighteen miles long, six wide, and one hundred feet deep. The land surrounding it did not average more than a quarter of a mile in width; but on this narrow strip, such as it was, were many villages.

“We landed first on an islet, belonging to the western side, where the reef is lowest. There we found a solitary old man, walking among the trees. He was the first Gilbert Islander to receive the missionaries, who had come to live among his people! On the 17th of November the *Morning Star* entered the beautiful lagoon, and came to anchor near Koinawa, the king's village, on the eastern side.

“Next morning the king, at our request, came on board, and, learning something of our wishes from the Gilbert Islanders with us, he seemed pleased; and, putting his hand on me, and on my lumber, he pointed to the shore. I took the hint, and the next day began to build. The house was twenty-four feet by sixteen, and though we took time to shingle it, much to the wonder of the natives, in less than two weeks it had been made so comfortable as to be ready for housekeeping. We afterwards painted it white, except the blinds, which were green, and put on piazzas. We called it ‘Happy Home.’”

“Here is a picture of the station,” said Chester, showing the illustration, “this is ‘Happy Home’ on the right. On the left is the house of the missionary's Hawaiian companion, Kanoa. It is something like the other, but

made chiefly of cocoanut wood, with pandanus thatch for roofing. These buildings at the right of 'Happy Home' are the kitchens. Back of Kanoa's house is the school-



MISSION STATION AT APAIANG.

house, where the children were taught by Mrs. Bingham and her assistant, Kaholo."

"Do the houses front toward the sea?" asked Eugene.

"No," replied his brother, "the water you see in the foreground is a part of the lagoon. You can just catch a glimpse of the sea through the opening past the school-house."

"I see; go on."

"Well, Mr. Bingham and his companions began at once to learn the language, but found it slow work. However, they persevered, and after a time were able to make themselves understood, and then they began to preach. They would go from one village to another around the lagoon in their boat, in which they also took their provisions.

"'A crowd of naked men, boys, and girls,' the missionary says, 'meet us as we land; and we go directly to the *maneaba* of the village. The people throng about us; and we try to teach them. As we close our eyes for prayer, one and another shout to those near them, "*Matu, matu!*" ("Go to sleep, go to sleep!") meaning, "Shut your eyes." After a general commotion, in which some bow their faces to the ground, the prayer is offered. At its close, as the missionary opens his eyes, a number begin to shout "*Uti, uti!*" ("Wake up, wake up!") and, with a burst of laughter, these rude worshipers sit up again.

"'I begin to preach,' he continues, 'but the leading man of the village may break in upon me, by asking if I will not take a pipe. "I never smoke," is the answer. Next, he may offer me some molasses and water to drink, or the milk of a green cocoanut. Sometimes we tell them that we have not come to eat and drink, but to teach them. It is often better, however, to stop preaching, and drink from the cocoanut, and then go on again. After the service we often look up the blind and sick of the village, and teach them in their own houses.

“‘We go to the next village. Perhaps we find the *maneaba* pre-occupied. A man has died, and his body has been brought to the big house, and is laid out in state. Women sit by it, day after day, even for weeks.’”

“Good gracious!” exclaimed Eugene, “and in such a hot climate, too! But, poor creatures, I suppose they feel bound to do it.”

“Yes,” returned his brother, “and Bingham says: ‘Most of the time the body is covered with a mat; and frequently beneath the same mat lies the dead man’s wife, grieving over her loss. When at length the corpse is about to be buried, the wife often keeps his skull, and makes it her constant companion.’”

“That’s an idea!” exclaimed Eugene. “But where do they bury the body at last?”

“‘A man is generally buried under his own house,’ the missionary says, ‘and only a few inches below the surface of the ground; for the people think that if there should be room for another corpse above him, there would soon *be* another to fill the place. Sometimes, however, bodies are rolled up in mats, and laid away in a loft of the house.’”

“‘When we find the *maneaba* thus occupied,’ he goes on to say, ‘the friends of the deceased are usually willing to listen to me while I urge them to prepare for death. But sometimes we find the people assembled for a feast. If they have only cocoanut milk to drink, or cocoanut molasses and water, they are generally willing to hear me speak of the land where men never hunger; and yet they may be very desirous to know what kind of food they may expect there.’”

“‘If the people are drinking *mang’ing* (fermented toddy), some of them may be very noisy, and interrupt us while we preach to them of temperance. When they are intoxicated, they often quarrel, and kill one another;

sometimes they stab themselves. When the toddy is first obtained from the bud of the cocoanut, which is cut twice a day, it is pleasant and wholesome. But if it is allowed to stand three or four days, it ferments and becomes hurtful. A great deal of it, nevertheless, is drunk in the Gilbert Islands; and they need missionaries to teach them better.

“When night overtakes us, we spread our mats on the ground, hang up our mosquito netting in some native house, and lie down to sleep. In the morning, perhaps, while we are eating the food which we have brought, the people will crowd around us, saying, “*Kamai teutana*” (“Give me a little piece”). If we refuse them, they may call us “*bataoti*” (stingy). But we could not give all of them even a little piece; if we should, our supply would soon be gone.

“After several days have been spent in this way, the tour is completed, and we spread our sail for the white cottage among the cocoanut trees. As we cross the lagoon, we enjoy an hour of rest, which is very refreshing.”

“At length they built a small church, and had regular services. Here is a picture of the building as it appeared on Sunday mornings. They could not boast of a bell, so you see Kanoa is blowing a conch-shell to call the people to meeting.

“This, I suppose,” said Eugene, inquiringly, “is the missionary and his wife?” at the same time indicating two figures in European dress.

“Yes,” was the reply; “and Kanoa’s wife and boy are just behind them.”

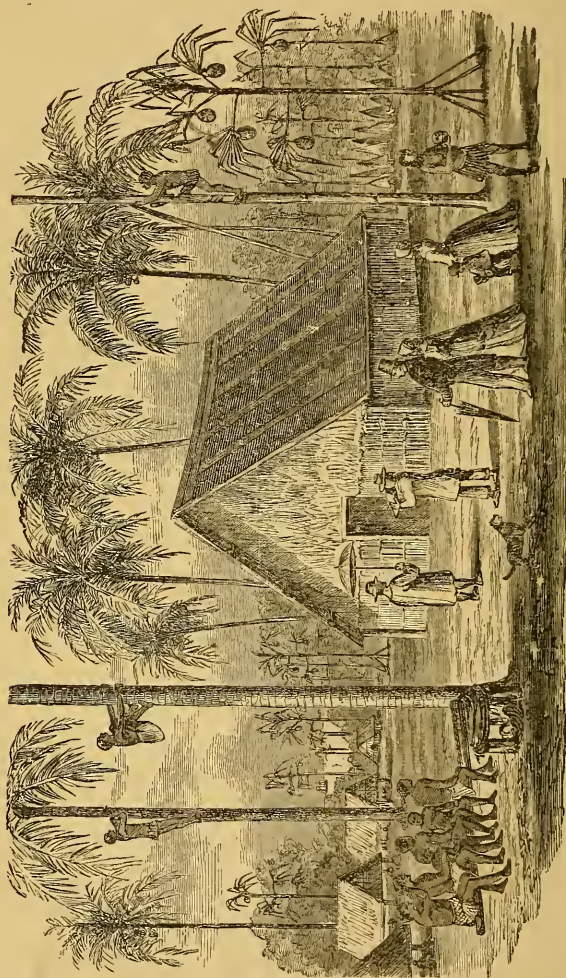
“And who is this gentleman, dressed out so elaborately in a shirt, hat, and umbrella?”

“That, my dear brother,” laughed Chester, “is the all-powerful king.”

“Bless his august majesty! And who is this sweet

girl, so airily attired in a feather apron and a human skull?"

"Girl! That's a native widow, on her way to visit



SUNDAY MORNING ON APAIANG.

her friends in a neighboring village. The skull was her husband's, and, therefore, as you heard a few moments ago, she always has it with her."

"Gracious, what queer taste!" murmured Eugene.

"What are these people doing on the stick of timber under the tree?" asked the Captain.

"They are pressing scraped cocoanuts in an oil-press, to get the oil to barter with."

"And now," continued Chester, "I want you to notice — particularly, Eugene — the three men who are climbing cocoanut trees in as many different ways. I'll give the explanation about as I get it from the missionary: The one at the right has notches cut in his tree, large enough to hold the second joint of the great toe. He is going after his toddy, which the islanders use instead of milk, as, of course, they have no cows or goats. The man in the middle walks up the tree in a wonderful way. If one of his hands should slip, he would fall, and most likely break his neck. The man at the left has his feet tied together, a few inches apart; and while he holds himself away from the tree by pushing off with one arm, and clasping the other round the trunk, he draws up his feet, which easily cling to the tree by the help of the cord which binds them together; and then he straightens himself up again. This, you remember, is the way they climb the trees in the Marquesas."

"Which is the most difficult way of climbing?" asked Eugene.

"The second," was the reply.

"This queer tree on the right is a pandanus, of course."

"Yes; you see its roots grow out of the trunk, and run off into the ground."

"The fruit is perfectly immense."

"You are right; they sometimes weigh forty or fifty pounds. When they are ripe, you can pull them to pieces, each piece being a separate conical seed some three inches long, the small end of which is fibrous, and contains a sweet juice. This end is chewed, and the juice is sucked out."

"What are these great leaves, back of the chapel, apparently coming up out of a pit?" asked Eugene.

"They are papai leaves; you might take them for giant calla-leaves. The papai is a root which grows in the mud, and is sometimes as large as a half-barrel. The natives eat it as a great luxury."

"These houses on the left are the residences of the natives, I suppose, and built after the usual style?"

"Yes; and as you see, they have no sides, and the eaves are very low. One must stoop to enter them, but once inside he can see what the people are doing in the next house, and so on, through the village."

"What is this little hut in the distance?"

"A kitchen where poor old women are compelled to do the cooking, half-smothered by the smoke."

"Well, what more have you to tell us about your missionary?"

"After he had been on the island about a year, a first-class surf-boat was sent him, which he called the *Star of Peace*. He now resolved to visit the neighboring islands, especially Marakei and Maiana. He had been to Tarawa, the largest island in the group, in his small boat, the *Alfred*, having been towed by one of the great war-proas, which was bearing presents from the king of Apaiang to a high chief, whose two sons had been recently betrothed to two of the king's daughters. The other islands, however, he could not reach. One of them he could see from the top of the cocoanut trees near his house; but the ocean channel was more than twenty miles wide, and the current so swift as to make it very unsafe to venture across in the *Alfred*. The new surf-boat, then, was exactly what he wanted.

"He went first to Tarawa, where he left Mrs. Bingham, and then to Maiana. On his return from the latter, he had a much harder time than he expected. The wind

was favorable when he started, but it changed afterwards, and they were at the mercy of a current which was very strong. At sundown, Tarawa bore due east, about twelve miles. The wind lulled, but the sea was rough, and they were fast drifting to the westward. That was a fearful hour! No land to the leeward for more than two hundred miles! At length, however, by dint of hard rowing, they got into stiller water, under the lee of Tarawa, and a little after midnight, they made out to reach the island. They were thankful enough, as you may well believe, for their escape from so great a danger.

"They had sometimes seen Marakei from the top of a cocoanut tree, and they longed to visit the island. Even as good a boat as the *Star of Peace* can seldom cross thither; but one day everything seemed favorable, and the missionary and his assistant were soon under way. All went well for a time; but about three o'clock in the afternoon a fearful squall approached. As they were out on a wide sea, anxious to reach, before dark, a strange island, with no ship channel to its lagoon, Captain Bingham kept on sail to the last moment, bidding one of his men 'stand by the halyards,' and let them go at an instant's warning.

"At length he could venture no longer. They lowered and furled their sails, and had hardly seated themselves, when the tempest burst upon them with tremendous fury. As soon as it abated, they reefed their mainsail, and, hoisting it a little, pressed on. The sea was beginning to run wildly, and the large billows raised their white crests around them. The little craft had experienced no such sea as that. Suddenly a towering wave burst upon them, drenching them from stem to stern. Blinded by the spray, the missionary captain was bewildered—almost stunned. Still the little craft kept afloat, but the frightened crew turned to him as if to read their fate in his face.

“‘Just at dark,’ he says, ‘it being difficult to distinguish people on the shore, we found ourselves off a narrow break in the cocoanut and pandanus trees. This was the so-called boat channel, a fearful place, with billows dashing their foam against the rocks. I trembled to enter, and would not venture myself at the helm, lest I should not understand the rapid commands of the pilot, but put my old teacher at that post, and took his oar. For a moment we paused, as the billows began to lift their crests before breaking. Two large ones passed, and we sprang to our oars. In the darkness, our pilot had “headed in” a little too soon, and in order to enter a gap between the rocks, not forty feet wide, was obliged to slant our course a little,—a most perilous feat! For an instant death seemed staring me in the face. Swimmer that I was, should we swamp, the chances for my escape were exceedingly small, as I was not accustomed to surf-swimming. But the blessed Master was with us. A small wave took us upon its crest, and we were hurried through this narrow vortex in a moment’s time.

“‘But what a sight greeted our eyes the next morning! We found ourselves upon one of the loveliest of all the coral islands. About six miles in length, from one to three in width, and enclosing a placid lagoon on all sides by wooded land, with fairy-like islets here and there, it lay spread out before us. The Gospel light for the first time now beamed upon it. We preached in all its villages; and more than a thousand souls heard of the way of life.

“‘In passing out of this lagoon, there was quite as much peril as there had been in passing in. But I will not describe the scene. Possibly you may think that my zeal for ocean touring in an open boat was by this time slightly cooled, or, at least, that it ought to have been. But it is hard to see a populous island without the Gospel, and not do anything for it.’

“In due time he received a much larger boat—the *Evening Star*; and in this he and his assistants visited other islands, preaching in all their *maneabas*, to large and curious audiences, for all wished to see and hear the *I-matang* (foreigners).

“Not long after this he set up a printing-press at Apaiang; and after some little trouble and delay, the Gospel of Matthew was printed in the Gilbert Island language, as were several other books, and a hymn-book was printed in the same language at Honolulu.

“He received a bright Gilbert Island boy into his family, to educate; and tells of taking him to Ebon, Kusaie, and Ponape.

“‘He thought the Marshall Islanders hideous-looking people,’ he says, ‘with their great ear-rings and knotted hair. Their language he called “jabber.” His wonder at the mountains of Kusaie (for he had never seen so much as a hill before) was very great. I rambled with him through the woods and by the running streams, of which there are none in the Gilbert Islands; and together we climbed, with great difficulty, to the top of the highest mountain. The story of this ascent he never wearied in telling his people, after his return.

“‘One night we heard loud crying; and we supposed it to come from some heathen child. The next morning Joseph, or, as it is written in his language, Ióteba, told us that he had dreamed of seeing a savage cut off my head; and, as he awoke, the dream seemed so real, that he arose, left his little house, and sat under the cocoanut trees at the dead of night, to give vent to his sorrow.

“‘He often went with me on my tours to assist in telling the people about Jesus; and they always liked to hear him. His help, too, in translating portions of the New Testament, was very great. He once visited Butaritari and Makin, islands where I had never preached,

and, gathering many of the people together, told them the great news of salvation through Jesus Christ. The journal which he kept was very interesting. After a time a white man gave him some liquor, and he became intoxicated. From that day he left us; perhaps he is still wandering.’”

“There it is again,” exclaimed the Captain, impatiently: “that omnipresent curse, rum! See what it has done for this poor fellow.”

“Yes,” said Eugene; “and what a fiend the man must have been who gave it to him.”

“There are plenty of just such men,” rejoined the Captain; “they are to be found everywhere.”

“Unfortunately that is too true,” commented the Professor. Then turning to Chester: “Well, have you anything more to tell us?”

“Only this,” was the reply: “After long years of weary labor, during which he saw the good work growing under his hand, Mr. Bingham, on account of ill health, was obliged to leave the Gilbert Islands. It was arranged, however, that he should go down yearly to the group, to give counsel and assistance, but spend the rest of the year at Honolulu, translating the Bible and preparing other books for the natives, and I think he is engaged in that work now.”

“Do you see this little pamphlet?” asked the Professor, holding up a small paper-covered book for their inspection. “Well, Chester has told you something of Mr. Bingham’s indefatigable and self-sacrificing labors among the Gilbert Islanders, and here the Rev. Robert W. Logan gives us a sequel to the story. You will notice the pamphlet is of recent date, so it gives us the present status of the islands and people.

“‘The Gilbert Islands,’ says Mr. Logan, ‘lie on both sides of the equator and a little beyond the 180th merid-

ian. They are sixteen in number, with a thin soil, scanty rainfall, and limited vegetation. The cocoanut-palm thrives here, as well as the *pandanus* or screw-pine; but almost nothing else which can furnish food for human beings. Advocates of a meager diet, as conducive to health, might do well to emigrate to the Gilbert Islands. If they survive the experiment, their testimony will be interesting; possibly, however, a little "thin." The same language is spoken on all of these islands. The people are naturally hardy, savage, and quarrelsome. They wear very little clothing, and men were frequently seen entirely naked. The bodies of the men are often covered with scars, and no dandy is more proud of his rings and jewels than are these men of the unsightly scars which indicate their prowess. While not cannibals in the same sense as were the Fiji Islanders, yet it said that on some of the islands there is probably not an adult male who has not tasted human flesh.'"

"Good heavens!" murmured Chester, with a sigh.

"And mind you, my dear friend," said the Captain, impressively, "this is n't written of twenty years ago, but of to-day."

"Exactly," acquiesced the Professor, and then continued:

"The only water fit to drink on all coral islands is rain-water. Missionaries living on the Gilbert Islands are obliged to depend almost entirely upon foreign food, which is never perfectly fresh, and always preserved with difficulty. Rev. Hiram Bingham, Jr., with his devoted wife, began work here in 1857, and labored on alone, with their Hawaiian helpers, until 1874. Frequently they were obliged, in self-preservation, to flee for a season to a more salubrious clime; until, at last, utterly broken in health, they were compelled to take up their residence at Honolulu, where they still continue their labors of

love among Gilbert Islanders who have been brought to Hawaii as laborers. The days of martyrs and heroes of faith are not yet past.’”

“So he *is* still at Honolulu?” said Chester, inquiringly.

“So it would seem,” answered the Professor, and then continued :

“‘Rev. H. J. Taylor, son of “Father Taylor” of the Madura Mission,—like Mr. Bingham, born in the mission-field,—went with his young wife to the Gilbert Islands, in 1874, to reënforce Mr. Bingham; but before she had been on Apaiang six weeks, Mrs. Taylor died of fever, and was buried under the cocoanut-palms. A few months later Mr. Bingham was obliged to flee for his life to Samoa, and then to Auckland. Mr. Taylor was left alone with his infant son. He acquired the language, won the confidence of the natives, and labored most effectively for two years, when he, too, was compelled to flee for his life. After some years spent in America,—having recovered his health, and married again,—he returned to the field with Rev. A. C. Walkup and wife, only to lay his second wife beside her sister. And now, with his three motherless children, he is compelled to retire from the work. Mrs. Walkup’s life was only saved by her going to Kusaie, and ultimately to her old home in Kansas. Hence the board has been constrained reluctantly to withdraw its missionaries from the Gilbert Islands, taking them seven hundred miles to Kusaie, a high, fertile island, the easternmost of the Caroline group. Here, also, the Gilbert Island youth will be brought, and, amid beautiful surroundings and in a much more salubrious climate, will be trained to carry on the work among their people, in connection with Hawaiian missionaries.’”

“And so now there is not a white missionary in all the Gilbert Islands!” exclaimed Chester, “and the benighted savages are left to the sole efforts of Hawaiian missionaries and native teachers.”

"Quite right, Chester; but here is something more than a grain of comfort for you," and the Professor read:

"The lives of the missionaries on the Gilbert Islands have often been in danger; they have sown in tears and with long waiting; but their labors and sacrifices have not been in vain in the Lord. The *Morning Star*, on her last trip, found three hundred candidates for baptism on one island, two hundred on another, while on a third, an island where a few years ago even the *Morning Star's* boat dare not land, the people were found anxious to be taught."

"Ah, that's something like it!" exclaimed Chester; "and you see, spite of all that has been said, the good work is going on there. The missionaries have not suffered and died in vain; and I confidently predict that the time will come—sooner, perhaps, than we think—when this people shall issue out of darkness into God's own marvelous light."

"Heaven grant it may be so," said the Professor, reverently.

"I say amen to that," cried the Captain, heartily. Then, after a moment's silence: "When I said what I did in the first place about the Gilbert Islands, Chester, I had not the northern cluster so much in mind as the southern. This large group or archipelago, you must understand, has many names. It is called the Gilbert group, Scarborough's Archipelago, and the Kingsmill group; and sometimes the Zarawa Islands. Then, too, some authorities call the whole group Scarborough's Archipelago, and confine the name Gilbert to the northern cluster and Kingsmill to the southern, while others make two distinct groups of the islands. Now, while the people of the northern-cluster are all that has been claimed for them, they are not half as bad as the natives of the southern or Kingsmill Islands, whom, as I said

before, I particularly had in mind, and of whom I never yet knew anyone to say a good word, unless, perhaps, it was of the inhabitants of one small island."

"And what island was that, Captain?" asked Eugene.

"Makin or Pitt Island," was the answer.

"Tell us something about this southern cluster, if you please," said Chester.

"It consists of some sixteen coral islands," began the Captain, "all lying very low, so that they might easily escape the attention of voyagers. As is always the case with coral islands, the navigation among them is extremely dangerous. They are mostly long in proportion to their width, the largest of the group, called Taputeonea by the natives, but better known as Drummond Island, being much more than thirty miles long, and only from a half to three-quarters of a mile wide. The natives of these islands, as I have already said, have a character for ferocity such as is not often found among Polynesians. They are much darker than the inhabitants of the groups to the south of them, and of more moderate stature. They are well made and slender, and have black and glossy hair. While their mouths are large, there is nothing of the negro character about them, and the teeth are always white. They wear beards and mustaches, the hair of which is fine.

"I spoke of the Makin Islanders. It is a little remarkable that these people are not only less warlike than their neighbors, but are also of a lighter complexion, approaching in this respect the inhabitants of Samoa."

"How do you account for it, Captain?" asked Eugene.

"I can only account for it in one way," was the reply. "Sometime in the past, a party of Samoans or Tongans must have been blown out of their course by a gale, landed on the island, and gradually absorbed in the community; and what is to be seen now is the result."

A VILLAGE IN THE KINGSMILL GROUP.



"Are the dwellings in this cluster like those in the northern?" asked Chester.

"Their houses," replied the Captain, "vary much in size and form according to their uses, and are rather distinguished for strength and massiveness than for beauty. The ordinary dwelling consists of two stories, the upper part being used as a sleeping-place, and the lower entirely open. Some of the buildings wherein the chiefs sit and talk together and receive visitors are poor affairs, being nothing more than roofs supported by posts. As in the northern cluster, there is in every village a *maneaba*, in which the people assemble on stated occasions. It is of enormous size, having a lofty roof thatched with pandanus leaves and lined with matting."

"As they do not seem to display any great degree of taste in architecture, to what do they bend their energies and devote their artistic powers?"

"War and weapons of war. Their swords and spears are curious and blood-thirsty looking objects, being liberally armed with sharks' teeth, which are carefully fastened to the edges of the former and sides of the latter."

"How about dress?" asked Eugene.

"It varies according to the particular island," was the answer. "Principally they use mats made of the pandanus leaf cut into narrow strips, and dyed brown and yellow. These strips are plaited together in an ingenious fashion so as to form neat patterns. A cape, with a slit in the middle, through which the head passes, is worn over the neck, and a curious high cap of pandanus-leaf covers the head. But in battle the chiefs wear a cap made of the porcupine fish, like those of the other group, and upon this is fixed a bunch of feathers. The dress of the women merely consists of a skirt of stripped leaves, reaching from the waist nearly to the knees, and fastened by a cord, often six hundred feet in length, made

of human hair. On the cord are strung alternately beads made of shells and cocoanut."

"Is it true that the women fight, as well as the men?" asked Chester.

"Yes," was the reply; "both sexes go into battle, and both are killed indiscriminately; and for that matter, even the children are slaughtered as well as their elders."

"They are a war-loving people, that's a fact," observed Eugene.

"Why, it's their chief business, it's all they think of; and when they are not at it themselves, which is n't often, they must see something else engaged in mortal combat, and so they take great delight in cock-fighting, no other amusement affords them half the pleasure."

"I haven't heard you mention their kings," said Chester, suggestively.

"There is only one king in the cluster," replied the Captain; "and he lives on Apamama, and reigns over that island, together with Nanouki and Korio. On the other islands the government is carried on by a council of chiefs, the eldest taking the first place, and the others being reckoned by seniority. Of course every island has its own council."

"In their own districts, these chiefs, I suppose, are independent?" said Chester, inquiringly.

"Yes, and they possess certain powers and privileges that are recognized and respected everywhere by their fellow chiefs. Each one has a mark peculiar to himself, and when a stranger places himself under the protection of a chief, he receives the mark of his protector. This is very simple, and consists of a patch of paint on the forehead, and a stripe down the middle of the face as far as the chin."

"Who come next in rank to the chiefs?" asked Eugene.

"The land-holders," was the reply; "and after them come the slaves, the third and last division of the people."

"I suppose such ferocious fellows must be cannibals?" said Eugene, confidently.

"Hardly," rejoined the captain. "It is quite true though that in some instances portions of a human body have been eaten. For instance, if a celebrated warrior is killed, the victors sometimes cook the body, and each eats a small portion of it. This however is done, not from a craving for human flesh, but from a feeling of revenge, and because they think that those who partake of it receive a portion of the courage which once animated the body. They often, too, preserve the skulls of such warriors, and use them as drinking cups.

"The skulls of the dead are always preserved by their friends, as in the northern cluster, provided they have died natural deaths, or their bodies have been recovered in battle. The corpse is first laid out on mats for eight days, being washed, oiled, and placed in the sunshine at noon every day, while the friends mourn, dance, and sing praises of the dead. The body is then buried for some weeks, after which the skull is removed, cleaned, oiled, and put in a place of safety. Occasionally they bring the skulls out, and after oiling them afresh, wreath them with flowers, and set food before them. When a family removes to another village, they take the skulls with them.

"On Makin there exists the most extraordinary funeral ceremony in the world. The body is treated in the manner already described; but after the first day's wailing, it is laid on a new mat spread over a great tray made of tortoise-shell sewed together. A number of persons seat themselves opposite each other on the floor of the house, and support the tray on their knees as long as

they are able. When they are tired, they are relieved by others, and thus the body is borne by friends and relatives for two years, the bearers relieving each other at intervals."

"Good gracious!" exclaimed Eugene; "and what happens then?"

"Why, when the two years have expired, the head is removed, and the skull cleaned and preserved, as in the other islands. The bones are then wrapped up in mats and buried. The place where a warrior has been interred is always marked with three stones."

"Captain," said the second mate, who had been waiting some minutes for a chance to get in a word, "Mr. Morgan would like to see you in the engine-room, if not too much trouble."

"Certainly," responded the Captain, starting to his feet; "excuse me, my friends," and he hurried forward, closely followed by Seth Cook.

This interruption broke up the party for the day.

CHAPTER XX.

THE KINGSMILLS AND OTHER CORAL ISLANDS.

“**I** FIND,” said Chester the next morning, as he joined his friends in their accustomed place, and took possession of the seat which his brother considerately pushed toward him, “I find that Dana has something to say of the islands which the Captain told us so much about yesterday; and he gives one some new ideas.”

“Then by all means let us hear him,” exclaimed Captain Bradford, in his heartiest manner.

“I thought of Dana myself yesterday, and of Wilkes too,” said the Professor; “but it seemed to me that the Captain had about exhausted the subject. However, if there is anything that has n’t been brought to our attention, I join with him in calling for it.”

“And I add my humble entreaties to the others,” chimed in Eugene.

“Well, then,” began Chester, as he opened the book and found the place, “he first mentions Taputeonea or Drummond Island, and speaks of the village of Utiroa; then, after alluding to the great *Maneaba* and giving its dimensions, he goes on to say: ‘This island, unlike the Duke of York’s, was densely peopled, and, owing apparently to the scant supply of fish and vegetables thus occasioned, many of the natives were afflicted with leprosy, and also had bad teeth, both circumstances unusual for the Pacific.’”

“Bad teeth, eh?” exclaimed Eugene; “that does n’t hardly agree with what you said yesterday, Captain.”

"He is speaking of a single island now," returned the Captain, "I referred to the islands collectively. As a general thing, I think the people of the Kingsmill group have good teeth."

"All right; go on Chester," and his brother resumed:

"Lean in body and savage in look and gesture, they strangely contrasted with their fat, jolly kinsmen on some of the more northern islands of the same group. An old fat chief who came from one of these islands to the ship's side in his canoe was actually too large to have reached the deck except by the use of a tackle. It was evident that infanticide—a necessity according to their system of political economy—was more thoroughly practiced than on Drummond Island, and that the population was thus kept from becoming uncomfortably numerous. The obesity was probably owing to their having nothing to do, and plenty, in the vegetable way, to eat; for their somewhat elevated equatorial islands, as elsewhere observed, are unusually productive for atolls—just the place for a voluptuous barbarian.

"The people on Drummond Island were great thieves, and knew the pleasure of a cannibal feast,—"

"There it is again, Captain!" broke in Eugene. "He says they knew the *pleasures* of a cannibal feast; you said they ate very little human flesh, and led us to infer that they took no pleasure in it."

"If Professor Dana really thinks the Gilbert Islanders are, or have ever been, cannibals, in a greater degree than I stated yesterday, I am sure he is mistaken," replied the Captain, with much earnestness.

"What do you say, Professor?" asked Eugene, turning to the palæontologist.

"I think it's very like the matter of the teeth," was the answer. "On some of the islands there may have been cannibals, and Drummond may have been one of them."

"That's it, without doubt. Go on, Chester."

"He next mentions the weapons the Captain told us about," explained his brother. 'Without metals, or any kind of hard stone,' he says, 'they make, out of the teeth of the sharks caught about the reefs, a sharp, jagged edging for long knives, swords, and spears; and the women, jealous of one another, sometimes, as Mr. Hale says, carry about with them for months a small weapon of shark's teeth concealed under their dress, watching for an opportunity to use it; and desperate fights sometimes take place. The same author mentions, also, some good points in them; observing that the women are, for the most part, better treated than is common among uncivilized people; that the men do the hard out-door work, while the women clear and weed the ground, and attend to the domestic duties that naturally fall to them. "Custom also requires that when a man meets a female he shall pay her the same mark of respect that is rendered to a chief, by turning aside to let her pass" — a rule that probably does not always hold in practice. He adds: "The word *manda* signifies, among the Gilbert Islanders, a man thoroughly accomplished in all their knowledge and arts, and versed in every noble exercise; a good dancer, an able warrior, one who has seen life at home and abroad, and enjoyed its highest excitements and delights; in short, a complete man of the world. In their estimation, this is the proudest character to which any person can attain; and such a one is fully prepared to enter, at his death, on the highest enjoyments of their elysium."

"Thus much for the human productions of coral islands.

"Although the vegetation of coral islands has the luxuriance that characterizes more favored tropical lands, the number of species of land plants is small."

"Do n't give them," said Eugene, hastily; "just tell us the number."

"Twenty-eight or thirty species."

"Well, what comes next?"

"Something in praise of the cocoanut palm."

"Good; let's hear it."

"We have had something on the same subject before."

"Not from him. We'll hear this."

"Very well," said Chester, as the others assented. "The cocoanut," he remarks, 'in view of its uses, is a dozen trees in one. Its trunk furnishes timber for the houses of the natives, and the best of wood, on account of its weight and strength, for clubs and spears — weapons much in use — besides serving as ornamental side-arms. Its leaves supply material for thatching; for coarse matting to sit on, and beautiful fine mats for use in the way of occasional dress; also for the short aprons or petticoats of the women, above alluded to. The fruit, besides its delicately-flavored hollow kernel, affords, by the grating of the kernel, a milky juice, that is richer than cream for purposes of native cookery, and which we explorers often used with satisfaction in coffee, cows being unknown in those regions; also, from each nut, a pint of the thinner "cocoanut milk" — a more agreeable drink in the land of cocoanuts than in New York; also, an abundant oil, much valued for sleeking down their naked bodies, and sometimes offered to a friendly visitor whom they would honor with a like anointing. Further, from the young fruit, three-fourths grown, comes a delightful beverage, as brisk nearly as soda-water, besides a rich creamy pulp; both of these far better than the corresponding products of the ripe fruit. The husk is excellent for cordage, twine, thread, fishing-lines; and the smaller cord serves in place of nails for securing together the beams of their domestic and public build-



UNDER THE COCOANUT PALMS.

ings, and also for ornamenting the structure within, the cord being often wound with much taste and diversity of figures. The nut is, when opened, a ready-made drinking-cup or cooking utensil. Finally, the developing bud, before blossoming, yields a large supply of sweet juice, from which molasses is sometimes made, and then, by fermentation, a spirituous liquor, called among the Gilbert Islanders by a name that sounded very much like toddy, and possessing qualities that answer to the name; but this is procured at the expense of the fruit, and the good of the tree, and also of the best interests of the natives.’ ”

“ We had something about that when we were considering Apaiang,” remarked Eugene.

“ Yes,” assented the Captain, “ you may be sure the knowledge of toddy is pretty well distributed, not only in every part of the Gilbert group, but throughout Polynesia.”

“ No doubt of that,” said Chester, and then resuming:

“ ‘ It is doubted whether the ocean is ever successful in planting the cocoanut on coral islands. The nut seems to be well fitted for marine transportation, through its thick husk, which serves both as a float and a protection; but there is no known evidence that any island never inhabited has been found supplied with cocoanut trees. The possibility of a successful planting by the waves cannot be denied; but there are so many chances that the floating nut will be kept too long in the water, or be thrown where it cannot germinate, that the probability of a transplanting is exceedingly small.’ ”

“ That’s new to me,” exclaimed Eugene. “ I always supposed there was no doubt about the new coral islands being indebted to the waves for their first cocoanut trees.”

“ It seems there is a good deal of doubt, though—at least, in the mind of the Professor,” laughed his brother.

“So I see. Well, what comes next?”

“The pandanus.”

“We know something about that, already; still we are likely to learn something new, so go on,” and Chester continued:

“Another tree, peculiarly fitted for the region, is the pandanus, or *screw-pine* — well named as far as the syllable *screw* goes, but having nothing of a *pine* in its habit. Its long, sword-like leaves, of the shape and size of those of a large iris, are set spirally on the few awkward branches toward the extremity of each, and make a tree strikingly tropical in character. It grows sometimes to a height of thirty feet. It is well fitted for the poor and shallow soil of a coral island, for as it enlarges and spreads its branches, one prop after another grows out of the trunk and plants itself in the ground; and by this means its base is widened and the growing tree supported. The fruit, a large, ovoidal mass made up of oblong dry seed, diverging from a center, each near two cubic inches in size, affords a sweetish, husky article of food, which, though little better than prepared corn-stalks, admits of being stored away for use when other things fail; and at the Gilbert Islands and others in that part of the ocean, is so employed.

“The pisonia is another of the forest trees, and is one of handsome foliage and large and beautiful flowers, sometimes attaining a height of forty feet, and the trunk twenty in girth.

“Among the species that are earliest in taking root in the emerging coral *débris* over the reef, there are the portulacæ (species of purslane); the *Triumphetta procumbens*, a creeping, yellow-flowering plant of the Tiliaceæ family; the *Tournefortia sericea*, a low, hoary shrub of the family Boraginaceæ; and *Scaevola konigii*, a sub-fleshy sea-shore plant.’

“He now mentions the plants of some other islands. ‘On Rose Island,’ he says, ‘just east of the Navigator group, Dr. C. Pickering, of the Wilkes Exploring Expedition, found only a species of pisonia and of portulacca. This is a small atoll, under water at high tide, excepting two banks, one of which is covered with trees.

“‘In the Marshall group, on the contrary, where the vegetation is more varied, and the islands have probably undergone some elevation since they were made, Chamisso observed fifty-two species of land plants, and in a few instances the banana, taro, and bread-fruit were cultivated. At the elevated coral island, Metia, north of Tahiti, 250 feet above the sea, sugar-cane and bread-fruit and many plants of the Society group occur.’

“He now comes to the important matter of water.”

“There’s enough of that, I should judge,” remarked Eugene, casting a sweeping glance over the boundless waste around them.

“I mean drinking water,” explained his brother.

“Why didn’t you say so, then? Logan says the only water fit to drink on all coral islands is rain-water. What does Dana say?”

“He says: ‘Water is to be found commonly in sufficient quantities for the use of the natives, although the land is so low and flat. They dig wells,’ he says, ‘five to ten feet deep in any part of the dry islets, and generally obtain a constant supply. These wells are sometimes fenced around with special care; and the houses of the villagers, as at Fakaaofo, are often clustered about them. On Aratica (Carlshoff) there is a watering-place 50 feet in diameter, from which vessels of the Wilkes Expedition obtained 390 gallons.’”

“That reminds me,” interposed the Captain, “of the curious place where they procure water on Ocean Island. It is the only place on the island where fresh water can

be had, and is in a large cavern at some distance below the surface of the earth. By reason of a superstitious belief, no one but women are allowed to descend into this cavern; hence the females bring all the water that is required by the natives in cocoanut-shells, as they have no utensils of a larger description. During some seasons of the year the water is very low, and the king places all on short allowance. At such times many suffer greatly for want of it. A captain of my acquaintance, who once visited the island during the dry season, says that the natives came off to his ship in swarms to get water to drink, and so numerous were they that he was obliged to compel them to desist, as he had barely sufficient to last till the end of the cruise."

"Ocean Island — why, that's where they produce so many pumpkins and garden vegetables, isn't it?" asked Eugene.

"Yes," answered the Captain; "formerly they raised vast quantities, and carried on an extensive trade with passing ships — especially whalers. The pumpkins, however, were, in reality, what New Englanders call the crooked-neck squash."

"I have heard that the island is very beautiful," said Chester.

"It is the most beautiful in the group," rejoined the Captain; "and there are few more beautiful in all the Pacific. The land is moderately high, and presents a very even surface."

"But you see," remarked the Professor, "that they do sometimes suffer for the want of water on these islands, as Mr. Logan intimated."

"Ah, yes!" exclaimed Eugene; "but what more does Dana say, Chester?"

"The Gilbert Islands," he says," resumed the reader, "are generally provided with a supply sufficient for

bathing, and each native takes his morning bath in fresh water, which is esteemed by them a great luxury. On Tari-tari (of the Gilbert group), as Mr. Horatio Hale, philologist of the Wilkes Expedition, was informed by a Scotch sailor by the name of Grey, taken from the island, there is a trench or canal several miles long, and two feet deep. They have *taro* plantations (which is possible only where there is a large supply of water), and besides some bread-fruit. He spoke of the taro as growing to a very large size, and as being in great abundance; it was planted along each side of the pond. Grey added further that ten ships of the line might water there, though the place was not reached without some difficulty. There were fish in the pond which had been put in while young. The bottom was adhesive like clay. These islands have been elevated a little, but are not over fifteen feet above the sea.

“Kotzebue observes, that “in the inner part of Otdia (one of the Marshall Islands), there is a lake of sweet water; and in Tabual, of the Group Aur, a marshy ground exists. There is no want of fresh water in the larger islands; it rises in abundance in the pits dug for the purpose.

“The only source of this water is the rains, which, percolating through the loose sands, settle upon the hardened coral rock that forms the basis of the island. As the soil is white, or nearly so, it receives heat but slowly, and there is consequently but little evaporation of the water that is once absorbed.’”

“So it is the rain, after all,” murmured Eugene.

“Of course,” responded his brother, a little impatiently, and then continued:

“Water is sometimes obtained by making a large cavity in the body of a cocoanut tree, two feet or so from the ground. At the Duke of York’s Island, and

probably also at the adjacent Bowditch Island, this method is put in practice; the cavities hold five or six gallons of water.’”

“For my part,” exclaimed Eugene, emphatically, “I have had quite enough of water. Can’t you give us something else, brother?”

“How would birds suit you?” asked Chester. “In speaking of them, I see he refers to Houden Island, Wilkes’s account of which so fascinated the Professor, you remember.”

“That will do — if there’s not too much of it.”

“I’ll endeavor to cut it short.” And Chester continued :

“‘The tropical birds of the islands are often more in keeping with the beautiful scenery about them than the savage inhabitants. On one atoll — Houden Island of the Paumotous, where no natives had ever dwelt — the birds were so innocent of fear, that we took them from the trees as we would fruit, and many a songster lost a tail-feather, as it sat perched on a branch, apparently unconscious that the world contained an enemy.’”

“He then refers to J. D. Hague’s account of the birds of Jarvis’s and some other uninhabited islands of the equatorial Pacific, and makes a quotation from it,” explained Chester, looking up from the book.

“Well, that ought to be worth listening to,” commented Eugene.

“I think we would all like to hear it,” said the Professor. And thus encouraged, Chester read :

“‘From fifteen to twenty varieties of birds may be distinguished among those frequenting the islands, of which the principal are gannets and boobies, frigate-birds, tropic-birds, tern, noddies, petrels, and some game-birds, as the curlew, snipe, and plover. Of terns, there are several species, the most numerous represented of

which is what I believe to be the *Sterna hirundo*. These frequent the island twice in the year for the purpose of breeding. They rest on the ground, making no nests, but selecting tufts of grass, where such may be found, under which to lay their eggs. I have seen acres of ground thus thickly covered by these birds, whose numbers might be told by millions. Between the breeding seasons they diminish considerably in numbers, though they never entirely desert the island. They are expert fishers and venture far out to sea in quest of prey. The noddies (*Sterna stolidus*) are also very numerous. They are black birds, somewhat larger than pigeons, with much longer wings, and very simple and stupid. They burrow holes in the guano, in which they live and raise their young, generally inhabiting that part of the deposit which is shallowest and driest. Their numbers seem to be about the same throughout the year. The gannet and booby, two closely allied species (of the genus *Sula*), are represented by two or three varieties. They are large birds, and great devourers of fish, which they take very expertly, not only catching those that leap out of the water, but diving beneath the surface for them. They are very awkward and unwieldy on land, and may be easily overtaken and captured, if indeed they attempt to escape at all on the approach of man. They rest on the trees wherever there is opportunity, but in these islands they collect in great groups on the ground, where they lay their eggs and raise their young. One variety, not very numerous, has the habit of building up a pile of twigs and sticks, twenty or thirty inches in height, particularly on Howlands, where more material of that sort is at hand, on which they make their nest. When frightened, these birds disgorge the contents of their stomachs, the capacity of which is something very astonishing. They are gross feeders, and I have often seen one dis-

gorge three or four large flying fish fifteen or eighteen inches in length.

“The frigate-bird is a large, rapacious bird, the tyrant of the feathered community. It lives almost entirely by piracy, forcing other birds to contribute to its support. These frigate-birds hover over the island constantly, lying in wait for fishing birds returning from the sea to whom they give chase, and the pursued bird escapes only by disgorging its prey, which the pursuer very adroitly catches in the air. They also prey upon flying fish and others that leap from sea to sea, but never dive for fish and rarely ever approach the water.

“The above are the kind of birds most numerous represented, and to which we owe the existing deposits of guano. Besides these are the tropic-birds, which are found in considerable numbers on Howland's Island, but seldom on Jarvis's or Baker's. They prefer the former because there are large blocks or fragments of beach rock, scattered over the island's surface, under which they burrow out nests for themselves. A service is sometimes required of this bird, which may, perhaps, be worthy of notice: A setting bird was taken from her nest and carried to sea by a vessel just leaving the island. On the second day, at sea, a rag, on which was written a message, was attached to the bird's feet, who returned to the nest, bringing with it the intelligence of the departed vessel. This experiment succeeded so well that, subsequently, these birds were carried from Howland's to Baker's Island—forty miles distant—and, on being liberated there, one after the other, as occasion demanded, brought back messages, proving themselves useful in the absence of other means of communication. The game birds, snipe, plover, and curlew, frequent the islands in the fall and winter, but I never found any evidence of their breeding there. They do not leave the

island in quest of prey, but may be seen at low-tide picking up their food on the reef which is then almost dry.

“Some of the social habits of these birds are worthy of remark. The gannets and boobies usually crowd together in a very exclusive manner. The frigate-birds likewise keep themselves distinct from other kinds. The tern appropriate to themselves a certain portion of the island; each family collects in its accustomed roosting place, but all in peace and harmony. The feud between the fishing birds and their oppressors, the frigate-birds, is only active in the air; if the gannet or booby can but reach the ground, land and plant its feet on the ground, the pursuer gives up the chase immediately.”

“Does n’t Dana have something to say about the fish?” asked Captain Bradford.

“Yes,” responded Chester; “I notice a few words just here, and he touches lightly on a variety of subjects.

“‘The extensive reefs about coral islands,’ he says, ‘abound in fish, which are easily captured, and the natives, with wooden hooks, often bring in larger kinds from the deep waters. From such resources a population of 7,000 persons is supported on the single island of Taputeuea, whose whole habitable area does not exceed six square miles. There are also shell-fish of edible kinds, and others that are the source of considerable activity in pearl-fishing.

“‘An occasional log drifts to the shores, and at some of the more isolated atolls, where the natives are ignorant of any land but the spot they inhabit, they are deemed direct gifts from a propitiated deity. These drift-logs were noticed by Kotzebue, at the Marshall Islands, and he remarked also that they often brought stones in their roots. Similar facts have been observed at the Gilbert group, and also at Enderby’s Island, and many other coral islands in the Pacific. The stones at the Gilbert

Islands, as far as could be learned, are generally basaltic or volcanic, and they are highly valued among the natives for whet-stones, pestles, and hatchets. The logs are claimed by the chiefs for canoes. Some of the logs seen by the author, like those at Enderby's Island, were forty feet or more long. Several large masses of compact cellular lava occur on Rose Island, a few degrees east of the Navigator group; they were lying two hundred yards inside of the line of breakers. The island is uninhabited, and the origin of the stones is doubtful; they may have been brought there by roots of trees, or perhaps by some canoe.

“‘Fragments of pumice and resin are’ transported by the waves to many of the islands in the Central Pacific. We were informed at the Gilbert Islands that the pumice was gathered from the shores by women and pounded up to fertilize the soil of their taro patches; and that it is common for a woman to pick up a peck a day.

“‘Where this pumice comes from is not ascertained. It is probably drifted from the westward, and perhaps from volcanic islands of the Ladrões, or the Philippines. In addition, volcanic ashes are sometimes distributed over these islands, through the atmosphere. In this manner the soil of the Tonga Islands has been improved, and in some places it has even received a reddish color. This group has its own active volcano to supply the ashes, and the volcanic group of the New Hebrides is not far distant to the southwest.

“‘Notwithstanding all the products and all the attractions of a coral island,’ he then goes on to say, ‘even in its best condition it is but a miserable place for human development, physical, mental, or moral. There is poetry in every feature, but the natives find this a poor substitute for the bread-fruit and yams of more favored lands. The cocoanut and pandanus are, in general, the only

products of the vegetable kingdom afforded for their sustenance, and fish, shell-fish, and crabs from the reefs their only animal food. Scanty, too, is the supply; and infanticide is resorted to in self-defense, where but a few years would otherwise overstock the half a dozen square miles of which their little world consists—a world without rivers, without hills, in the midst of salt water, with the most elevated point but ten to twenty feet above high tide, and no part more than three hundred yards from the ocean.

“‘In the more isolated coral islands, the language of the natives indicates their poverty as well as the limited productions and unvarying features of the land. All words like those for mountain, hill, river, and many of the implements of their ancestors, as well as the trees and other vegetation of the land from which they are derived, are lost to them; and as words are but signs for ideas, they have fallen off in general intelligence. It would be an interesting inquiry for the philosopher, to what extent a race of men placed in such circumstances is capable of mental improvement. Perhaps the query might be best answered by another. How many of the various arts of civilized life could exist in a land where shells are the only cutting instruments,—the plants of the land in all but twenty-nine in number,—minerals but one,—quadrupeds none, with the exception of foreign rats and mice,—fresh water barely enough for household purposes,—no streams, nor mountains, nor hills? How much of the poetry or literature of Europe would be intelligible to persons whose ideas had expanded only to the limits of a coral island; who had never conceived of a surface of land above half a mile in breadth,—of a slope higher than a beach,—of a change of seasons beyond a variation in the prevalence of rains? What elevation in morals should be expected upon a contracted

islet, so readily over-peopled that threatened starvation drives to infanticide, and tends to cultivate the extremest selfishness? Assuredly there is not a more unfavorable spot for moral or intellectual progress in the wide world than the coral island.

“‘ Still, if well supplied with foreign stores, including a good stock of ice, they might become, were they more accessible, a pleasant temporary resort for tired workers from civilized lands, who wish quiet, perpetual summer air, salt-water bathing, and boating or yachting; and especially for those who could draw inspiration from the mingled beauties of grove, lake, ocean, and coral meads and grottoes, where

“ — Life in rare and beautiful forms
Is sporting amid the bowers of stone.”

“‘ But after all, the dry land of the atoll is so limited, its features so tame, its supply of fresh water so small, and of salt water so large, that whoever should build his cottage on one of them would probably be glad, after a short experience, to transfer it to an island of larger dimensions, like Tahiti or Upolu, one more varied in surface and productions; that has its mountains and præcipices; its gorges and open valleys; leaping torrents not less than surging billows; and forests spreading up the declivities, as well as groves of palms and corals by the shores.’

“ He then again refers to the one mineral product of atolls, calcite or carbonate of lime, the material of the coral rock, and says it is the only kind on the great majority of them; but states that on some of the smaller islands, such as Jarvis’s, Baker’s, Howland’s, Maiden’s, McKean’s, Birnie’s, Phoenix’s, Enderby’s, and others, there are, in addition to this, and the stones brought by logs with the floating pumice, beds of gypsum which have been made through the evaporation of sea-water

in the gradually drying lagoon basins; and also large deposits of guano from the multitudes of seabirds that occupy them.

"One word," exclaimed Eugene. "I suppose these islands sometimes suffer from earthquakes and storms. Does he say anything on the subject?"

"He says that in this respect, coral islands are like the continents, and that occasionally a devastating wave sweeps across the land."

"Good gracious! I should suppose that, at such times, everything would be swept away; for the usual elevation of the land is no more than ten or twelve feet, and so, easily overtopped by the more violent seas."

"Yes; and during the heavier gales, the natives are obliged to secure their houses by tying them to the coconut trees, or to a stake planted in the ground for the purpose. Such tremendous earthquake-waves as those which have swept up the coast of Spain, Peru, and the Hawaiian Islands, Dana says, would produce a complete deluge over these islands. He was informed that effects of this kind had been experienced at the Gilbert Islands; but the statements were too indefinite to determine whether the results should be attributed to storms, or to this more violent cause; and he closes the subject by saying that while coral islands have their storms, the region in their vicinity is generally one of light winds and calms, even when the trades are blowing strongly all around them. 'The heated air which rises from the islands,' he says, 'lifts the currents to a considerable height above the island.' And he calls attention to J. D. Hague's statement, that on Jarvis's and the two neighboring islands, under the equator, near 180° in longitude from Greenwich, he 'often observed the remarkable phenomenon of a rain-squall approaching the island, and, just before reaching it, separating into two parts, one of

which passed by on the north, the other on the south side, the cloud having been cleft by the column of heated air rising from the white coral sands.' And now, I think, we have had enough of coral islands for to-day."

"I quite agree with you," said his brother; "though I must admit I have been greatly interested."

"So have we all," added the Professor; "and I think Chester deserves a vote of thanks."

"So do I," said the Captain, as he started to his feet, "and I only hope we shall be as agreeably entertained another day."

CHAPTER XXI.

TAHITI, OR SOCIETY ISLANDS.

“**P**ROFESSOR,” asked Chester, a day or two later, “do you remember who discovered Tahiti?”

“It is said that Quiros, a Spaniard, originally discovered the island, in 1606,” was the answer. “He called it Sagittaria. Many others, however, during the following seventy odd years, visited the group, laid claims to the discovery, and gave names to the islands.”

“About the name, what should we call it? I mean the group, of course.”

“For my part, I like Tahiti, or the Tahitian Islands; but you will find that the preference is generally given by geographers to Society Islands. The group is divided into two clusters, one of which lies seventy miles northwest of the other, and formerly they were distinguished by the separate designations of the Society Islands (proper) and the Tahiti or Georgian Islands.”

“Sailors usually speak of one cluster as the windward and the other as the leeward; applying the term Tahitian, or Society Islands to both combined,” observed the Captain.

“Very true,” assented the Professor.

“What are the names of the several Islands?” asked Eugene.

“Those of the Tahiti cluster,” answered the Professor, “are Tahiti or Otaheite, Eimeo or Moorea, Maiaiti, Maitia, and Tetuaroa. Those of the Society Islands proper are Huahine, Raiatea, Otaha or Tahaa, Borabora, Marua

or Maupiti, and Tubai. Besides these there are several islets not worth mentioning."

"The islands are very mountainous, are they not?" asked Chester.

"Extremely so, in the interior," was the answer; "but extending from the base of the high lands to the sea, they have a border from one to five miles wide of rich level land."

"The mountains are singularly picturesque in character, I have heard," said Eugene.

"Yes, indeed," responded the Professor, with enthusiasm; "sometimes the rocks shoot up into sharp and spire-like peaks, sometimes they run for miles in perpendicular precipices, several thousand feet in height; sometimes they are scarped and angular like gigantic fortresses, sometimes they are cleft into ravines of terrible depth, and sometimes they are scooped out into hollows like the craters of extinct volcanoes. In fact, the islands are so filled with lofty peaks and crags that the only way of reaching the interior is by following the course of the valleys."

"Some of the mountains are very high, are they not?" asked Chester.

"The highest peak on the island of Tahiti reaches an elevation of 7,339 feet," was the reply.

"The islands are of volcanic origin, I suppose?"

"The lava, basalts, and pumice-stone, which have been found in several places, would so indicate."

"There must be many delightful streams in the larger islands," said Eugene.

"Yes," responded the Professor, "all are watered by numerous streams, upon the banks of which, or along the shores, the inhabitants reside. These streams have their source well up in the mountains, and come dashing in torrents down the craggy steeps, fertilizing the soil in

their course, which, in return, brings forth in prodigal profusion, the richest of foliage and the most gorgeous of flowers. Then, in some of the islands, there are lovely lakes and lagoons; and all are surrounded by belts of coral rock, of various width, situated from a few yards to five or more miles from the shore, with openings which permit the passage of canoes, while some of them admit ships to smooth water and good anchorage."

"The climate is about perfection, I have been led to believe," observed Chester.

"It is healthful and very mild," said the Professor, "the range of the thermometer throughout the year being inconsiderable."

"From what you said a moment ago, I suppose there is no lack of fruits and vegetables on the islands?"

"Besides the bread-fruit, they produce almost every tropical vegetable and fruit, including some peculiar to the group."

"Yes," added the Captain, "and quite a number of fruits and vegetables have been introduced from the temperate regions."

"True," assented the Professor; "and the guava shrub, brought from Norfolk Island, is now common, and, I learn, bears a profusion of fruit, upon which pigs and cattle feed with avidity. The introduction of limes and oranges has also been very successful."

"The natives must have very fine and productive gardens, I should judge," remarked Chester.

"On the contrary," rejoined the Professor, "garden produce is little cultivated, and agriculture is very backward."

"Why," exclaimed Chester, "only the other day Mr. Morgan informed me that they have quite a fine botanic garden on Tahiti; and hence, I supposed they must feel a deep interest in such things."

"It is true that the French established such a garden, and it offers seeds to colonists and natives; but there is little demand for them, and prizes offered to stimulate production were withdrawn in 1865 as useless."

"What a pity!" exclaimed Eugene. "The islanders must be exceedingly lazy or very short-sighted, I should think."

"Ah! but you see the spontaneous production of fruits is quite sufficient for the natives," said the Captain.

"Have I not heard that some efforts have been made toward the cultivation of cotton?" asked Chester.

"Very likely," replied the Professor, "for in 1861 an Anglo-Portuguese agricultural company was established for the cultivation of that plant and coffee by Chinese coolies; but it has effected very little."

"How about animals, Professor?" asked Eugene, suddenly.

"Pigs, dogs, and rats were the only quadrupeds found upon the islands at the time of their discovery; but all our domestic animals have been introduced, and with the exception of the sheep and rabbit have thriven remarkably well. Horned cattle are abundant, and meat is reasonably cheap."

"Are there many birds?"

"There are large numbers of aquatic fowl; the albatross, tropic birds, and petrel are found on all the islands; herons and wild ducks frequent the lakes and lagoons; and there are several kinds of birds of prey, wood-peckers, and small paroquets."

"Domestic fowl were found upon the islands at the time they were discovered, I think," said Chester.

"Yes, and were then, and are now, very abundant," rejoined the Professor.

"The natives belong to the Malay race, do they not?" asked Eugene.

"They are of the same race as the Marquesans and other brown Polynesians, and you remember what Judge Fornander, Mr. Logan, and others say about them."

"Ah, yes, I remember now. But *you* have seen them, Captain; are they really as good looking as I have heard?"

"A Tahitian woman," answered the Captain, "would be reckoned beautiful even in America, the skin being fairer than that of many a southern girl, and the large full eyes and rich hair having a fascination peculiar to themselves. The appearance of the men is vigorous and graceful, they are generally above the middle stature, their countenances are open and prepossessing, though their features are bold and somewhat prominent. Their complexion is olive or reddish-brown, but there are great varieties of shades. Their behavior is affable and courteous."

"What is the population of the group?" asked Chester.

"On the Tahiti or Georgian Islands," answered the Professor, "a little more than 14,000. On the other cluster, something over 4,000."

"What!" exclaimed Chester, "so great a difference?"

"The Tahiti Islands are larger, you know," rejoined the other.

"I thought the two clusters were about the same in area."

"The area of the Tahiti cluster is 453 square miles, and that of the other only 213 square miles."

"Not quite half as large, then. But I suppose there are many foreigners on Tahiti?"

"More than 1,000 emigrants, besides 650 foreign residents, and between 400 and 500 French soldiers."

"I have read that tattooing is no longer practiced among the natives," observed Eugene.

"No, that has gone by," said the Professor; "and the native costume has been altogether abandoned for dresses resembling those worn by civilized nations."

"Do they manufacture their own cloth, as formerly?" asked Chester.

"No, the native manufactures have been entirely superseded by imported goods."

"Is their trade wholly with France, as in the case of Martinique?"

"No, the chief intercourse is carried on with San Francisco, Valparaiso, Sydney, and Melbourne; and the domestic exports of the group consist principally of arrowroot, sugar, cocoanut-oil, and pearl shells."

"I suppose their commerce amounts to quite a considerable sum," remarked the Captain.

"The annual exports," rejoined the Professor, "foot up to about \$1,100,000, and the imports to not far from \$700,000."

"Papiete, the principal port," said Chester, "must be a fine place and an important town."

"The harbor is perfect, I can tell you that much," said the Captain, emphatically.

"It is a free port," added the Professor, "except for arms and spirits, and has a dry-dock for repairing vessels, government buildings, and a hospital."

"Yes," said the Captain; "and it supports two newspapers, one in the native language and one in French."

"Many of the foreigners, I suppose, reside in Papiete?" said Chester, inquiringly.

"Yes, particularly the merchants," answered the Professor.

"What is the population of the town?" asked Eugene.

"At this time, it must number not far from 1,000 or 1,100," was the reply.

"When the Spaniards discovered the islands, I should

have thought they would have held on to them," said Eugene, after a pause.

"They attempted to do so," replied the Professor; "and as late as 1774, undertook to colonize Tahiti. Captain Cook visited the group about that time, and again on his last voyage in 1777, when he found a house and cross, which the Spaniards had erected, carefully preserved by the natives. Eleven years passed after this, during which there was no communication between these islands and the rest of the world, when the *Bounty* arrived to procure plants of the bread-fruit tree; and her sad yet interesting story you already know.

"Next came the English missionaries, in the early part of 1797. For a long time their labors were seemingly in vain, till at last Pomare II. embraced Christianity in 1815. He died in 1821, and during the minority of his son the missionaries acquired great influence; but the boy having died before he attained manhood, he was succeeded by Queen Aimata, or, as she was better known, Pomare, the latter being the surname of the reigning family. From the conversion of Pomare II. the power of the Protestant missionaries continued to increase, till it became paramount in Tahiti.

"Now the French were looking with covetous eyes on these islands; and as an entering-wedge, two priests were sent to them from the French Catholic missions on the islands to the east, to make friends for their government, and to propagate the Catholic faith. The Protestant missionaries, of course, opposed this, and the priests were ordered to leave; but they were obstinate, and absolutely refused to do so. They were therefore seized, and conveyed on board a vessel about to sail for some distant port, with a recommendation to pursue their calling on some of the many islands which as yet were neither Protestant nor Catholic.

“This action must have mightily pleased the French king and his government, for it afforded them the very pretext they wanted; and in due time the frigate *Reine Blanche*, under command of Admiral Du Petit-Thouars, whom doubtless you will remember in connection with the Marquesians, arrived in the harbor of Papiete, and demanded liberty for all French subjects, \$2,000 as the expenses of the voyage to France of the expelled priests, and some \$30,000 as an indemnity for alleged insults to the French flag, and threatened that unless his demands were complied with he would bombard the town.

“But this was not all. The arrogant French admiral insisted that, in addition to paying the expenses of the priests and the indemnity demanded, the people of Tahiti should, at their own expense, erect a Roman Catholic church in every district where they had built one for Protestant worship.

“The good queen, almost overcome by terror, lest the admiral should carry out his cowardly threat and bombard the town, yet utterly powerless to comply with his outrageous demands, fled in the darkness of the night, in a frail canoe, to the island of Eimeo, or, as it is now called, Moorea, well knowing that no decisive action could be taken in her absence. Her most valued friend and adviser at this time was Mr. Pritchard, the British consul. Du Petit-Thouars perceiving this, caused him to be forcibly seized and imprisoned. After being kept for ten days in solitary confinement, he was, notwithstanding his most earnest protests, put on board an English vessel, far out at sea, and thus arbitrarily conveyed away from the islands, without a trial or investigation of any kind.

“The British government, when the matter was brought to its attention, demanded an explanation of France. The French authorities, having learned of Mr. Pritchard’s influence with the queen, and that their

officials at Tahiti could make no headway until after his removal, approved of what had been done, but promised to pay a liberal indemnity for the British consul's false imprisonment and pecuniary losses. But to this day, so I am credibly informed, Mr. Pritchard has never received one farthing.

"The shrewd Englishman being out of the way, the French made rapid progress. There was some fighting, or rather, skirmishing, for a time, but things were too one-sided, and soon the queen and her people were obliged to submit. To be sure, nominally she remained a queen, but in reality her power was gone, and the French Protectorate was firmly established. And now the French were masters of three valuable groups in this part of the Pacific: the Marquesas, Paumotu, and Tahiti.

"Queen Pomare died on the 17th of September, 1877, at the age of sixty-five years, and after a reign of more than half a century, thirty-five years of which were endured under the indignities of the French Protectorate. If ever sovereign was dearly loved by her people, it was this most estimable lady, and at her death the mourning throughout her little kingdom was sincere and universal. She was succeeded by her eldest son, Ariiaue, as Pomare V.—the last king of Tahiti.

"It had been feared that at the death of the queen even the semblance of the ancient rule would be dispensed with by the French, and this was thought the more probable as the queen's sons, in the matter of sobriety, had been anything but exemplary young men. But for some unexplained reason, the French thought it best to retain a figure-head for a while longer; and so Ariiaue, and his beautiful young bride, Marau, aged seventeen, were proclaimed king and queen, with all the pomp and splendor that could be brought to bear on the occasion.

"The Legislative Assembly received with hearty acclamations the decisions of their omnipotent French masters, who not only proclaimed Ariiaue King, but actually settled the succession for two generations to come. Queen Marau being half English,—the daughter of an English Jew, married to a chieftainess of exalted rank in Tahiti,—any child to which she might give birth was excluded from the throne in favor of the little daughter of the King's brother, Tamatoa and the lovely Mōe — ex-king and queen of Raiatea — thus securing the pure Tahitian blood-royal. Failing issue of this little princess, the succession was secured to her cousin, a bright and handsome boy, known as Hinoi, son of the third royal brother.

"These decisions gave great satisfaction to the Tahitians, who, though perfectly aware that all real power had been taken from them, still valued its nominal possession.

"Nearly three years passed; everything had moved on smoothly, and the young king's position was apparently secure, when, all at once, on a bright June morning in 1880, the Tahitian world was astounded by the sudden announcement that the king and the native governors had ceded the kingdom to France, and that very afternoon the protectorate flag was hauled down and the tricolor run up."

"Good gracious!" exclaimed Eugene, "what could have possessed Pomare V. to tamely submit in that way?"

"That is more than I am able to inform you," answered the Professor; "and I hardly think it is known just what influence was brought to bear on him."

"I can name one strong inducement, I think," remarked Chester.

"Well, let's hear it," said his brother.

"The comfortable sum of \$12,000 a year," returned

the other quietly; "to be enjoyed in peace, you understand, and in his own fashion."

"Yes," exclaimed the Captain; "and not only that, but free from the incessant tutelage which made his kingly rank a burden, devoid of all honor."

"Exactly," assented Chester.

"When was the annexation to France formally proclaimed?" asked Eugene.

"On the 24th of March, 1881, at Papiete," answered the Professor; "and it was made the occasion of a most brilliant festival, such as the light-hearted Polynesians are ever ready to welcome."

"I suppose the French themselves—the officials, I mean—made a great fuss, and exerted themselves to the utmost to have the affair pass off with immense *éclat*?"

"Yes, indeed; from every ship in the harbor, and every part of the town floated the tri-color, which, being freely distributed, likewise adorned the lovely tresses of the women and the button-holes of the men. Plenty of gunpowder was burned, and plenty of noise was made, but not too much to please the people. An imposing procession was organized, and marched round the town, headed by the marine band. Every branch of the service was represented. There were infantry, artillery, and gendarmes, together with sailors and marines from the fleet. Oh, it was a glorious day—for the French, and one they very naturally considered worthy to be remembered for ever."

There was a moment's pause, when Chester, rousing himself, suddenly asked:

"Professor, can you tell us anything about that extraordinary institution which formerly prevailed among the Tahitians—the Areoi Society?"

"Ah!" exclaimed the Professor, "now you touch on a peculiar subject, and one, too, I may say, full of mystery."

"But you know something about it?" asked Eugene, eagerly.

"Not a great deal, I fear," was the reply; "but perhaps as much as is generally known."

"Was it a religious institution?" asked Chester.

"It is not improbable that on its first foundation it possessed something of a religious character. This much is certain, they were worshipers of the god Oro, and believed in the immortality of the soul, and in the existence of a heaven suited to their own characters."

"They formed a single confraternity throughout the group, did they not?"

"Yes, but each island furnished its own members."

"I have heard the society compared to the Masonic fraternity," observed the Captain.

"Nonsense!" exclaimed the Professor, vehemently; "no two institutions could be more utterly opposed than those of the order of Masonry and the *Áreoi* Society — the one insisting on monotheism, while the other was based on idolatry; the one being a universal, and the other but a local society; the one inculcating morality, and the other founded for the express purpose of throwing aside the small relics of morality possessed by a native Polynesian."

"There were a few who left the society, and afterwards told something of its inner workings, were there not?" asked Chester.

"Yes," rejoined the Professor, "several who were converted to Christianity, after they had managed to shake off the dread with which they contemplated any reference to the mysteries of their order, gave some information with regard to it."

"Were their accounts trustworthy?"

"No doubt they were; for while they differed somewhat in details, they all agreed in the main points."

"And what do their stories amount to?" asked Eugene.

"In the first place," answered the Professor, "as I have already stated, they believed in the immortality of the soul. They acknowledged Oro as the chief god, and accepted his brothers, Orotetefa and Urutetefa, who had been made kings of the Areois by Oro, as their tutelar gods. Now these two lived in celibacy; consequently they had no descendants. On this account, while they did not enjoin celibacy upon their devotees, they prohibited their having offspring. Hence, one of the standing regulations of the society was the murder of their children.

"Those who rose to high rank in the order were believed after their death to hold corresponding rank in their heaven, which they called by the name of Rohutu noanoa, or Fragrant Paradise. All those who entered were instantly restored to the full vigor and bloom of youth, no matter what might be their age; and in almost every respect the resemblance between the Polynesian Rohutu and the Mohammedan Paradise is close and almost startling."

"And what had they to do to gain this blessed and fragrant Paradise?" asked Eugene.

"Ah! that is the most extraordinary part of it," answered the Professor. "Fanatics of an ordinary turn of mind believe that everlasting happiness hereafter is to be gained by self-denial and mortification of the body during the present life. The Areois, with an almost sublime audacity, held precisely the opposite view, and proclaimed both by words and deeds that a life of eternal enjoyment in the world to come was to be obtained by leading a life of unbridled license in the present world. In order to carry out this theory to the fullest extent, they traveled about from one island to another in large companies, disseminating their peculiar opinions wherever

they went, and gaining fresh recruits in each island. On one occasion Captain Cook saw seventy canoes filled with Areois set off on an expedition to the different islands."

"They were divided into classes or degrees, were they not?" asked the Captain.

"Yes," said the Professor; "there were, I think, seven distinct classes among them, each of which was distinguished by the kind or situation of the tattooing on their bodies; and in addition to the regular classes, there were a large number of individuals, of both sexes, who attached themselves to the fraternity, prepared their food and their costumes, performed a variety of servile occupations, and attended them on their journeys, for the purpose of witnessing their dances, or sharing in their debaucheries. These were called Fanaunau, because they did not destroy their offspring, which, as I have already said, was indispensable with the regular members."

"I have seen it stated, somewhere," remarked the Captain, "that while the Areois were addicted to every kind of licentiousness, and paid no sort of regard to the marital rights of others, yet they were excessively jealous of their own wives, who, I believe, were also members of the society."

"Yes," said the Professor; "so jealous were they in this respect, that improper conduct toward the wife of one of their own number was often punished with death. This summary and fatal punishment, however, was not confined to their society, but was sometimes inflicted, for the same crime, among other classes of the community."

"I have an idea that they were no great favorites with the king and higher classes," said Eugene.

"On the contrary," rejoined the Professor, "strange as it may seem, the institution was held in the greatest repute by them; and, notwithstanding all their vileness

and innumerable crimes, the grand masters, or members of the first order were regarded as demi-gods, and they were treated with a corresponding degree of veneration by the common people."

"Then, of course, they took the best of care of them on their frequent visits?"

"They did, indeed. Wherever the Areois landed, they proceeded to the nearest *Marae*, and offered a sacrifice of a sucking pig to the god who presided over it, this sacrifice being in the first place a thank-offering to the god for their safe landing, and in the next a notification that they wanted pigs for themselves. Partly, no doubt, on account of the terror inspired by their numbers and unanimity, but more particularly on account of the feeling I have mentioned, and of the spread of their very intelligible doctrines, the invitation always met with an immediate response, and great numbers of pigs, together with vegetable-food, cloth, kava, and other luxuries were produced. A great feast was then held, during which the peculiar doctrines of the society were carried out to the full, and a scene ensued such as cannot be described."

"From what source did they recruit their ranks mainly?" asked Chester; "was the fraternity confined to any particular grade in society?"

"No," was the reply, "it was composed of individuals from every class."

"I suppose the admission of a new member was attended with a variety of singular ceremonies?"

"Yes; and a protracted novitiate followed. It was only by progressive advancement that any were admitted to the higher degrees and distinctions."

"Still, taking everything into consideration, the natural inclinations of the people, and the many privileges conceded to the Areois, I should think they must have been overcrowded with members."

“There were enough of them no doubt, — in fact, far too many; but it was generally imagined that those who became Areois were inspired to do so by the gods. Therefore when anyone wished to be admitted to the society, he repaired to some public exhibition they were giving, in an apparent state of mental aberration, wearing a girdle of yellow plantain or *ti* leaves round his loins; his face stained with *mati*, or scarlet dye; his brow decorated with plaited cocoanut leaves; his hair perfumed with powerfully scented oil, and ornamented with a profusion of fragrant flowers. Thus arrayed, he rushed through the assembled crowd, and leaping into the circle of Areois, joined with seeming frantic wildness in the dance. This was considered an indication of his desire to become a member of the order; and, if approved, he was appointed to wait upon the *avæ pari*. After a considerable time, during which he was closely watched, if it was thought he would make a desirable member, and if he still persisted in his purpose, he was admitted to the first or lowest degree, with all the usual rites and observances.”

“But like all good men, favored of the gods, these precious Areois had to die, at last,” said Eugene.

“Yes,” assented the Professor, “and when death occurred naturally, a number of most singular ceremonies were performed. But as the existence of children born among them could not be recognized, so, by a similar convenient fiction, all Areois were presumed to be in the full vigor of human life. Consequently, the possibility of age and debility was ignored, and in order to prove the non-existence of either senility or sickness, any old or feeble person was quietly buried alive. The victims were never apprised of their fate, as was the case in Fiji, but a grave being dug surreptitiously, the infirm person was decoyed to it on some pretense or other,

dropped into it, the earth flung on him, and stamped down almost before he had time for a remonstrance.

“Sometimes, when provisions did not come in to them as abundantly as they desired, they had a strange way of supplying themselves. A party of them, led by a grand master, perhaps, whose rank was known by the marks tattooed on his body, would visit a house where they saw evidence of prosperity, and look about until they came upon a little boy—an easy matter enough in Tahiti in those days. They would then take the child, and go through various ceremonies, by which they represented him as having been raised to kingly rank. They would then simulate the utmost deference to the new king, place him on an elevated seat, prostrate themselves before him, and appeal to him as though he really held the exalted position. ‘We have come to the king’s abode, poor, naked, and hungry. We need raiment—give us that piece of cloth. We need food—give us that pig.’ Accordingly, the father of the child was forced to fall in with their humor, and, in return for the honor conferred upon his house, to give them whatever they demanded.”

“They must have been a fearful burden to the community,” said the Captain.

“They were, indeed,” assented the Professor.

“But,” said Chester, thoughtfully, “they must have had some redeeming quality; it is impossible to believe otherwise.”

“The only redeeming point I know of,” rejoined the Professor, “was their value in keeping up the old historical traditions of the islands. The food and clothing which they obtained from the various people were paid for by the dramatic performances and recitations which they gave, and which, debased as they were by the licentious element which permeated every section of the society, performed toward their local history the same

part which the ancient mysteries did toward the Christian religion. The Tahitians being unable to read or write, and having no mode of recording historical events except by tradition, these performances rendered, as it were, history visible, and enacted before the eyes of the illiterate people the deeds of days long gone by."

"But, Professor," said Chester, "was this society peculiar to the Tahitian Islands?"

"Probably not. I am inclined to believe, however, that it was not so wide-spread as some writers have thought. Certainly no traces of it are to be found among our friends the Marquesans, or the Hawaiians; but the Catholic missionaries found an institution bearing a striking resemblance to it among the natives of the Caroline and Ladrone Islands. They were there called *uritoi*; which, omitting the *t*, would not be much unlike *areoi*; a greater difference, as I can readily show you, exists in the pronunciation of words known to be radically the same. But one thing is quite certain, if this remarkable institution was not confined to the Tahitian and neighboring islands, it appears to have been patronized and carried to a greater extent there than anywhere else in the Pacific."

"I have seen it stated, Professor," said Eugene, "that the Tahitians were in the habit of making human sacrifices. Did they do this to any great extent?"

"Not to so great an extent as some of their neighbors," was the reply; "but far too much blood was shed in this way, I am sorry to say."

"What were the occasions for the sacrifices?" asked Chester.

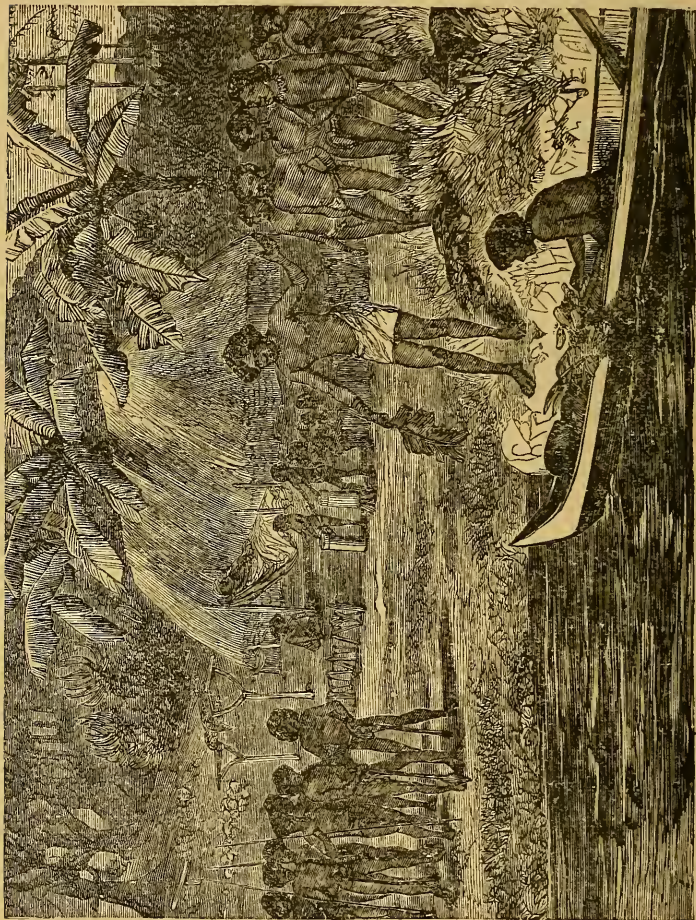
"They were various," returned the Professor; "for instance, at the funerals of high chiefs and other great men, human sacrifices were often made, and near the large whattas, or platforms, on which the pigs and other provisions were offered, there were always numbers of

human skulls, each a relic of a human sacrifice. Then, in times of war, the captured enemies were offered to the idols. There was a sort of excuse for this act, it might seem, the idea being that, as the captives had sought the lives of the worshipers of the gods, their own lives should be sacrificed to them as an atonement for their presumption. There were, however, other occasions on which such sacrifices were offered, and where the victim was selected by the chief and killed in cold blood. If, for example, the king or principal chief of an island or district had decided on war against another, he generally sacrificed a man to his god in order to bespeak his aid against the enemy. Captain Cook mentions such a case. It appears that Towha, the chief of his district, intended to make war against the island of Eimeo or Moorea, and sent a message to his friend and relative Otoo that he had sacrificed a man, and wished for his presence when the body was offered at the great marae of Attahooroo. Cook asked permission to accompany Otoo, and they set out together, taking with them a half-starved dog, which was to form part of the sacrifice.

“The victim had been killed unawares, by a blow from a stone, as was their usual custom, and when Otoo and his guest arrived at the landing place, they found the body already there, lying in a canoe which was half in and half out of the water, just in front of the marae. They halted at some little distance, while the first part of the ceremonies were being performed.

“After many prayers and mumblings, and the use of quantities of red feathers and plantain leaves, some of which were thrown into the canoe, the body was taken out and laid upon the beach, with the feet to the sea. The priests placed themselves around it, some sitting and others standing; and one or more of them repeated sentences for about ten minutes. The dead body was then

uncovered by removing the leaves and branches which had been thrown over it, and laid in a parallel direction along the seashore.



THE HUMAN SACRIFICE.

“One of the priests then, standing at the feet, muttered a long prayer, in which he was at times joined by the others, each holding in his hand a tuft of red feathers.

In the course of this prayer a quantity of hair was pulled from the head of the corpse, and the left eye was taken out. These, after being presented to Otoo, were, together with a tuft of feathers, given to the priests.

“The body was then carried a short distance, with the head toward the marae, and laid under a tree, near which were fixed three thin pieces of wood, rudely carved. Two bundles of cloth were laid on a part of the marae, and tufts of red feathers were placed at the feet of the corpse, round which the priests took their stations; all were then allowed to go as near as they pleased.

“The chief-priest, who sat at a short distance, then spoke for a quarter of an hour, but with different tones and gestures; so that he seemed often to expostulate with the dead man—to whom he constantly addressed himself—and of whom he sometimes asked questions, seemingly with regard to the propriety of his having been killed. At other times he made demands, as if the deceased now had divine power himself, or interest with the divinity, and urged him to deliver Eimeo, Maheine its chief, the hogs, women, and other good things of the island, into their hands,—which, indeed, was the express intention of the sacrifice. He then chanted a long prayer, in a whining, melancholy tone, accompanied by two other priests, and in which several chiefs joined. In the course of this prayer more hair was plucked by a priest from the head of the corpse, and laid upon one of the bundles. After this there was more praying and whining, and then all the tufts of feathers were laid upon the bundles of cloth, which closed the ceremony at this place.

“The body was next carried up to the most conspicuous part of the marae, with the feathers, the two bundles of cloth, and two drums, which beat slowly. The feathers and bundles were laid against a pile of stones, and the corpse at the foot of them. The priests having again

seated themselves round it, renewed their prayers, while some of the attendants dug a hole about two feet deep, into which they threw the victim, and covered him over with earth and stones.

"Meantime, a fire having been made, the half-starved dog was produced, killed, and offered as a sacrifice. Then there were more prayers, more whining, more feathers and plantain leaves used, and more drum beating; and then the ceremonies were over for the day.

"The next morning the ceremonies were resumed; several pigs and dogs were killed, gifts were laid upon the movable house in which the *atua* was carried about, and a young plantain tree was plucked up and laid at the feet of the king. The mysterious bundles of cloth which had been laid on the marae were then unrolled, and out of one was taken the sacret maro, or royal girdle, and out of the other the idol to whom the sacrifices had been made. Another hog was then killed, and the entrails carefully inspected; and the ceremony ended with rolling up the *atua*, together with a number of scarlet feathers, in the bundle of cloth from which it had been taken."

"Strange that men, even savages, could ever have been so foolish, and so cruel," commented Eugene.

"The only redeeming point about these sacrifices," said the Professor, "was, that the victim was quite unconscious of his fate. He was struck to the ground suddenly by an assassin who came stealthily upon him, and never felt the real bitterness of death; namely, the dread of the coming fate."

"All very well, I suppose, as a redeeming point," muttered Eugene; "but I'm glad they do n't do that sort of thing in Tahiti now."

"So are we all," smiled the Professor, as he started to his feet, "And now, I think, we have had enough of Tahiti and the Tahitians for to-day."

CHAPTER XXII.

TAHITI—SAVAGE ISLAND.

A FEW days later, while our friends were still lingering at the breakfast table, Mr. Morgan entered the saloon, and quietly said :

“Gentlemen, I have something to show you. Please come on deck.”

Eugene immediately started to his feet and hurried toward the companion-way. The others followed, and soon all were on deck.

“There !” exclaimed the mate, pointing to an object looming before them on the starboard quarter, “what do you think of that ?”

“An island !” cried Eugene ; “is it Tahiti ?”

“No,” rejoined Mr. Morgan, “it is Moorea or Eimeo ; but you can plainly see Tahiti off the port quarter.”

No one turned in that direction. All gazed with rapt attention on the seemingly growing island, off to the right.

The picture it presented was indeed wonderfully, weirdly grand. Its lofty mountain range, its cloud-capped peaks—huge basaltic pinnacles of most fantastic shape—towering from out the sea of billowy white clouds which drifted around those blackened crags, while below the cloud canopy lay deep ravines, smothered in densest foliage, extending right down to the gray, restless sea, which broke in thunder on the reef. No wonder they were fascinated.

But soon the picture began to recede, and Tahiti grew before them on the other quarter. With what feelings

they approached this interesting isle, after all they had learned of its beauty and history, the reader can judge.

In due time, having passed by a narrow opening through the barrier-reef, they left the great tossing waves outside, and found themselves in the calm harbor, where they speedily came to anchor. There were a number of vessels in the port, including a French man-of-war, a Chilian bark, a British ship, and three American crafts, but the *Rover* was not among them.

Gazing with interest toward the land, they beheld fine massive mountains rising from a great gorge beyond the town of Papiete—an attractive little place, with houses all smothered in foliage, lovely to look upon, being chiefly hibiscus and bread-fruit.

But the captain and his impatient passengers lost no time in getting ashore; and naturally, the first person they sought out was the American consul. He gave them a cordial reception, and at once invited them to remain to dinner.

“Tell us first,” said Captain Bradford, eagerly, “if you know anything about the *Rover*, an American built schooner, owned and commanded by a man calling himself Thompson.”

The consul reflected for a moment, and then said:

“I have no direct knowledge of the craft, or the man you mention; but if you will stay with me, I think I can introduce you to a gentleman who can tell you something about them.”

“And who may that be?” asked Eugene, quickly.

“A Connecticut Yankee, Captain Joseph Beach of the *Mansfield*. He brought out Waterbury watches, sewing-machines, telephones, and Yankee notions generally; and is taking in a cargo of arrowroot, cocoanut oil, pearl-oyster shells, and a little sugar and coffee.”

“What! and can he make such a voyage pay?” asked Chester in surprise.

"Pay! yes indeed," replied the consul; but, mind you, he makes a regular trading voyage of it, and this is n't the only group he visits, by any means."

"Ah! I see now," said the Captain, "he has run across our man among the Marquesas, or the Paumotou's or some of the islands to the north of us."

"Most likely," assented the consul; "but you will know all about it at dinner time." Then suddenly: "Do you make a long stop at Tahiti?"

"That depends altogether on the news we hear of the *Rover*," answered the Captain.

"Ah! I hope you will hear the right kind of news, then,—the news that will keep you here, I mean."

"You are very kind," said the Captain; "but why particularly?"

"Because, in that case, you can join a little party that is about to set out on a tour of the island."

"You don't say so," exclaimed Eugene, enthusiastically.

"Yes. And it is a rare chance, I can tell you," pursued the consul. "A high French official, Colonel Molière, is to be of the party, as well as Captain Beech, who, between ourselves, I fancy, adds somewhat to the Colonel's income. Then there will be a native chief, nominally on the Governor's staff, along, and some others, including several ladies, and myself. I tell you, my friends, under no other circumstances could you see either the country or the people to such advantage."

"I, for one, appreciate that fact, I am sure," said Eugene quickly.

"So do we all, I think," said the Captain; "and if it does n't prove to be inconsistent with the main purpose of the voyage, I should be glad to join the party."

"So should we all," added the Professor, warmly.

"Well, my friends, we will hope for the best," said the

consul, cheerfully. "And now, let us join the ladies," and he led the way to the parlor.

Here they were presented to Mrs. Hamilton, the consul's wife, Mrs. and Miss Kilbourn, her sister and niece, and to Mrs. Beach, the wife of the Captain, who had been spending a day or two at the consulate. They were all attractive American ladies, but the last named was a marvel of womanly grace and beauty; and the gentlemen from the *Albatross* were at once strongly prepossessed in her favor.

Some time was now passed in agreeable conversation, when, at length, the commander of the *Mansfield* was announced. He was a man of about the middle height, sparsely built, of light complexion, full beard and mustache, and what is rather remarkable in a sea-faring man, quite near-sighted.

"Ah! Captain," exclaimed Mr. Hamilton, starting toward him; "we have been waiting quite impatiently for you."

"Waiting for me?" repeated the new-comer, as he adjusted his glasses, "it is not dinner-time yet."

"Oh, no, the dinner is all right," said the consul; "but I have several friends here who are anxious to make your acquaintance,—friends from your part of the world, too, if I am not mistaken. This way, Captain. Professor Singleton, whose name must be familiar to you, Mr. Chester Pierpoint, of good old New England stock, Mr. Eugene Pierpoint, his brother, and Captain James Bradford, of the *Albatross*."

"Ah!" exclaimed the new comer, "the beautiful steam yacht that came in two or three hours ago. Glad to know you, gentlemen. Captain, I am delighted to meet you. A pretty craft, indeed, that of yours."

"They don't make them any better," said the commander of the *Albatross*, with pardonable pride.

"I'll swear to that, without having set foot on her deck," returned Captain Beach. Then abruptly: "How long do you remain in port?"

"That depends somewhat on you, I think."

"On me?"

"On the information we hope to obtain from you," explained Captain Bradford.

"What information, I should like to know?" asked the other.

"You have fallen in with the schooner *Rover*, recently?"

"The *Rover*; Thompson master; I remember."

"Where was she when you came across her?"

"Off the Scilly Islands. I was bound for Raiatea, and the schooner for Aitutaki."

"Aitutaki?" repeated Eugene, inquiringly.

"Yes, sir; one of the Hervey group, you know."

"Ah, yes, Hervey or Cook's Islands," said the Professor.

"Exactly," assented Captain Beach.

"And when was this?" asked the commander of the *Albatross*.

"Only a week or so ago," was the reply.

"And from Aitutaki he was bound where?"

"To Raratonga, and Rurutu, of the Australs, then he was coming here."

"And that would bring him here about when?" asked Chester.

Captain Beach considered.

"In eight or ten days," he said at last.

"Eight or ten days!" exclaimed Eugene, in a tone of relief.

"Ah! but will he come?" asked Chester, doubtfully.

"Will he come?" repeated Captain Beach. "Why, of course he will. I brought certain goods here for him, and left them in the hands of his agents. I also ordered supplies to be in readiness for him here. I tell you he

will be at Papiete in just about ten days, possibly a day or two earlier."

"Then he won't get here inside of a week?" said Eugene, inquiringly.

"Not an hour short of eight days, sir; my word for it."

"When does your party start, Mr. Hamilton?" asked Chester, turning to the consul.

"To-morrow; — is n't it to-morrow, Captain?"

"What! will these gentlemen go with us?" exclaimed Captain Beach, in a tone of satisfaction.

"I think we will," smiled the Professor, "if you will kindly accept of our company."

"Accept of your company? well, I should say so!"

"Then, if the tour will not last longer than a week —"

"We shall be back in Papiete this day week, that you may count on," interrupted Captain Beach.

"Then we will go with you," said the Professor.

"Good! you'll not regret it."

"We feel sure of that in advance," said Eugene, earnestly.

"You don't know how much satisfaction your decision gives me," began the consul. "Really, I —"

"Dinner is served."

It was a discreet looking French servant who made the announcement; and Mr. Hamilton, cutting himself short, marshaled his goodly company to the dining-room.

During the progress of the meal, Captain Beach once more alluded to the *Albatross*, and with evident pleasure, dwelt on her many fine points. Her commander, much flattered by his praise, invited the whole company off to visit her and to take tea on board. The invitation was eagerly accepted, and soon after dinner the party repaired to the yacht, where they spent a most delightful evening.

The next morning was bright and beautiful, even for

Tahiti; and as it had been decided that they should make an early start, the party from the *Albatross* was on shore very soon after daylight. But they were obliged to possess their souls with patience for a time, for the all-important French official had not yet breakfasted, and it was impossible to begin the journey without him. He did not keep them long waiting, however, and soon after seven o'clock they were off.

There were all the individuals mentioned by Mr. Hamilton, including the ladies of his own household, Mrs. Beach, and one or two friends of Colonel Molière, together with the four gentlemen from the *Albatross*, and yet, though they were so large a party, everything during the tour was admirably arranged, and there was always good accommodation provided.

Each district possesses a large district house — a *maneaba*, in fact — built for public purposes. Like all the native buildings, they consist chiefly of a heavy thatch roof, rounded at both ends, supported on a mere framework of posts, and leaving the sides all open, save at night, when they are hung with cloth reaching nearly to the ground. Unlike the maneabas of other groups, they generally have good wooden floors, often smooth enough to dance on. In these public buildings their meals were usually prepared, and their night-quarters arranged; and Chester and Eugene were especially pleased with the beds provided for them — very large and soft, stuffed with the silky tree-cotton; liberal pillows, real mosquito-netting and light curtains tied back with ribbons, and such tasteful coverlets of patchwork — truly fine specimens of Tahitian skill; those most common have crimson patterns on a white ground; the designs are highly effective. The native women pride themselves on their snowy linen and downy pillows — one good thing they have learned of the foreigners.

The island is divided into twenty districts, and it was arranged they should visit at least three each day, and when it was possible, four, thus bringing them back to their starting point within the week, without encroaching on the Sabbath. They were to start each morning, not later than seven o'clock, and drive seven or eight miles to the central village of the next district and take possession of the maneaba, where they would breakfast, then, after a stroll, to see the sights in the neighborhood, while Colonel Molière and Captain Beach were looking after their important business interests, they were to drive on to the next district and lunch, and at the third halting-place they were to take the principal meal of the day, and usually pass the night.

On the first day Colonel Molière, Captain and Mrs. Beach, and Captain Bradford occupied the leading carriage; Mr. and Mrs. Hamilton, Professor Singleton, and Tana, the native chief, the second; Mrs. and Miss Kilbourn, and Chester and his brother the third, and other members of the party filled two or three more, while a few preferred riding, and were mounted on very fair specimens of island horseflesh.

They drove through sections of the country which seemed like one vast orchard of mango, bread-fruit, banana, faes, large orange trees, lemons, guavas, citrons, papaws, vanilla, coffee, sugar-cane, maize, and cocoanut palms, together forming a succession of the richest and most varied foliage it is possible to conceive.

Sometimes they counted such few trees as they noticed that were not fruit-bearing, but even they were, for the most part, fragrant with blossoms. Here and there the broad grass roads were edged with tall plantains, very handsome in a dead calm, but too delicate to endure the rough wooing of the trade winds, which tear the huge leave to ribbons, and give the roads an untidy appearance.

They halted at various points, and about ten o'clock reached Punavia, a lovely spot on the seashore, at the entrance to a beautiful valley, above which towers a grand mountain peak. A ruined French fort on the shore and two forts in fair condition further up the valley, recalled to Chester and Eugene all they had heard of the days when Tahiti made her brave but unavailing struggle for independence.

Here a meal was prepared for them after the native fashion, and the brothers met with their first opportunity to taste of raw fish, which is considered a very great delicacy, and one, so Mr. Hamilton informed them, for which many foreigners acquire a strong liking. Tana, who had taken a great liking to Eugene, tried hard to teach him this enjoyment, but without success.

During the meal, and often afterwards while they were eating, the natives drew near and favored them with many strange and beautiful songs; and sometimes they would treat them to a dance, but only the *upa upa*, nowhere did they see the outrageous dance of the Areois, though they were told that after long years of discontinuance, through the influence of the French, it had been in a measure revived, and though the more respectable natives considered it objectionable, that a certain number of dancers were to be found in every village. Their position, however, Mr. Hamilton said, appeared to be no higher than that of second or third-rate actors in America.

The young girls they saw here, and in other villages, were neatly and tastefully dressed, in garments, without exception, cut after the fashion of the sacks worn in this country a hundred or more years ago—that is, a yoke on the shoulders from which the shirt falls to the feet and trails behind. The effect, as may be imagined, is very easy and graceful. It would be impossible to devise

a cooler or more sensible dress, as it only touches the neck and shoulders, and, very loosely, the arms. The one under-garment is low-necked, short sleeved, and of such a length as to form a sweeping skirt, thus combining chemise and petticoat in one article of raiment.



After a halt of a little more than two hours they resumed their drive over the romantic road of firm green turf which follows the course of the shore, and affords

at every turn a living picture of delight. On the one hand, endlessly varied foliage, and magnificent green hills towering in strange fantastic form, seamed by dark valley and crystal streams; and on the other side lay the calm, glittering lagoon, reflecting, as in a mighty mirror, the great masses of white cloud, and bounded by the long line of breakers flashing as they dashed on the barrier-reef. Beyond these lay outspread the vast Pacific, its deep and changing blue, dashed with white crests, telling how briskly the winds blew outside; and, far on the horizon, the lofty peaks of Eimeo, the isle that had so fascinated them the day before, rose clear and beautiful, robed in ethereal purple.

They halted for the night at a lovely village, situated on the banks of a swiftly-flowing stream, whose clean and comfortable houses were only divided from the white coral sand by a belt of green turf and rows of stately trees. The pride of the village was its maneaba, or public house. Here they found dinner awaiting them, and all sat down with good appetites. The building was decorated in Tahitian style, with palm-leaves and tree-ferns, and festoons of deep fringe, made of hibiscus fiber, all dyed either yellow or white.

After dinner they strolled about, and found enchanting bathing-pools in some of the many crystalline streams, of which they crossed no less than twenty-five each day. Then they found the village girls, and induced them to sing, while they sat listening, entranced, on the beautiful seashore, in the calm and perfect moonlight.

On the following morning they were all astir at an early hour, and started immediately after a slight repast, which was to serve them till breakfast-time. The whole village was up to see them off and wish them god-speed; and Eugene, as a pretty girl addressed him for the second or third time, declared to his brother, with much earnest-

ness and sincerity, that there was certainly a great charm in the liquid language, and in the gentle, affectionate manner of the people, who seemed to be overflowing with genial kindness.

Less than two hours brought them to the next district, where they breakfasted. Here, extensive cultivation had somewhat changed the appearance of wild nature, large tracts of land having been laid out for careful planting of cotton and coffee, and, after all, the fields had been abandoned; the crops, left to run wild, were now rank, straggling bushes, struggling for life with the overmastering vines, or with the wild guava, which, having once been imported as a fruit-tree, has now become the scourge of the planters, from the rapidity and tenacity with which it spreads and takes possession of the soil. At the same time, as the Professor very truly remarked, a tree which yields wholesome and abundant food for man and beast cannot be said to be altogether an evil.

"What is it that so interests you, my friend?" asked Mr. Hamilton, as he noticed a thoughtful expression on the Professor's face, as he sat in the maneaba and gazed over the surrounding landscape.

"I was thinking," replied the Professor, "that it is not often civilization improves the picturesque beauty of a country; but, assuredly, the lovely hills and valleys of Tahiti and the neighboring isles have greatly gained in richness by the introduction of the fruit-bearing trees, which now form so important a feature in the general wealth of foliage."

"You are right, sir," said the consul. "The dense thickets of orange-trees you see on every hand have all grown from those brought from Sidney by Mr. Henry, one of the early missionaries."

"I have heard as much," said the Professor.

"Yes," continued Mr. Hamilton; "and, strange as it

may seem, the most healthy trees are those which have grown, self-sown, from the seed carelessly thrown about by the natives when they stole away to these quiet valleys to brew their orange rum in secret."

"The people are indebted to the French for these splendid trees, are they not?" asked the Professor, as he indicated several large mango-trees, whose mass of dark foliage was a prominent feature on all sides.

"Yes, sir," answered the consul, "the French introduced them about twenty years ago, and, I assure you, they have taken infinite trouble to procure all the very best varieties, and have succeeded to perfection."

"They deserve credit for so much, then."

"Yes, and for much more besides," said the consul.

The party was detained for some two or three hours at this place, as the captain of the *Mansfield* and his French ally had certain important matters to attend to. But the other visitors were not idle; the Professor and the ladies strolled through the fragrant orange groves, while the Captain, Chester, and Eugene walked along the coast till they found a delightful bathing place, where a broad river flows into the sea. Three or four pretty girls, as a matter of course, bore them company, one of whom was laden with *pareos* and towels; the *pareo* being simply a couple of fathoms of bright-colored calico, which, knotted over one shoulder, forms an efficient and picturesque bathing-gown.

Their next stopping-place was Papeooriri, and they arrived just in time for a magnificent fish dinner, such as they had never tasted or even dreamed of in America -- fish of all sorts and kinds, cooked and raw, to suit all tastes, — excellent lobsters and crabs, huge fresh-water prawns, delicate little oysters, which grow on the roots and branches of the mangrove, which fringes some muddy parts of the shore; but most excellent of all was another

product of the briny mud, altogether new to the party from the *Albatross*: a hideous, but truly delicious, white cray-fish, called by the natives *varo*, or *wurrali*.

They all registered a solemn vow never to lose a chance of a varo feast, and it is but fair to state that they religiously kept the vow.

That night they stopped at a village some six miles further on; and the brothers having received an invitation to sleep in a private house, and anxious to improve every opportunity for acquiring a practical knowledge of the country and people, accepted. The house being purely Tahitian, and not built of wood, as so many now are, they felt as though they were cooped up in a bamboo cage, the chief features of which were extreme airiness and transparency. But having procured a quantity of white cotton cloth, they lined the sides with it, and so screened themselves from the general public.

On the following day they crossed the ridge which connects the peninsula with the main island. They drove to one end of it, ate there, then retraced the road to the isthmus, as there is no passable road round the further end. The scenery here was, if possible, lovelier than on the great isle, and they spent some time strolling about the shore and visiting the many villages of bird-cage houses with kindly people, who seemed never weary of showing them attentions. The houses were embowered in large-leaved bananas and orange groves, and were gay with rosy oleanders and crimson hibiscus. The best singers of Tahiti were those they heard on the peninsula.

The next day was much like those which had preceded it, as they made their way round the other side of the isle, always by the same delightfully romantic grass road, with long hours of calm sunlight, followed by clear moonlight. At Tiarei they were warmly welcomed by

Tana's friends, and bountifully supplied with food. Then, after an hour's rest, they hastened on. A most lovely drive along a basaltic shore, the road being cut on the face of the cliffs, brought them to Papenoo, which is close to a broad, clear river, where, of course, they bathed, then rambled in the soft moonlight, and sat on the shore, where the rippling waves murmured on a pebbly beach.

The chief of the district gave up one half of his comparatively large house to Colonel Molière, who shared it with the brothers, the chief and his family occupying the other end. Of course, it was really one large room, but travelers in Polynesia soon learn the art of rigging up curtains, and so improvising separate quarters.

On the night of their return to Papiete there was a grand ball at the government house, which all attended and heartily enjoyed, and thus their week's excursion was brought to a close.

It was now eight days since the *Albatross* had come to anchor in the harbor of the pretty town, and with the exception of what they had learned from Captain Beach, nothing whatever had been heard or seen of the *Rover*.

Three days longer they waited. The brothers, sometimes accompanied by the Professor and Captain Bradford, sometimes by Mr. Hamilton and Captain Beach, and again by Jasper Morgan or Seth Cook, improved the delay by making short excursions into the neighboring valleys or up the mountain sides. On the evening of the third day, when Morgan had been their companion, on reaching the town, they called, as usual, at the consulate.

Mr. Hamilton was in his office, and with him were Captains Beach and Bradford, Professor Singleton, and a stranger.

Mr. Hamilton turned to the brothers, as they entered.

"Ah!" he said, "here are the young men now," and as the stranger turned quickly toward them: "Gentlemen, this is Daniel Kirby, mate of the *Rover*."

"Mate of the *Rover*!" repeated the brothers, in a breath.

The stranger bowed an assent.

"Yes," said the consul, "no less a personage, I assure you."

"Then the schooner is in port?" said Eugene eagerly.

"She came to anchor three hours ago," was the reply.

"Is our uncle here?" asked Chester.

Mr. Hamilton shook his head slowly.

"How's that?" demanded Eugene, turning quickly to Kirby.

"We left him on Savage Island," said the mate. "He was n't well, and besides, by staying there he could do a good thing buying up pearl-oyster shells."

"Then you are to return for him?" said Chester inquiringly.

"No; I am to meet him at one of the Samoa Islands, or at Tonga."

"How soon?"

"I shall sail for Upolu as soon as I can discharge the portion of my cargo I am to leave here and take in my stores."

"Then," said Captain Bradford, quickly, "you expect the owner of the *Rover* may be at Upolu about a week hence."

"Yes; unless he goes direct to Tonga," said the mate.

"How is he to get to either place?"

"By a small trading vessel now in those waters."

"I see."

"Savage Island," exclaimed Eugene, after a moment's silence; "what kind of a place is that for a Christian to be stopping at, I'd like to know?"

"A very good place, indeed," said Captain Beach, "if he wants to make a little money, and get a fresh hand or two before the mast. I have one of them now."

"You have been there, then?" asked Eugene, with interest.

"Yes, sir; and not long since," replied the Captain.

"Then the people are not so savage as the name of their island would seem to imply?"

"Bother the name; that is, the one you refer to. The right name is Niue; and the Niuan's are about as sensible a people as any of the islanders in the Pacific."

"They have wonderfully improved in the last fifteen or twenty years," remarked the Professor.

"They have, indeed," assented Captain Beach. "They have discarded their old and bad habits, including the playful one of murdering all foreigners who happen to land on their shores, and now display a wonderful eagerness to be taken as sailors on board our ships. If they are refused, they often contrive to smuggle themselves on board without the knowledge of the captain and crew; and whereas, a few years ago it was hardly possible to induce a Niuan to venture on board a ship, the difficulty now is, to find a way of keeping them out of the vessels."

"I had no idea they were such a people," said Eugene. "Just where does their island lie?"

"Between the Harvey and the Tongan groups," answered Captain Beach.

"How did it get the name Savage Island?"

"Captain Cook so called it, I am told, on account of the behavior of the natives, who not only declined his overtures of peace, but attacked him 'like so many wild boars.'"

"Why, what was the matter with them?"

"That's more than I can tell you," smiled the Captain.

"Their ferocity was due to an ancient custom, to which the Captain has just alluded," said the Professor. "I mean that of putting to death all strangers who landed on their island, a fate from which even their own

people did not escape, if they had been absent for any length of time. But it was fear rather than ferocity that was the cause of this savage custom. They had an idea that their island was naturally free from disease, and that all bodily disorders were brought by foreigners, and they, in consequence, had a law that all foreigners should be killed as soon as they could be captured."

"And taking into consideration the untold misery that has been brought upon other islanders through their contact with foreigners," said Eugene, "it seems to me they were not so very far out after all."

"There's something in that," exclaimed Captain Bradford. "I begin to think with Captain Beach, that the Niuanians are a very sensible people."

"Tell us something more about them, Professor," said Eugene.

"I have seen it stated, somewhere," returned the Professor, "that when Mr. Williams, the missionary, visited the island, he induced two boys to go away with him for the purpose of being instructed. At first they were quite miserable on board the vessel, and howled incessantly, thinking that the white men around them were cannibals, and that they were only carried off to be fattened and eaten. Finding, however, that the sailors were eating pork, and evinced no desire for human flesh, they became more contented, and seemed even pleased with the prospects before them. They were taken to Raiatea, and having been educated for teachers, were sent home again. Unfortunately, soon after their arrival, an epidemic disease spread over the island, and the natives, naturally attributing it to the returned travelers, promptly killed them both."

"That was pretty hard," said Eugene, "considering under what circumstances the poor fellows left the island in the first place."

"It was indeed," assented the Professor; "and yet, when not blinded by fear, even these savages were capable of showing some mercy. A ship was once laying off the island, bartering with the natives, when, just as she was getting under way, the master threw one of the sailors overboard among the islanders, who took him on shore, and held a solemn counsel as to the course to be pursued. Many were for keeping up the old custom, and killing him, but others argued that the man had not landed of his own free will, and that he ought not to be liable to the usual penalty, even though salt water was in his eye—this being the mark of a shipwreck. After a great deal of discussion they agreed to a compromise, put him into a canoe, gave him a quantity of bananas and cocoanuts, towed him out to sea, and set him adrift. The man contrived to make his way to the shore again unseen, and, after hiding in caves for some time, succeeded in getting on board a whaler that was passing, and so escaped."

"I suppose they were all more or less tattooed?" said Eugene, inquiringly.

"Not a bit of it," returned Captain Beach, quickly, "they either knew or cared nothing about it, but they were mighty fond of decorating themselves with paint. Those who found their way on board vessels were delighted to be adorned with streaks and spots of red and green paint, especially the latter, which was a great novelty to them, and for which they were always ready to pay a good price.

"Are they fine looking?" asked Chester.

"Not particularly so," was the answer. "They are of moderate stature, and, I should say, rather under than above the middle height, thus forming a strong contrast to the Marquesans and Samoans. The natural color of the skin is a clear brown, and their limbs are round and well shaped."

"I suppose they dress much like the other reclaimed Folynesians?" said Chester, inquiringly.

"Yes," answered the master of the *Mansfield*; "but formerly, I am told, the men thought clothing quite needless, and wore nothing but a belt round the waist."

"That was true, generally speaking," remarked the Professor; "but some, however, wore a very small apron, only ten or twelve inches square, and this was considered rather in the light of ornament than of dress."

"They are fond of ornaments, no doubt," said Eugene.

"Yes," assented Captain Beach. "I have noticed that sometimes they wear the hair very long, and again very short, and that this is the case with both sexes. It seems they allow it to grow to a considerable length, and when it is eighteen or twenty inches long, cut it off, and plait it into thin bands which are worn round the waist. The men prize these ornaments highly, and one ship-master thinks that the love-locks are exchanged, and are valued accordingly. The younger men do not wear their beards, but the elders suffer them to grow to a great length, and I have seen them plaited, and adorned with pieces of oyster or clam shell. Then, too, they understand the art of coloring the hair a yellowish red by the application of lime, and I have seen many heads of hair so colored."

"I suppose, for weapons, they had the usual clubs, spears, and bows?" said Chester.

"Yes," answered the Captain, "and they were well and neatly made."

"They were found of war, no doubt?"

"To a certain extent, yes; but so far as I have been able to learn, they were not apt to let their love of warfare and bloodshed take them away from their own island. They never attempted the conquest of the isles around them; what fighting they did do was mostly carried on among themselves."

"It seems a little strange that in an island only thirty miles or so in circumference the people could not live in peace," said Chester.

"True," assented the Captain; "but, you see, in Niue, the usual Polynesian custom of dividing an island into several districts existed, and among these was perpetual feud."

"You say the Niuans never attempted the conquest of other islands," said Eugene; "but was their own ever invaded?"

"Yes," answered the Captain, "and by the restless and daring Tongans, whom they at length repulsed by an ingenious stratagem. The Tongans, you must know, were possessed of far better weapons, and were better disciplined than the Niuans, and being equally courageous, were rapidly completing the conquest of the island, when the natives took advantage of the peculiar formation of their country, which is exceedingly rocky, and covered with deep and narrow clefts, the result of the upheaval which elevated the island above the sea. Across one of these the Niuans laid small branches, which they covered with banana and cocoanut leaves, and then strewed over all a slight covering of earth, which they arranged so as to look exactly like the surrounding soil. They then executed a sham retreat, and slipped round to the further side of the chasm, so that the Tongans, flushed with victory, rushed on their retreating enemies with yells of triumph, and a great many of the foremost and best warriors were hurled down to the bottom of the cavern. Before the survivors could recover from their surprise, an attack was made upon them in overwhelming numbers, and of the whole Tongan expedition not a man escaped alive."

"The gods favored the right that time," exclaimed Eugene, "and I suppose the victors made a right royal feast of their fallen foes."

"There you are wrong," rejoined the Captain; "and I think it is quite safe to say the Niuans have never tasted human flesh. They do not even care for animal food of any kind; that I can state for a fact."

"But," objected Daniel Kirby, "in that case, what do they do with all the pigs they raise? I never saw so many on any one island before."

"They use them almost entirely to trade with, when vessels visit them, contenting themselves with bananas, yams, taro, and fish. I'll warrant, now, you yourself bought more than one while the *Rover* lay off the island."

"That's so, I must admit," assented the mate.

"I suppose they turn a good many pigs into liquor," suggested Eugene.

"Not many, I assure you," was the reply. "They seem to have no great fondness for liquor; have never drank kava, and stand almost alone in their non-use of tobacco."

"Good for the Niuans!" exclaimed Eugene, "I begin to think they have very few vices."

"Polygamy is still practiced among them," said the Captain, "though it is fast dying out under the influence of the missionaries, who have done another good thing in discouraging infanticide, which at one time prevailed to a fearful extent. The mere check which they have placed on this custom has already raised the number of the population by almost four hundred — a considerable increase when the small size of the island is taken into consideration."

"The missionaries, I should judge, have met with great success among them of late years," said Captain Bradford.

"They have, indeed," returned the master of the *Mansfield*; "but, you see, even before they came, a decent code of laws was in existence, so that the Niuans were, in reality, much less savage than many of their neighbors, and the missionaries had a better ground to work on than in other islands of more promising aspect."

"Their standard of morality was much higher than is usually the case among savages, I believe?" suggested the Professor.

"Yes, sir," assented Captain Beach, "infidelity among women was uncommon and severely punished. So great was their horror of this crime that illegitimate children were always thrown into the sea until the missionaries taught the people that, though the parents might be liable to punishment, the innocent children ought not to suffer."

"What was their mode of punishment?" asked Chester.

"It consisted, generally, in deprivation of food," answered the Captain. "For instance, for some offenses, the criminal was tied to a post, and allowed no food except bitter and acrid fruit; while for more serious offenses he was lashed hand and foot to a bamboo for a considerable length of time, only sufficient food being given to save him from actually dying of starvation. For these punishments, I may remark, the missionaries have induced the natives to substitute forced labor in well-sinking, road-making, and other useful works."

"They are born sailors, I should judge from what you have told us," said Captain Bradford.

"Yes, and good boat-builders," returned the other Captain. "They construct their canoes very neatly, often ornamenting them with devices in shells and mother-of-pearl, and they manage them well in the water. As a rule they are excellent swimmers; but there are some families living in the interior of the island who, although they can be barely four miles from the sea, have never visited it, and are greatly despised by their neighbors because they can neither swim nor sail a canoe."

"Only four miles from the sea, and yet never was on the shore!" exclaimed Eugene. "That beats anything I ever heard."

"It's a fact, nevertheless," asserted the Captain.

"I do n't doubt it, if you say so."

"Do the Niuans build good houses?" asked Chester.

"They are learning to do so; in fact, are copying to some extent after the Samoans,—ingrafting their style on to their own, so that altogether the effect of a modern Niuian house is quaint, and at the same time artistic. The natives are wonderfully quick at learning, as I have the means of knowing, and many of them are able to read and write. I gained the undying friendship of one by giving him a few sheets of paper and a lead-pencil."

"How do they dispose of their dead?" asked Chester.

"They have two ways of doing so," was the answer. "When one is followed, the body is taken to the woods on a sort of bier and left there until the flesh has decayed, when the bones are removed to the family burying-place, which is usually a cave in the lime-stone rock. When the other method is employed, the body is placed in a canoe, and sent adrift on the sea to go wherever the winds and waves may carry it."

"I have heard something about the caves you mention," said Chester, "they are many and curious, I believe."

"Ah!" exclaimed the Captain, "you should see them, they are not only curious, but wonderfully beautiful. From the roof hang vast numbers of stalactites, from which water continually drops. Indeed, the native owe their fresh water almost entirely to these caves, and since the missionaries came to reside among them have learned to collect it by digging wells in the caverns, into which the water flows, and so insures a certain instead of a precarious supply. The floor is covered with stalagmitic masses, and from these the natives make oval balls, which they hurl from the hand with wonderful force and accuracy."

"It is strange that there should be so many caves on this one little island," said Eugene.

"Their existence is evidently due to the character of the island," rejoined the Captain.

"Without doubt," agreed the Professor, "for it is partly coral and partly volcanic, the coral having been upheaved by volcanic force, leaving the surface fissured and broken by the sudden violence of the shock."

"The native legend respecting the origin of the island points to the same conclusion," said Captain Beach. "They say that the island was raised to its present elevation by two of their ancestors, named Hananaki and Fao, who swam there from Tonga, and found the island only just above the waves. They stamped twice upon it, the first stamp elevating the island to its present height, and the second clothing it with trees and plants. They made wives for themselves out of the *ti* tree, and so the island became peopled."

"Ah!" exclaimed the Professor, "I am glad you related that; for observe, my friends, in this tradition we may easily perceive that these people have retained the knowledge of two important facts, that the island was elevated suddenly from the sea, and that the inhabitants are not aborigines, but emigrants from some other part of Polynesia, probably Tonga."

"They are quite positive on that point," said the Captain.

"And no doubt they are right," returned the Professor.

"Well, gentlemen, it's getting quite late," said Captain Bradford, suddenly. "Shall we go aboard?"

"No, no!" exclaimed Mr. Hamilton, with energy, "you are to stay here to dinner—all of you. The whole thing has been arranged."

The commander of the *Albatross* looked doubtfully at his passengers.

"Better stay," advised Captain Beach. "You'll be better off than on board the yacht. Besides, I have something to say to you after dinner."

"Well, then, we'll stay," and so it was settled.

CHAPTER XXIII.

THE HERVEY GROUP—THE SAMOAN ISLANDS.

THE dinner passed off pleasantly; and when the company had withdrawn to the parlors, and Daniel Kirby, on the plea of an engagement, had retired, Captain Beach gathered the party from the *Albatross* about him, and said:

"Now, gentlemen, what you have to do is to be at Upolu just a week hence. Well, with such a steamer as you have at your command, there will be no trouble about that, even if you do not start for several days yet."

"But—" objected Captain Bradford.

"Hear me," persisted the master of the *Mansfield*. "These young gentlemen, naturally enough, want to see all that's worth seeing in this part of the Pacific. Now I start for Eimeo at daylight to-morrow. Colonel Molière goes with me. We shall enjoy ourselves and see wonders. Why not give a day or two to this pleasure, especially as there's profit in it?"

"Oh, do, Captain!" urged Eugene.

"I should like it very much, too," said Chester.

"Well, I do n't know," mused Captain Bradford, "If I thought—"

"Mrs. Beach is very anxious you should go," broke in the master of the *Mansfield* persistingly; "and I have no doubt Mr. Hamilton and the ladies here would cross over in your yacht if you should ask them, and I could bring them back, you know."

Captain Bradford turned to the consul with an inquiring look.

"I think we would," smiled Mr. Hamilton, in answer to the look.

"Well, then, as I do n't see how we can lose anything by it, we'll go," said Captain Bradford, decidedly.

"Good!" exclaimed Eugene, in a relieved tone; "and I'm awfully obliged to you, Captain Beach, for suggesting it."

"I thought you would like it," smiled the Captain.

"Well," said the master of the *Albatross*, after a pause, "if we are to leave Papiete early to-morrow, I must go aboard now."

"And so must we," added Chester. "Come, Professor; come, Eugene."

"Mr. Hamilton," said the Captain, as they reached the door, "I shall expect to see you and the ladies on board about seven o'clock. I'll have a boat at the landing for you.

"Thanks, Captain, we won't keep it waiting," and so they parted.

The consul was as good as his word; and the *Albatross* landed its party on Eimeo or Moorea before eight o'clock the next morning. The *Mansfield*, having started earlier, was already there, and so, at nine o'clock, the whole company set out on their tour of the island.

Of all the many beautiful isles they had visited, the brothers thought Eimeo by far the most delightful. Such marvelous basaltic needles and pinnacles, gigantic gray forms, like vast serrated shark's teeth, towering in mid-air, apparently rising from above the clouds, and the lower mountains and valleys clothed with vegetation of the same rich character as that of Tahiti. Here their transit from one village to another was by boat, all in dead calm water, within the coral reef, giving them the very best opportunity of seeing the coast to perfection.

Their first night was spent in the pretty village of

Haapiti, where they were warmly received and delightfully entertained. They slept in a large building made of palm and bamboo, and entirely thatched with large glossy fronds of the great bird's-nest fern. The interior was lined with tree-ferns and oleanders, and festooned with bright yellow hibiscus fiber. It was lighted with Chinese lanterns. The young girls who acted as their attendants, each wore a shawl of colored native cloth thrown over a robe such as we have already described. A lady of rank, who was present to receive them, wore a most becoming crown of arrow-root fiber, and plume of *reva-reva*.

There were many picturesque incidents in the course of their brief expedition round Eimeo which will long be remembered by our travelers, and there were visions of such beauty of scenery as could scarcely be surpassed in the most enchanting of dreams. One wonderful forest of tree-ferns they will not easily forget, and a splendid grove of glossy-leaved tamanu-trees will be recalled in connection with one of the most delightful days of their voyage.

That tamanu grove, and a few noble old casuarina-trees close by, mark the spot where, in heathen days, many a human sacrifice was offered to the cruel gods. Now a Christian church occupies the site of the ancient Marai, and all is peaceful and happy.

About two miles inland from this village, which is called Tiaia, lies a lake, a mile or so in length. It is not beautiful, not even ordinarily attractive, its waters being brackish and its banks muddy, but Eugene has tender and pleasant recollections of the spot, for it contains most excellent fish, and wild duck ever haunt its sedgy shores.

They passed the second night at no great distance from their anchorage, and early next morning, after bidding a



TREE-FERNS,

reluctant farewell to all their new friends, and with many expressions of esteem, and hopes that they might meet again in the near future, the party from the *Albatross* sprang into the waiting boat and hastened on board. The anchor was raised, the screw revolved, and the steamer's head was pointed toward Upolu.

After some three or four hours, Eugene called attention to the fact that they would soon be passing the Hervey or Cook's Islands.

"Yes," assented Captain Bradford, "they lie just to the south of us."

"I have often heard the islands mentioned," said Chester, "but must confess, I know very little about them."

"And I," said the Professor, "regret that I am unable to enlighten you much on the subject."

"But surely, you can tell us something about them," urged Eugene. "Or, perhaps you can, Captain?"

"I may be able to give you a little information," replied the Captain, "as I once visited them. The group includes some ten or more islands, the principal of which is Raratonga, the others are Mangaia, Remitera, Aitutaki, Anota, Manuai, Takutea, Mitiero, Manki, Hull, and several islets of little account. Raratonga is between thirty and forty miles in circumference, and round it extends a large reef of coral. Like the islands we have just left, it presents the most rich and beautiful appearance. The land, as it recedes from the sea, rises to a great height, terminating, in the interior, in lofty mountain peaks, and is clothed in the brightest green foliage; the sandy beach, washed by the never-ceasing rollers, with the pretty white houses quietly reposing beneath the thick shade of the myriads of cocoanut, orange, and banana trees, renders it one of the most beautiful islands of this latitude. As I stood viewing it from the

deck of my ship, while drawing nearer and nearer, I assure you, I experienced the same sense of fascination, the same thrills of delight we all felt when first we gazed upon Eimeo.

"There are three considerable villages on the island. One is New York, another New Bedford, and the largest, which, perhaps, I ought to call a town, is Raratonga."

"How many inhabitants has it?" asked Eugene.

"Not far from nine hundred," was the answer.

"What did you think of the people?" asked Chester.

"Well, from appearances," replied the Captain, "they are not very cleanly in their persons, and, to tell the truth, are rather forbidding. Most of them, however, wear European clothing, which they obtain from ships. They pretend to be friendly, and endeavor to make themselves familiar, and, as soon as you land, they throng about you in the most offensive manner."

"It's plain to see you were not much taken with them, Captain," laughed Eugene.

"No," was the reply; "but I was taken by them, and pretty much done for. They are great and persistent beggars, and arrant thieves. I think I can hear the universal cry that greeted me on landing even now: 'Oh! too much sore my toose; small piece 'bacca, Cap'n.' I tried to shake them off; no use, I gave it up. With one or two others I went for a stroll. The island abounds with all kinds of tropical fruit, and having bought what we wanted, we sat down to enjoy it; on rising, we found they had stolen all our tobacco, our pocket-knives, our handkerchiefs, and, in fact, pretty much everything we had about us. Oh, they are a precious set of rascals, I can tell you."

"Why, what is the matter?" asked Chester. "I thought the English were doing a great missionary work on the island."

"Ah! there is just where it is," rejoined the Captain. "They may be doing a great work, but it is n't the right kind of work."

"Is n't the missionary now there a good man?"

"I can't answer that question, for he may not be the one I saw. As for that one, some of the natives liked him, but more did not. The chiefs upheld him, but the people said he was 'no good;' he made them 'work too much.' One of them told me—and I am sure he told the truth—that if a native failed to attend church on the Sabbath, he had to pay the missionary a dollar; if he smoked on the Sabbath, it cost him the same amount; and many other petty tyrannies were practiced. If a native wanted a copy of the Bible, he had to pay the sum of one dollar for it; and, by the way, one of my sailors had to pay the same sum for a copy. Now do you wonder that the native hated the missionary? and that they were no better than I found them?"

"No, I don't wonder at it," exclaimed Eugene; "and I think the missionaries very short-sighted if they establish such rules."

"Was n't this the very island where John Williams did such a noble work?" asked Chester, presently.

"Yes," was the reply, "and I stood by his grave there. He was a noble as well as a good man, and was actuated by none but the purest motives. I wish they were all like him."

"Ah, you may well say that," remarked the Professor, thoughtfully.

"Tell us something about Mr. Williams, Professor," said Eugene, eagerly.

"What little I can recall, I will relate in a few words," said the palæontologist: "John Williams was born at Tottenham, near London, June 29, 1796. At the age of twenty, the London Missionary Society sent him with his

wife to Eimeo, the island we have just left. They remained on Eimeo long enough to acquire a knowledge of the language, and then removed, first to Huahine, and finally to Raiatea. For five years they labored here, and were very successful, after which, in the year 1823, he visited the Hervey group, and founded the mission at Raratonga. He learned the language of the group, prepared several books, and even translated a portion of the Bible. Having no vessel, he made all the necessary tools, and in a little more than three months, built and launched a craft sixty feet long and eighteen feet wide, the sails being made of native matting, the cordage of the bark of the hibiscus, the oakum of cocoanut husks and banana stumps, and the sheaves of ironwood. In this small vessel, within the next four years, he explored almost the whole of the South Sea Islands."

"During this time he established the Samoan mission, did he not?" asked Captain Bradford.

"Yes," answered the Professor, "and completed the translation of the New Testament into the Raratongan language."

"He was an indefatigable worker," remarked Eugene, approvingly.

"He was indeed," assented the Professor. "In 1834 he visited England, procured the publication of his Raratongan Testament, raised money for a missionary ship, published a 'Narrative of Missionary Enterprises in the South Sea Islands,' and prepared plans for a theological school at Raratonga and a high school at Tahiti. After his return to the Pacific in 1838, he sailed with one companion for the New Hebrides, to establish a mission there, but both were killed by the natives, on the island of Tanua, on the 20th of November, 1839."

"What a pity!" exclaimed Chester. "How did it happen?"

"While he was attempting to land," rejoined the Professor, "with a desire to create a friendly feeling with the natives, they rushed upon him, and, as he attempted to reach the boat, he was struck by a spear and killed. They hauled the body clear of the beach, and refused to give it up. However, afterwards they thought better of it, and delivered up the remains, which were taken to Raratonga and there buried, as the Captain has informed you."

"It is sad to think that such good men have to be sacrificed," mused Chester; "and right in the midst of their usefulness too."

"It is, indeed," assented the Professor; "but doubtless it is for some wise end,—and what hosts of martyrs there have been!"

"Captain," asked Eugene, after a pause, "are all the Herveys volcanic?"

"No," was the reply; "some of the islands are entirely coral, and all of them are surrounded by the dangerous coral reefs, at which the coral 'insects' are still at work."

"There is quite a group to the southeast of the Herveys, I notice."

"Yes, the Austral Islands, of which Rututua, Raivavai, Oparo, and St. Elmo are the best known."

At this moment the Captain was summoned forward, and before he returned, dinner was announced, and so the conversation was interrupted for the day. But the next morning, at the usual hour, he again joined them, and after a few words of ordinary conversation, abruptly said:

"In less than forty-eight hours we shall drop our anchor in the harbor of Apia."

"Good!" exclaimed Eugene, "I am just aching to set foot among the Samoans."

"You are anxious to feast your eyes on the fair Samoan damsels, I suppose," laughed his brother.

"I admit the soft impeachment," returned Eugene. "They say they are the belles of the Pacific."

"It may be so, but do n't forget that the Tongan girls, and even the Hawaiian maidens have their champions. For my part, I hardly expect to find anything as pretty as the fair ones we saw in the Marquesas Isles, or those we have just left behind us in Tahiti and Eimeo."

"I am sure none of them can hold a candle to the daughters of Samoa," exclaimed Eugene, stubbornly. "What do you say, Captain?"

"To those who like the Polynesian style of beauty, the girls of Samoa must seem quite pretty," was the rather non-committal answer.

The brothers laughed.

"Well, I shall see for myself two days hence," said Eugene, "meanwhile, Professor, post us up a little, for I am sure you know all about the islands."

"That is hardly a correct statement," smiled the Professor; "but I know something about them, and no doubt, with the Captain to help me now and then, I can give you a very fair idea of the islands and people we are about to visit."

"Who gave them the name of Navigator's Islands? I've forgotten, if I ever knew."

"Bougainville, in consequence of their skillful seamanship, which, without exaggeration, is truly wonderful; but we will call them Samoa, if you please, that being their proper name, and the one they have a right to insist upon."

"With all the pleasure in life," said Eugene, "I've no objection, I assure you."

"There are quite a number of islands in the group, I believe?" said Chester, inquiringly.

"Yes," answered the Professor, "there are nine inhabited islands, namely, Manua, Oloosinga, Ofoo, Anuu,

Tutuila, Upolu, Manono, Apolima, and Savaii. Then there are four islets stretching beyond the reef upon the eastern end of Upolu: Nuulua, Nutali, Taputapu, and Namoa; also, an isolated islet between Manono and Apolima, called Niulapo. Neither of these islets is what is termed a coral island. Though separated from the larger ones by shoals and coral reefs, yet they are all of the same formation and physical structure as the mainland."

"What is the area of the group, in the aggregate?" asked Chester.

"Wilkes made it 1,650 square miles," answered the Professor; "but later authorities place it at 1,125 square miles."

"Quite a difference," remarked Eugene. Then inquiringly: "Just where do the islands lie, Professor?"

"The entire group, north and south, is between $13^{\circ} 27'$ and $14^{\circ} 18'$ south latitude, and extends from $169^{\circ} 28'$ to $172^{\circ} 48'$ west longitude," was the answer.

"A good thing," observed the Captain, "is that the water spaces between the islands are free from shoals or outlying reefs, while the island headlands are certain guides to the navigator."

"To be sure," assented the Professor; "but if I remember rightly, strong currents frequently set through the channels, and beating to windward, especially with square-rigged vessels, lengthens the passage between the islands."

"Quite true," rejoined the Captain; "but the prevailing winds are southeast trades, which are more uniform than the northeast trades, and although strong at times, they seldom approach a gale."

"The entire group, I suppose," said Eugene, "is of volcanic formation."

"Without doubt," rejoined the Professor, "but everywhere evidence is discovered to prove the great antiquity of the islands, though in 1867 a submarine volcano burst

out of the ocean, between Manua and Oloosinga, sending upward a column of fire, with mud and sand and stones, to a height of more than two thousand feet, and this continued for a period of two weeks, when it subsided."

"Gracious!" exclaimed Eugene, "can we see anything of that ocean-born volcano? Did it leave no trace behind?"

"None, whatever," was the answer. "More than that, it is even said to be difficult now to get soundings on the site."

"It seems strange," remarked Chester, "that a volcano should have appeared after so long a time, and displayed such violent activity; for, if I understood you rightly, nothing of the kind had occurred in the group before for ages."

"That is true," said the Professor; "for, although extinct volcanoes are discovered upon all the islands, yet no account of their eruption is found in native history or tradition."

"Then, while they are surely volcanic, all volcanic action must have ceased ages ago."

"Yes, the islands seem to have been lifted from the ocean-bed by a mighty convulsion—a subterranean upheaval previous to the earth's crust being broken. On the island of Upolu masses of coral have lately been discovered in the water-courses, and imbedded in ancient cellular lava at 2,500 feet above the sea-level, while marine shells may be found upon the plateaus and mountains throughout the group; but nowhere upon the island is there a possible indication of primitive formation or secondary rocks; the entire land-surface plainly showing the immense flow of lava subsequent to upheaval.

"The highest mountains in each of the islands," the Professor continued, "are conical or spire-shaped. When all evidences of craters have been destroyed by time and

the action of the elements, upon such mountains are found ancient vesicular lava and amygdaloids, the olivine often disintegrated and found in the water-courses. Lava, in stratification or folds, is generally distributed over the islands, often presenting a granular appearance."

"I suppose there is no knowing how long the group has been inhabited?" said Eugene, inquiringly.

"No, I think not," returned the Professor, slowly.

"I have somewhere heard," observed Chester, "that on one of the islands there are certain remarkable ruins, much of the same character, I should judge, as those on Kusaie, of which you told us some time ago."

"There are such ruins, I believe," said the Professor; "but so far as I remember, I have never seen a description of them. Do you know anything about them, Captain?"

"A little something," was the reply; "for to tell the truth, while I was at Apia last, I paid a visit to the place."

"Ah!" exclaimed Eugene, eagerly, "tell us all about them, then."

"Really, there is not much to tell," said the Captain. "But hearing of the ancient works, and that they were built of cut stone, I determined to see them for myself. I persuaded a friend to accompany me, and early one morning we started out with native guides. The spot was about a day's journey from the town, and we found stone pillars and slabs for flooring, the whole forming a perfect circle. The uniformity in the size of the stones, and their smoothness, certainly indicated good and careful workmanship. These ruins were in a dense forest with a heavy growth of underbrush. With much difficulty we penetrated this, and found, under an overhanging cliff a quarry of laminated lava, granular in appearance and of fine texture. To my mind, this discovery at once settled the matter. There was the structure, and here

was the quarry that furnished the stone for it. But by whom and when the building was erected, and for what purposes, I leave you to conjecture, since I have no idea, and the inhabitants have no traces of history or tradition which throw any light on the subject."

"I do n't wonder the present inhabitants know nothing about it," said the Professor, "for I am firmly persuaded it was built by another and an extinct race."

"Well, then," exclaimed Eugene, "there's no use in our bothering ourselves any more about it, for we are not likely to get at the truth if we do, and I expect there are many other wonderful things on these same islands that will better pay investigation."

"Yes," said Chester, "there are some curious caverns, I hear. Did you visit any of them, Captain?"

"Yes," was the reply, "in company with the same friend I explored a most remarkable one on the island of Savaii. At that time the caverns of Samoa had attracted very little attention, not even the missionaries having visited them, and we were laughed at for thinking of the thing; but we persisted in our undertaking, and afterwards were glad enough that we had done so. We entered this one through a well-like opening, in the level ground, back of the village of Saleaula. This opening was caused by the arch of the cave breaking, the *débris* being piled upon the floor. The roof is a perfect arch, and quite as symmetrical as the finest railway tunnel.

"Traversing this subterraneous cavity a distance of more than a mile and a half toward the sea, we came to a cross-section, or passage, running at right-angles, of the same size and physical structure. This we followed for nearly a mile, finding a uniform level, with good air. At length we returned to the main cavern, and followed it, perhaps, three-quarters of a mile, when it branched; continuing to the right for half a mile or so, we found

the roof broken and further progress checked, but discovered a small opening upward, sufficiently large for egress."

"That's a cave worth talking about?" exclaimed Eugene. "Now, how many miles of passages should you say there were, Captain?"

"We did not determine the full extent of the subterranean passages," was the answer; "but I can assure you, there are many miles of them."

"How far above the level of the sea is the floor of the cave?" asked Chester.

"Not more than twenty feet, I should say," replied the Captain, "while the roof is scarcely more than ten feet in thickness."

"What is the character of the surface of the country?" asked the Professor. "Though I think I could tell pretty nearly," he quickly added.

"This arterial system of caves is beneath a wide and level stretch of country very heavily timbered," the Captain answered.

"Are they connected with the ocean in any way?" asked Chester.

"I am inclined to believe that they are," was the reply, "as in some places upon the floor the water was quite salt."

"There are fresh-water springs upon the beach in many places, are there not?" asked the Professor.

"Yes, I observed a great many," answered the Captain.

"Then," said the Professor, "like subterranean channels, you may be sure, account for those springs."

"I am sure you are right," exclaimed the Captain; "for in the Bay of Satupaitai is a great spring of fresh water, fifty feet from low-water mark, which boils like a huge cauldron from the rocks beneath. Here the natives bathe in fresh water, though surrounded by the brine of the ocean."

"And I have seen it stated," said Chester, "that in the small island of Anuu there is a mud lake which is connected with the ocean. The proof being that it rises and falls regularly with the ocean tides."

"That is so," affirmed the Captain; "but a still more remarkable phenomenon is presented upon an atoll called Quiros, two hundred and thirty miles northeast of Savaii, the circular reef of which is low, scarce high enough to resist the waves during a northern gale. This reef surrounds a lagoon of fresh water, in which small vessels might anchor. And now I think of it, I must say, it seems reasonable that the water-sheds of Samoa, by subterranean passages, such as we have been speaking of, may supply this lagoon with fresh water."

"It is possible, surely," said the Professor, thoughtfully.

"Well, we must see these wonderful caves for ourselves," said Eugene; "and now let me ask about the climate and vegetation. Are they all that is claimed for them?"

"They are all you could wish, young man," returned the Captain. "The climate is warm and equable, and the warmth and moisture of the atmosphere, joined to a vigorous and prolific soil, have clothed the islands with a varied and luxuriant vegetation. Yes, eternal summer gives them a perennial flora. From base to mountain-top they are covered with verdure. Excepting the shore-line of lava I have mentioned, and a lava-field of a few miles in area on the eastern end of Savaii, there is no space of bare or naked land in the entire group. The soil is a rich mold upon the slopes, and even upon the precipitous mountain sides, while the valleys and level tracts are a deep alluvial deposit of the same, the whole a decomposition of vegetable matter with only a slight proportion of decomposed lava; this being impregnated with iron makes a vigorous tillable loam. So rapid is the growth

and decay of vegetable matter, and so long has it been accumulating, that the interstices of broken lava upon abrupt declivities are filled with soil, which is again protected from heavy washes by trees and shrubbery."

"The islands must present a magnificent picture from the sea," suggested Chester.

"Yes, indeed," returned the Captain, enthusiastically; "upon a near approach the groves of cocoanut trees are seen lining the beach, with native villages nestling among them. The background of abrupt hills or long easy slopes is covered with a heavy growth of timber, clothed in living green."

"The forest timber must be very valuable," observed the Professor.

"I think it is quite safe to say that no islands in the Pacific have such primeval forests, and such a variety of valuable woods," rejoined the Captain. "The trees are tall and symmetrical, with clear and uniform stems, such as are seldom found in groves of hard-wood. There are heavy timber-trees with umbrageous foliage, and groves of lighter, softer, but more perishable trees."

"What are some of the more important trees?" asked Chester.

"The tamanu, which you must have noticed at Tahiti, a heavy tree with spreading branches, the trunk often four feet in diameter; the *fetau*, perhaps the most valuable timber-tree in the group, the wood being of various shades of red, of fine texture, and enduring polish; the *fau*, common to most islands of the Pacific, is here very abundant and more valuable to the natives than any other tree, except, perhaps, the cocoanut and bread-fruit, the wood being used for canoes, and its fibrous inner bark for fishing-nets and fine lines, also for beautiful mats with a fine, soft nap; the aao, banyan-tree, which I need not describe, for —"

"What! the real banyan-tree, Captain?" interrupted Eugene.

"Yes, the genuine *Ficus Indica*," was the reply. "It is not abundant in Samoa, though perhaps as much so as in the Indies, considering the area of the islands; here it is the monarch of the forest, lifting its great leafy dome above the surrounding foliage. It may be seen from the coast miles in the interior."

"Well, I'm glad I shall have a chance to see it. What else is there, Captain?"

"The ifi, native chestnut, and the vi are both large trees, growing in abundance. Both, as you know, are fruit-bearing."

"The vi," said Chester, "is known in Tahiti as the Brazilian plum, and bears, I was told, but once a year."

"True," rejoined the Captain, "and the fruit, when ripe, is of a rich orange-color, as large as the largest peach. It is very nutritious, and, in taste, more nearly approaches the apple than does any other tropical fruit. The ifi, or chestnut, is particularly attractive from its graceful stem and buttresses, which grow out from the trunk at the base. These remarkable supports surround the tree in perfect regularity, having very thin bark, and are sometimes six or eight feet high, gradually tapering from the tree to the earth."

"Of course, they have the paper mulberry?" said Eugene.

"Yes," responded the Captain, "the ua, or Chinese paper mulberry, is very abundant in Samoa, so much so that the osiers or twigs are seldom regularly cultivated. The miniature thickets are found on all the lowlands. From the inner bark of the ua, as you know, is manufactured the native cloth, called 'tapa,' in most of the groups, but 'siapo' in Samoa, and I assure you, it is a rare sight to see the girls making it. They are the sole manufacturers, and are wonderfully skillful and patient

over their work In the first place, for the finest cloth, they always employ very young trees, not more than fifteen or sixteen months old, and only two or three



'NATIVES MAKING CLOTH.

inches in diameter. They begin their work by cutting down the tree, peeling off the bark, and steeping it for about forty-eight hours in water, so as to enable the rough,

outer bark to be removed from the thin and delicate inner bark. By constant beating, this substance becomes greatly increased in width and reduced in thickness, and, like gold-leaf, it can be beaten out to almost any extent."

"But how do they make such long pieces of cloth as I know they do," asked Eugene, "the strips of bark being only ten or twelve inches wide?"

"A number of them are united by overlapping the edges and putting between them arrow-root dissolved in water," replied the Captain. "The united pieces, while still wet, are again beaten, and after a while the two pieces become one, and all signs of the junction disappear."

"What is the next step?" asked Chester.

"When a piece of sufficient size is made," said the Captain, "printing and staining are the next processes. The dyes are generally of three kinds, red, brown, and yellow. The first two colors are obtained from clays, and the third from the root of the turmeric. The women who make and print the cloth do not prepare the dyes, that being a separate occupation, and among the Samoans the different professions are, or rather, have heretofore been, strictly limited to certain families, just as is the case with the castes in India. In printing the pattern is made by fastening the flexible ribs of the cocoanut-leaf on a board. When the ribs are quite hard and dry, the cloth is stretched over them, and the dye rubbed over it with a stiff brush, so that it only adheres to those parts of the cloth which press against the raised pattern below. For patterns of a larger size a softer bark is used, which holds a quantity of color."

"We must surely see the girls make cloth," said Eugene. "What other important trees and plants have they, Captain?"

"Besides those I have mentioned," replied the Captain,

“there are the *paoga* and *tala*, two varieties of *pandanus*, from which the native coarse and finer sleeping-mats are made. Then the ulu or bread-fruit tree flourishes in greatest variety and luxuriance. In every village these useful trees are interspersed with the cocoanut, and surround each house, while every town has one or more groves in the interior. On the leeward end of Savaii, one can walk for a mile or more at a time through ulu groves. The tree is not tall, but uniform and beautiful in shape, like the finest specimens we saw on Nukihiva. Then there is the cocoanut palm, the anauli, and among lesser plants the ava.”

“The ava?” repeated Eugene, inquiringly.

“Yes,” replied the Captain; “for what is termed kava or cava in Tonga, Fiji, and many other groups, in Samoa and Hawaii is called ava.” It is a species of the pepper plant, a spreading shrub, growing in clusters from six to ten feet in height. The stalks are deep green, in joints like bamboo or sugar-cane. The plant grows from a large bulbous root. We already know a great deal about it, and so I will merely say that in Samoa it is only used on special occasions — councils, entertaining of friends; being generally tendered as an evidence of great esteem. I never saw or knew of a case of intoxication or stupefaction from its use in the islands. Here the liquor is prepared by young girls, who masticate the dried root, and strain through cocoanut fibers into a large bowl hewn from the trunk of a tree, the inner side of which, from constant use, attains a beautiful pigeon-blue color or enamel of high polish. The plant, I ought to say, grows wild, though it is extensively cultivated in many places.”

“If I remember rightly, Captain,” said the Professor, “there are not many odoriferous shrubs and flowers on the islands.”

“No,” was the reply, “the plants of those characters

would not take high rank in botany either for multitude or variety; yet there are few people who pay greater tribute to floral nature than the Samoans. Every scent-bearing plant and fragrant flower is brought into requisition for wreaths, necklaces, and other adornments of the person. Native oil for the hair is scented with ififi filofiloa, afia oliin, and other odoriferous plants and flowers; while necklaces are made from taitaipo, luni, pupuiono, and the fruit of the oli tato. These are some of the indigenous flowering plants having no technical names."

"For heaven's sake! What do they want of technical names?" growled Eugene, "are not those they already have outrageous enough, I'd like to know?"

"Without a doubt," laughed the Captain; "but I suppose they are sweet-sounding enough to the fair Samoan girls, whom, without having seen, you love."

"That settles it," said Eugene. "Go on, Professor, I see you were about to say something."

"I was merely going to ask about the climbing ferns," said the Professor. "They have one or more varieties, Captain?"

"Yes, the laumapapa and the laufassafasa," was the reply. "Often these evergreen ferns climb to the tops of the highest trees, their rich green tassels pendant from the overhanging boughs, making a delightful wild-wood picture. I assure you, I have been particularly impressed by the abundance and great variety of ferns in the mountains."

"How about fruit and vegetables?" asked Eugene.

"I wonder you have n't asked that question before," said his brother, laughingly.

"Comfort your longing soul, O my friend," said the Captain; "for if those things you ask about are limited in variety, this fact is amply compensated for by their

great abundance. So bounteous is nature indeed, that every day is practically to the Samoan a holiday."

"That's the spot I'm looking for!" exclaimed Eugene, with enthusiasm.

"Yes," the Captain went on, "the production of food and the support of a family can scarcely be termed labor, yet few aboriginal people live better. Bread-fruit hangs invitingly about every house; it is their most important article of food. There are several varieties, and from them many dishes are prepared. The fruit here is mostly baked in ovens and eaten with fish, yams, taro, and bananas. It is not a nutritive food; but the ease with which it is produced and the consequent exemption from much hard labor which it secures, makes the natives disinclined to substitute for it the maize of the temperate zone, though Indian corn grows in great luxuriance, and is known by the Samoans to be more conducive to the development of mental and physical vigor than the favorite bread-fruit."

"That won't do for me; at least, not alone," said Eugene. "What else have they?"

"There are eight distinct varieties of the yam," replied the Captain. "It is indigenous, growing in the woods and high upon the mountains, where it attains its greatest size; sometimes a single cluster of roots weighing eighty pounds. It is, however, the cultivated yam upon which the natives rely. Every family has its yam and taro patch."

"While the yam is very good, I suppose the taro is the better of the two?" said Chester, inquiringly.

"Yes," replied the Captain, "the taro is a rich, nutritious, and healthful food; in growth and appearance not unlike the potato, as you know, but far more valuable as a vegetable food, containing as it does a large proportion of starch. Taro is highly esteemed by the whites on

the islands, and no doubt will ever be their staple food. "From the young green tops the natives make a variety of very palatable dishes."

"I suppose there is plenty of arrow-root?" said Chester.

"It is indigenous," was the reply. "It is found wild, but seldom cultivated, and is rarely used. Great quantities might be raised by a little effort."

"What of the fruits, Captain?" asked Eugene.

"The plantain and the banana grow upon all the islands in great profusion and variety. In some districts there are regularly cultivated banana plantations. The wild banana is especially valuable for its fiber, much resembling hemp in texture. Oranges, lemons, and limes are very abundant, the last named in great variety and excellence. Guavas, mangoes, and citrons are found in plenty. The citron-tree is justly praised for its beauty, its dark-green foliage shading the fruit, which hangs like great corrugated masses of gold."

"They have a plant from which indigo is obtained, I have heard," said Chester.

"Yes," answered the Captain, "and it grows profusely. The stem is fine, and the whole plant rich in coloring matter. It is not cultivated. Coffee is also found wild, though not in sufficient quantities to ever justify the belief that it is a native of Samoa. The wild turmeric is very generally distributed, as I have already intimated, it is used chiefly as a dye; but the curry made from it is a very superior article, comparing favorably with the finest curry of the Indies. The atone (nutmeg) is indigenous and valuable, the mace being exceedingly fine and rich. There are two varieties of cotton growing on the islands, both species of the sea-island cotton, one of much larger fiber than the other; but they are not cultivated."

"Was not the white or Irish potato introduced some years ago?" asked the Professor.

"It was," answered the Captain, "but has not proved a success. It grows strong and rapidly, but loses flavor. The seed runs out, or the bulb turns to the sweet potato. Upon the mountains or high plateaus, I have no doubt the potato would flourish quite as well as it does in Hawaii."

"Is there anything interesting to be said of the fauna of the islands?" asked Eugene.

"Very little indeed," was the answer. "A few wild dogs are found in the mountains, but they have not the appearance or habits of the wolf or fox, and have evidently come from the domestic animal brought by shipping to the islands. The pig is common, of course; numbers are seen in every village; they and fowls comprise the animal food of the natives. Wild hogs roam in herds through the forests, and were numerous long before LaPérouse or Captain Cook ever saw the group. The same is true of the common barn-yard fowl."

"How and when did they get there, then?" asked Eugene.

"Tell me how and when the ancestors of the people those great navigators found on the islands got there, and I will answer your question, for no doubt they came in the same way and at the same time."

"I doubt it," exclaimed Eugene, "for that does not agree with the traditions of the Marquesans or those of the inhabitants of other groups."

"Ah, but you must remember the Marquesans and the other islanders you refer to are far to the east of Samoa; and while the first settlers of the last named group may have come well equipped, those to the east may have landed utterly destitute."

"That may be so," admitted Eugene, dubiously.

"At any rate," said the Captain, "the chicken is quite as abundant where we are going as in civilized and

thickly settled countries. The same fowl is also wild in the forests in great numbers."

"There are very few native birds, I think," said Chester.

"True," assented the Captain; "but most of those the islands possess are of peculiar habits and rare plumage. Some species are unknown elsewhere. The dodo, or, more properly, the 'little dodo,' long supposed to be extinct, is found only in this group. It is a timid bird, lonely in its habits, exceedingly scarce in number, and only found in lonely and almost inaccessible parts of the mountains. The dodo was once considered sacred by the Samoans; at another time used as food by the great chiefs. It is the *tooth-billed pigeon*, having three teeth upon either side of the lower mandible."

"I have seen some references to this strange bird," remarked the Professor; "and I may say that for more than two centuries past the few remains of the dodo known to the scientific world, such as a foot or a head, together with some paintings made of it in the seventeenth century, have been preserved in European museums with great care, and have been regarded as of great value. Several scientific treatises upon it have been contributed to learned societies within the last fifty years, but so little has been known of it by naturalists, that they have not been agreed as to what family it belonged, or what were its habits."

"There are several varieties of the pigeon family, are there not?" asked Chester.

"Yes, the *manuma* and *manutago* are two varieties of cooing doves; of green, white, and golden plumage, with scarlet crests. The native pigeon (*lupi*), a trifle larger than our tame species, is very abundant. Many are tamed and carried upon sticks by native chiefs."

"What are some of the other birds?" asked Eugene.

"I can't think of but one other at this moment,"

replied the Captain, "for the water-fowl are scarcely worthy of mention; but the kingfisher is a small bird of exceedingly beautiful plumage."

"There is the vampire bat," suggested the Professor; "if not a bird, at least, it has wings."

"Ah, yes," returned the Captain, "the bat, the Professor refers to, sometimes called the flying-fox, is identical in appearance with the *Pteropus Edwardii* of Madagascar, and is very abundant; once it was considered sacred, and entered very largely into the structure of their reverential religion. It attains great size, often measuring four feet from tip to tip of wings. It is neither carnivorous nor insectivorous, feeding, as it does, exclusively on fruits."

"As there are so few animals and birds, I hope there are no reptiles," remarked Eugene.

"There are no poisonous reptiles," said the Captain, "but there is a considerable variety of harmless snakes upon the island of Savaii — white, red, green, black, and spotted. I only saw them at this island, or on the islets belonging to it, and it was here that I learned of the 'crowing snake.'"

"The what?" exclaimed Eugene, in great astonishment.

"The crowing snake," repeated the Captain. "There is such a reptile, without the shadow of a doubt. It is the subject of native songs, and the testimony of both whites and natives points directly to the fact that they have a snake which *crows like a cock*."

"Oh, come, come, Captain! That's spreading it on a little too thick," said Eugene. "Remember, we're going there."

"Well, I acknowledge I did not see or hear one myself, and the apparent physical impossibility of such an anomaly made me skeptical, but the unequivocal testi-

mony of the missionaries to the existence of such a reptile seems too strong to be rejected."

"The unequivocal testimony of the missionaries!" repeated Eugene. "Well, that settles it, I suppose. But I'm really afraid I can't stand any more to-day, Captain; and so, with your permission, I'll withdraw."

"Permission is granted," laughed the Captain; "but as we can't get along without you, I shall follow your example," and so the party broke up.

CHAPTER XXIV.

THE SAMOAN ISLANDS — CONTINUED.

IT was plain enough to see, next morning, that the thoughts of all were turned to Samoa ; and hardly had the little party assembled on the quarter-deck, when Eugene, who had had ample time over night to digest the crowing-snake story, turned to the Captain, and said :

“ We have heard something about the islands, the animals, birds, and reptiles, now please tell us about the people of Samoa, give us your idea of them, Captain.”

“ Well,” replied the Captain, good naturedly, “ the Samoans, as you well know, are of the same race as the Marquesans, the Tahitians, the Tongans, the Raratongans, the Maories, and the Hawaiians. But they are of a better type than any of these ; far better, to my mind, than the Hawaiians, whose dark skin speaks of Papuan blood. Never subject to the inroads of other races and consequent admixture, uncorrupted and unchanged, they have preserved many of their original characteristics. The face, mind you, has many of the distinctive marks of the European. Generally the profile is decided and the facial angle distinct, the occiput broad, but seldom elevated. Unlike the Malay, the nose is never artificially flattened, deformity of person never having been practiced among them. The nose is usually straight, but not so delicate in structure as that of the whites ; the mouth large, and the lips thicker than those of the Europeans. The profile of the young girls is often very pronounced ; the hair black, soft, and sometimes fine and wavy — never

crisp and curly in either sex. Among the men beards are not so general as among the whites; yet many have luxuriant beards. The eye is black, soft, and pleasing, giving that melancholy air and 'meekness' of expression which Humboldt mentions as characteristic of the islanders of the Pacific. The skin is dark-olive, resembling polished copper, presenting no difference in the sexes, though the prominent chiefs and better families are much lighter, with smoother skins. They are also taller and more symmetrical in person than the common people. The infant is much lighter in complexion than the adult. The male Samoan is tall, erect, and proud in bearing, with smooth, straight, and well-rounded limbs, the contour of person seldom presenting muscular protuberance or development. The females are generally slight, especially the young girls; erect and symmetrical, easy and graceful in their movements, the charm of light-heartedness seeming to follow every action."

"But are they good-looking? That's what I want to know," said Eugene, a little impatiently.

"Beauty of feature, my dear boy, is not the rule," replied the Captain, "though many of the village maidens are exceedingly beautiful."

"Ah! those are the ones I want to see. But go on, Captain."

"The Samoan," continued the Captain, "does not incline to obesity, like some of the islanders we have met, seldom, in fact, losing his erect bearing and roundness of limb and figure. I have seen more than one woman, who, at fifty, might still be called beautiful."

"All things considered, you would not call them a warlike people, Captain?" said Chester, inquiringly.

"Though internecine war has often desolated the islands, and the jealousy of districts, chiefs, and families is great," was the thoughtful reply, "still the Samoans, as

a people, are mild and peaceful in their instincts, mirth-loving, generous, and happy in their peaceful state."

"I judge, from what you said yesterday, that they do not love hard work," said Eugene.

"It is true that, though possessing superior powers of endurance and great energy in action, still, as a race, they shrink from labor of any kind."

"There are no very rich men among them, I suppose?" said Chester.

"No," was the reply, "for heretofore they have been without a stimulus, ambition has not created objective motives, and accumulation, or even a desire to amass wealth, is almost foreign to their natures. Then, too, communism is a creed among them, and although confined to the members of the family, this has been an effectual bar to the accumulation of property."

"You spoke of caste among them yesterday," suggested Chester.

"Caste," said the Captain, "is esteemed a fundamental basis of society, but with gradations in families hereditary, and gaining in pride and power with each succeeding generation. To a stranger there are no outward evidences of caste, except in stature and physical beauty. The house and household appointments of the common man differ but little from those of the chiefs. He, with the least pride of family, owns his tract of land, has his bread-fruit tree, taboos his cocoanut tree, cultivates his own taro-patch, and paddles his canoe as free as the greatest ruler; but he looks to his chief for protection, obeys his mandates, and is his cheerful follower and servitor in time of war."

"The people, I know, feel the greatest respect for their superiors," remarked the Professor.

"Yes," assented the Captain, "there are many families which command profound respect, such as that of Leuma-

nu, a chief of Apia, the well-known Malietoa and the female branch of the family Tooā. These names are associated with the history and traditions of the Samoans. There is a reverence felt for and attached to them, and



LEUMANU, CHIEF OF APIA.

the poorest man in Samoa knows the hereditary prestige of such a name."

"The Samoans are very polite, are they not?" asked Eugene.

"Especially so," was the answer. "In meetings and councils much time is consumed in acts of courtesy and in the interchange of compliments. When a chief or a

distinguished stranger goes through a village all noises cease. Traveling parties, *malaga*, are hospitably received and entertained. In their general intercourse violence, or even rudeness, is unknown. Women are the equals



FANTULIA, WIFE OF LEUMANU.

of men, except in government. The father carries the child as much as the mother, and joins in the preparation of food and in cooking. Labor is generally divided between them, excepting out-door work. A woman carries a burden, or paddles a boat only from choice, and her hardest labor is the manufacture of native cloth, which I have already mentioned."

"But the women make themselves useful in time of war," said Chester.

"Yes," assented the Captain. "In time of war women are emissaries, going from fort to fort unmolested. Her person is always sacred, as also are children."

"In every village, some particular maiden holds the most prominent position, I have heard," said Eugene.

"Yes," rejoined the Captain; "a chief's daughter is often the maid of the village. She is revered by her people, though not governing them, and really occupies an exalted position."

"They are a virtuous people, are they not?" asked Chester.

"Eminently so," was the reply; "indeed, with them virtue is a creed more powerful than easte, and was religiously observed before the introduction of Christianity. With the higher classes it is held more saeredly than among the lower. The maid of a village is revered more as a virgin than as a chief's daughter."

"But, Captain," objected Eugene, "I have heard something of their night-dances that hardly seems consistent with what you say."

"I admit that their night-dances too nearly approach in charaeter those of the other islanders," said the Captain. "Often they are lascivious exhibitions, and after midnight grossly sensual; but I maintain they are not proofs of practical licentiousness."

"I don't see what stronger proof you could ask for; but let that pass, and tell me, is polyandry practiced among them?"

"Never; but polygamy is common, though two wives seldom live in the same house. Often, indeed, the husband, when he takes a second wife, sends the first back to her people."

"Have they adopted the dress of the whites?" asked Chester.

"Not extensively," was the reply; "but the disposition to do so is growing, and in their efforts to don the new costume many ludicrous scenes are presented."

"I suppose it is the women who are most anxious for the change?" said Chester.

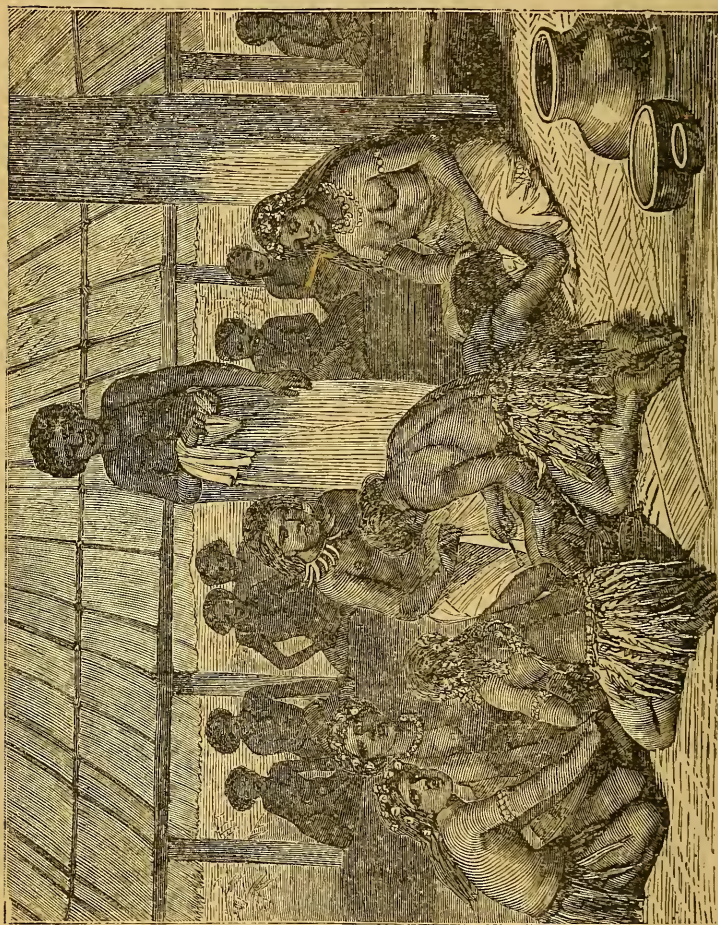
"Yes," returned the Captain; "the men wear foreign clothing only on special occasions, and this consists of army and navy uniforms which certain chiefs have acquired from trading vessels and men-of-war, and which they are fond of displaying."

"Do they still practice tattooing?" asked Eugene.

"Yes," was the answer, "and it is universal in the islands, but does not mark distinction among the people, as with the Maoris. The operation is generally performed on quite a number at the same time, in fact, all the companions of the chief's son. When, for instance, the son of the chief arrives at the proper age, say about eighteen, all the young men of his tribe assemble to partake with him of the tattoo, which is to transform them from youths into men. There is quite a ceremony, or rather a series of ceremonies, for the occasion. The operator or *matai*, is a man of great influence, and his services have to be requested in regular form, accompanied by a present of fine mats. His acceptance of the mats ratifies the bargain, though no regular charge is made. On the appointed day, the young men and their friends meet in a house agreed upon, and more mats are presented to the *matai*; if they are wealthy, they sometimes give him a canoe. The friends of the young men on these occasions supply provisions as long as the operation lasts.

"All being ready, the young chief lies on his face in front of the operator, and places his head in the lap of his sister or some other female relation, while three or four young women hold his limbs, and sing at the top of their voices, in order to drown any groans or cries he

may utter. This is done out of consideration for his reputation, as it is thought unworthy of the state of manhood to utter a sound. Still, the pain is so intense that



TATTOOING DAY IN SAMOA.

the young men often do utter groans, and sometimes actually cry out in agony."

"Do they ever get frightened and back out?" asked Eugene.

"There have been a few instances where they have been so utterly overcome with the pain that, after they have been released they have not dared to submit themselves again to the operation; in such cases they are despised for life as cowards.

"About an hour is given to each patient at one time, when he rises and another takes his place. In a week or so, the turn of the first comes round again, and so the process is continued for three or four months, according to the number, not more than five being operated on in a single day."

"Besides manufacturing native cloth and cultivating the yam and taro, to what do they give most of their attention?" asked Chester, who was not much interested in tattooing.

"To the building of houses, stone fences, canoes, making fine mats, fishing, and collecting food," answered the Captain.

"Give us some idea of the houses, if you please."

"They are generally built of the wood of the bread-fruit tree. A circle of posts surrounds a central pillar, which supports longitudinal beams. Upon these the framework of the roof is built, consisting of light sticks, nicely spliced, making a succession of circles. These circles are again crossed at right-angles by other sticks, and the whole is sewed together with sennit, the roof making a semicircle or inverted bowl, covered with thatch of sugar-cane leaves and *ti*, the space between the outer circle of posts being open, though supplied with matting for walls, which are raised and lowered in fold, as a venetian blind. The floor is slightly elevated above the ground, and covered with pebbles, upon which mats are spread. In the center is a small stone fire-place, though but little used, as cooking is done in ovens or out-buildings erected for the purpose. The houses are neat and

clean, and kept in good order. Large sleeping-screens divide the members of the family at night."



GILBERT ISLAND MANEABA.

"I suppose they have public buildings, like the maneabas of the Gilbert Islands?" said Eugene, inquiringly.

"Yes," answered the Captain, "in every village is a

town-house, used for the reception of visitors and their entertainment."

"They excel in the construction of water-crafts, do they not?" asked Chester.

"They do, indeed," was the reply. "There is the *alia*, a double war-canoe, often a hundred feet in length. The hull is made from a species of teak, the planks hewn out and fitted together, the length of the planks not being considered. These are sewed together from the inside through curved holes, the whole fastened to heavy framework. Not a nail or pin is used in the entire construction. The outer surface of the hull is smooth and of great uniformity. The *amatasi* or traveling boat is much like the *alia*, but smaller, slighter, and more graceful, the upper work of the hull is often beautifully carved. They are justly celebrated for their speed and the closeness with which they 'lay to the wind.' The *taumaulua* is the common village carrying boat; it is deep, has two bows, and carries one sail, though usually propelled by paddles. It is built after the model of a whale-boat, and though unknown until recently, is now in general use. The universal craft, however, is the single canoe, with outrigger, hewn from the trunk of a tree, and of all sizes. The outrigger, as you well know, is a long stick pointed and lying parallel with the canoe, and fastened to it by horizontal spars. It requires practice and dexterity to manage it successfully; but in it the native is at his ease, men, women, and even children showing marvelous expertness."

"But they have a special canoe for the bonito fishing, I have heard," said the Professor.

"Ah, yes, the *vaaala*," returned the Captain; "and that is the craft which most tests their skill. I assure you, when they are on the water, both canoe and crew are always objects of admiration. It is a single boat,

with outrigger, built of planks nicely jointed; the model an imitation of the lower half of the bonito, the point of the outrigger level with the bow of the boat."

"The sport of taking the bonito must be very exciting," remarked Eugene.

"It is, indeed," returned the Captain. "The position of a school of the fish is known by the sea-birds hovering over them. Instantly the boats are launched, sometimes a flotilla. No storm deters the fishermen from their purpose. Their boats mount the reef-breakers, and seem to leap over the tumbling waves beyond. Both sail and paddle are used, the crew consisting of three persons. The fisherman is equipped with a bamboo rod, line, and shell-hook, with feathers on the hook, which is trailed on the surface of the water. They are very expert in taking the fish, and never return empty-handed."

"Is the bonito canoe a fast sailor?" asked Eugene.

"Its speed is something extraordinary," was the reply.

"They must take great pains in making them," remarked Chester.

"They do," said the Captain. "They are made of *ulu*, the bread-fruit wood, and are all exactly alike. They are sewed with sennit, and furnished with sails. The making of the masts is done exclusively by women, in which they show great dexterity and exercise remarkable patience."

"What are the 'great days' I have heard mentioned by persons in speaking of Samoa?" asked Eugene.

"They are *Tâtele* and *Tâtelega*, and really they are great days, too. They are the first and second days of *palolo*, and occur in the latter part of October. The *palolo* is a sea-worm, which appears on two successive days in every year in some of the openings of the reefs, appearing at daylight, and disappearing with the rising of the sun. These marine worms are about eighteen or

twenty inches in length, are highly esteemed for food by the natives, and are taken in vast quantities by them. They seem to understand the precise day when they will appear, claiming that the day before their appearance the land and robber crabs leave the interior and seek the salt water. Before dawn every native is astir. Every craft capable of bearing man, woman, or child is brought into requisition, and the reef-passages at dawn of day are alive with canoes and noisy with exuberant life."

"Their language is very pleasing to the ear, is it not?" asked Chester.

"The language is soft and harmonious," replied the Captain, "and what it will please Eugene to know, is easily attained by English-speaking people. At first you may think there are two languages. In that case you will be mistaken. But there are delicate terms, expressive of respect, used in speaking to a chief, though a chief never uses them in speaking of himself. The adult speaks slowly and somewhat cautiously, while the children are rapid in their utterance. Prominent chiefs have what are termed 'talking-men,' who are mediums, through whom they communicate their wishes and transact business. On great occasions the orator leans upon a staff, speaking in a deliberate manner, and is listened to with attention and in silence."

"I have seen it stated that the Samoan is the only Polynesian language having a word to express thanks or gratitude," remarked Chester.

"So far as my observation goes, that is true," returned the Captain. "The expression is *faa fetai*; and certainly they are unceasing in its use."

"The language is allegorical, and generally oriental in style, is it not?" asked Eugene.

"Yes," was the reply, "they usually express their thoughts in figurative language."

"It has been reduced to writing, I am glad to know," remarked the Professor.

"Yes, through the labors of the missionaries," said the Captain, "and it is now difficult to find a child over seven years of age who cannot read; while the greater portion of the adult population both read and write."

"From what was said yesterday, I take it very little is known of the early history of Samoa," said Eugene.

"Nothing is definitely known," replied the Captain. "There are native traditions of their race, to be sure, but they are exceedingly vague. They have a few 'fine mats,' and a great 'talking-staff,' which are claimed to be several hundred years old. In treasuring such relics from generation to generation, there seems to be some historical precision; but the ruins I told you of yesterday, and the roads and the causeways of Savaii, of which I did not speak, are as a sealed book to them. Ask them who built them, and like the natives of Kusaie, they will answer, 'The evil or good spirits.'"

"What! have n't they thrown aside their old superstitions, yet?" asked Eugene.

"No; and though Christians, they are still believers in their crude mythological history. Why, every island, mountain, and many trees, fruits, birds, and fishes have associated with them some mythological tradition, and their mythology, though not so symmetrical or instructive as that of the Greeks and Romans, is scarcely less pleasing. The origin of every great family-name has a curious mythical tradition, and with these all the natives are familiar."

"Has it been mentioned who discovered the islands?" asked Chester; "if so, I have forgotten."

"They were first discovered by the Dutch 'three-ship expedition,' commanded by Rozenwein, in 1772," said the Professor, as the Captain did not answer. "La

Perouse touched at the Island of Tutuila in 1787, when the commander of one of his vessels, M. de Langle, and a boat's crew of eleven men, were killed by the natives on the north shore of the island, nearly opposite Pago-Pago. A small estuary still retains the name 'Massacre Bay,' though it is three miles from the scene of the massacre."

"Yes," said the Captain, "the natives still preserve the tradition of that sad occurrence, and speak of it with a sense of shame, but very naturally they throw the blame on the French."

"No doubt they were much to blame," rejoined the Professor; "but they were able to give the Samoans a bad name, and the islands were avoided until 1830, when the martyr Williams, of whom we have before spoken, landed at Sopapalii, on the island of Savaii, and left teachers from other groups among them. By 1838 the people were Christianized, and Williams then testified that the Samoan far surpassed the Tahitian in amiability of character, the acquisition of knowledge, and in the facility with which the children learned to read and write."

"What is the present population?" asked Chester.

"Not much above 39,000," answered the Professor; "and of these, more than 35,500 are Protestants, 5,000 of the number belonging to the Wesleyan Church, and 3,000 to 3,500 are Roman Catholics."

"You mentioned their 'fine mats,' Captain," said Chester. "They set a high value on these mats, do they not?"

"The 'ie,' or 'fine mat' of the Samoan, is a matter somewhat difficult to explain," answered the Captain, slowly. "It enters more largely into all the political ramifications of the people than any creed, custom, or tradition which they have ever held. It protects caste,

fosters the ignorant thralldom of the people, and alone serves to perpetuate barbaric prejudices. A husband will leave his wife for another, with no other motive than the acquisition of a 'fine mat.' War may be declared and peace made for the possession of a sacred mat. Families count their wealth, and all personal and real estate is computed by 'fine mats.' Chiefs and families have 'fine mats,' but only districts and governments have sacred mats. The most sacred mat is the emblem of the nationality of the islands, and its surrender would be a virtual surrender of the nation. The history and sacredness of this mat are known to most islanders of the Pacific."

"I want to ask you something about Manua," said Chester; "it seems to me it must be a most interesting spot."

"With the exception of Rose Island," answered the Captain, "Manua is the easternmost island of the group. It is nearly circular in form, that portion exposed to the southeast trades presenting a bold basaltic front, rising precipitously to a height of over two thousand feet. The remainder of the island is protected by coral reefs. Upon the north is the village of Faleasao, with good anchorage, except during a norther. Tau, the principal village of the island, is upon the western shore, looking toward Oloosiga, without a harbor, and the roadstead insecure. This is the residence of the high chief or king, who has jurisdiction over Manua, Oloosiga, and Ofoo. On the north and west there is a narrow belt of flat land next the water, covered with cocoanut trees. Ascending the mountain from this belt, small plateaus are found prolific in bread-fruit and bananas; the soil rich, and moistened by frequent showers, the entire island clothed with vegetation to the mountain-summits. There are no living streams on the island; a few springs

of brackish water, at the sea-level, and cocoanut milk supplying the necessities of the people."

"I should think it would require a large number of cocoanuts," commented Eugene.

"Why, my dear fellow," said the Captain, "this island produces the largest cocoanuts in the world. The Manuan cocoanut-shells are used for water vessels throughout the group, and have always been highly prized by other islanders. Why, a single green nut often furnishes more than half a gallon of milk, or, perhaps, more properly, water. The natives of Manua are exceedingly primitive, and have but little intercourse with the outer world. All are Christians, and the white-walled church in the center of the village is a conspicuous object to a passing vessel. The native traders carry their oil and copra in open canoes to Apia or Pago-Pago for barter."

"You mentioned Rose Island," said Chester. "I don't remember having heard the name before."

"It is merely a small, angular coral reef, just above water," returned the Captain, "and is the easternmost of all the group. A Mr. Weber bought it for one hundred dollars in trade, some years ago, to plant cocoanut trees on, but they all died, as there was too much guano. It is a great resort for birds, turtle, and fish."

"Tutuila is quite an important island, is it not?" asked Chester.

"It is the third island in the group in size and importance," replied the Captain. "It is sixty-two miles west of Manua, and is high and mountainous, with precipices rising from the ocean to a height of from 1,200, to upward of 2,300 feet. Its western end, which is lower, is covered with luxuriant vegetation, and is thickly settled. There are many good ports on the north side of the island, but the best is Pago-Pago, or Pango-Pango, on the south side. It is completely land-locked, has an

entrance clear of rocks, and water enough to float the largest vessels. At the base of the precipitous mountains, which surround the bay, native houses in small villages cluster. It is one of the safest and best harbors in the Pacific, and, being on the direct steamship route between America and Australia, must become, at no distant day, a very important port."

"Is not Pago-Pago the very harbor which was transferred to the United States some time ago?" asked Chester.

"Yes," answered the Captain, "in 1872, Commander Richard W. Meade, of the United States steamer *Narragansett*, made a treaty with Maunga, the principal chief of Le Fagaloa, and others, in which this splendid harbor was given up to our government."

"Well, I hope we shall always retain possession of it," said Eugene. "And now let me ask about the island and port to which we are bound."

"Upolu," replied the Captain, "is forty miles west of Tutuila, and in population and resources is the most important island of the group. The bay of Fagaloa, on the north side, could, by improvement, be made a valuable harbor; but perhaps it would not be worth the trouble as it is so near the port of Apia. The inner passage between the reef and shore at high water insures easy communication for small boats, and such bays as Fagaloa, except during a gale, afford sufficiently good anchorage for vessels acting as tenders to ships taking in cargo at some secure central port."

"I suppose Apia has a very good harbor?" said Chester, inquiringly.

"It is similar to that of Honolulu," replied the Captain; "the anchorages are from six to fourteen fathoms of water. The removal of a few coral rocks near the shore would add greatly to harbor facilities, while a half

mile of wharfs could be built, which, with a sea-wall, would render the port a secure and valuable depot, as well as a general maritime resort. The richness of the soil, the varied resources, capable of supporting a large population, and its central position as to population and area, make Apia the natural *entrepôt* for Samoa."

"There are many foreigners at Apia, are there not?" asked Eugene.

"The white population numbers more than two hundred," was the reply.

"What are they chiefly?"

"German and English, though there are many Americans. It is the residence of English, American, and German consuls, while the Roman Catholic Bishop acts as representative of the French government. It is the headquarters for the Pacific Islands of a great Hamburg commercial house, and several American enterprises are just starting. The foreign residents are mostly traders from the colonies, with small stores and liquor-saloons, trading with natives, and living, I am sorry to say, worse than useless lives, having no sympathy with the natives, and for selfish purposes ever ready to foment trouble among them."

Eugene was about to speak, but just at that moment came a welcome diversion, it was the cry of 'Land ho!'

"Ah!" exclaimed the Captain, starting to his feet, that is Tutuila." And rapidly the volcanic peaks of the beautiful isle came into view.

As they drew nearer, Eugene exclaimed:

"Why, Captain, it is much larger than I thought."

"It is seventeen miles long and from two to five wide," returned the Captain.

"What a number of pretty villages we can see," remarked the young man presently.

"There are just forty-three on the island, and each is governed by an independent chief," said the Captain.

"Forty-three island villages!" repeated Eugene, "and each one as lovely as a dream!"

But the steamer was under full headway, and Tutuila was soon left far astern. All thoughts were now turned to Upolu, and some hours later they were in the vicinity of the island; but it was now night, and they did not enter the splendid harbor of Apia until the next morning.

In less than an hour after they had landed Eugene had made up his mind that there were many more Americans in the town than the Captain had led him to suppose. And in this he was right; for within a comparatively short period a considerable number of our countrymen had been induced to settle there, believing that the time would soon come when the group would be under the full protection of the United States.

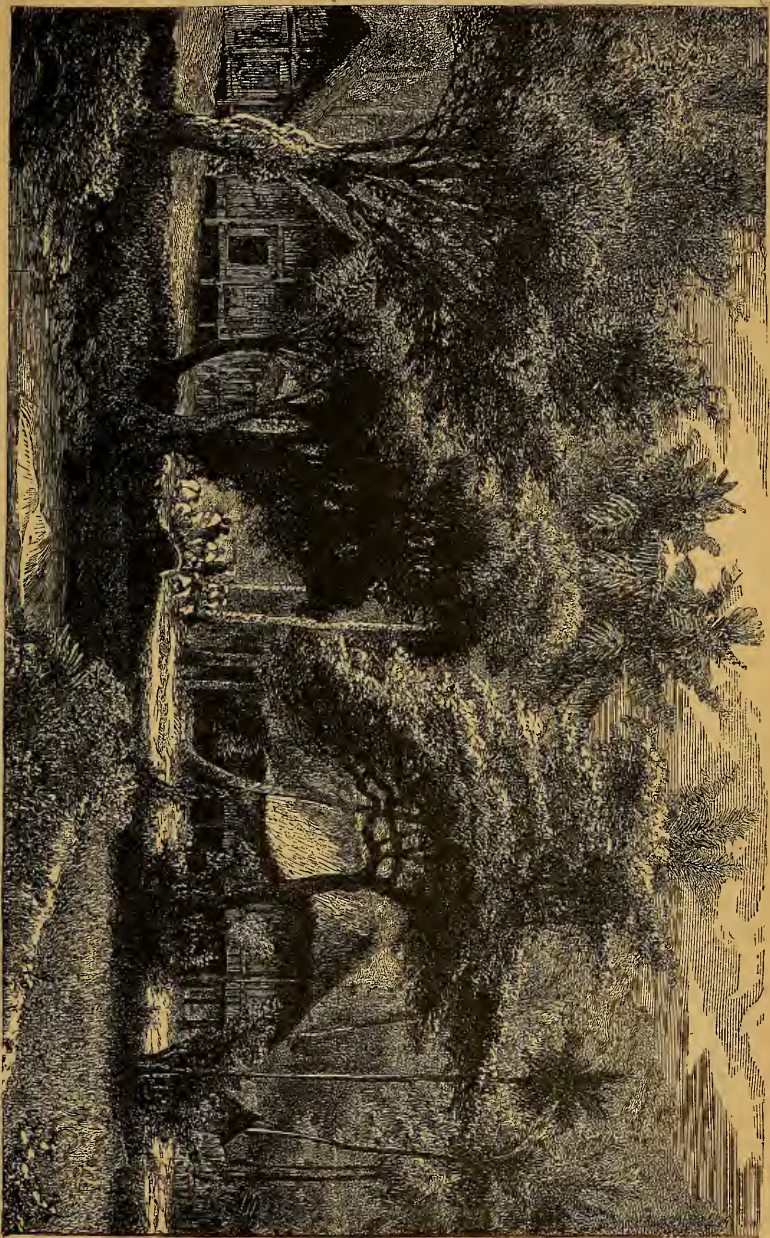
Having first called at the residence of Mr. Morris Davis, a warm personal friend of the Captain—in fact, the one who had explored the ruins and the caverns with him—they proceeded to the United States consulate, where they found Mr. Griffin, the consul, and a large number of letters and newspapers from home.

Having craved and received the consul's permission, they opened and read their precious letters, and Chester soon became particularly interested in one which had every appearance of having been penned by a female hand. Eugene, after casting several inquiring glances at his brother, at length softly whispered:

"A ten-dollar gold piece that it's from Gracie, my boy."

"Well, and what then?" asked Chester, flushing violently.

"What then? Why, nothing; only don't let it give you the blues; that's all."



AN ISLAND VILLAGE.

"Its effect will be very far from that, I promise you," said Chester; "indeed, it contains an assurance that I might not have received—at least, not so soon, had I remained quietly at home."

"Then there is so much more to be set down to the credit of the expedition," laughed Eugene.

While the brothers were thus engaged, Captain Bradford had been glancing over a New York paper. Suddenly throwing it down and turning to the consul, he asked:

"Is there any truth in the report that Germany is laying her plans to take possession of these islands, Mr. Griffin?"

"I fear there is only too much truth in it," was the regretful reply.

"What! will the United States permit it?"

"It seems to me, in that line, our country will permit almost anything. I can only judge the future by the past, you know."

"But, Mr. Griffin," objected Mr. Davis, "you forget the triple agreement."

"To what do you refer?" asked the Captain.

"Why, the United States, England, and Germany have a treaty, mutually guaranteeing the independence of Samoa."

"True," assented the consul; "and that treaty has yet several years to run, unless terminated by mutual agreement."

"Well," said the Captain, "the English seem to be growing very suspicious, any way. Here is what one of their newspapers says," and taking up the journal, he read:

"Germany is rapidly increasing her trade in Polynesia. This trade began in the Samoan Islands and has extended on all sides. The chief commercial port of the

Germans is Apia, in the Island of Upolu. The largest Teutonic population is found in the Hawaiian Islands, the number now exceeding 1,000. At Honolulu alone there are more than one hundred-and twenty German merchants, and seventy-two out of eighty-two sugar plantations are in German hands. The trade between Oceanica and Hamburg is said to amount to nearly \$1,000,000 per annum. Prince Bismarck, it is said, has fully determined to gain a permanent foothold in this part of the world, and the indications are that his iron grasp will fall upon Samoa.' ”

“All that you have read about the growing German trade in Polynesia, is quite true,” said Mr. Griffin; “and there is not the slightest doubt that Bismarck’s palm fairly itches to grasp these rich and lovely isles.”

“I trust the day is far distant when he will do so, at any rate,” rejoined the Captain.

“Well, Bradford,” said Mr. Davis, after a pause, “it is nearly noon, and I want you and your friends to return to my house with me. We shall find a gentleman there whom you will be glad to see.”

“Who, pray?” asked the master of the *Albatross*, wonderingly.

“Do you remember Captain Watson?”

“What! James Watson of the *Neptune*?”

“The same.”

“Of course I do.”

“Well, he arrived in port only yesterday, and he has a passenger with him, a professor in one of your New England colleges, I believe.”

“What’s that?” asked Professor Singleton, with eager interest. “Do you recall his name, sir?”

“Gregory — Professor William Gregory, if I’m not mistaken.”

“Well, well!” exclaimed the palæontologist, highly

excited, "this is fortunate. From our own college, my young friends. Only think of it. What a delightful meeting! Let us go at once, I beg."

"One moment," smiled the Captain, "you quite forget the main object of our visit here." Then turning to the consul: "Mr. Griffin, does it so happen that you have at any time come in contact with one George Thompson, a sort of trader among the islands?"

"Thompson — George Thompson," mused the consul. "Does he own a small and fast-sailing schooner — the *Rover*, I think it is called?"

"That's the man."

"Well, then. I saw him this very day. He came here from Niue, I believe."

"What!" exclaimed the brothers, in a breath, "he is in this town now?"

"Not quite so fast, my friends," smiled the consul. "I did not say that. He *was* here; and I saw him less than an hour before you called."

"What luck!" cried Eugene. "And where is he now?"

"He has gone to Pago-Pago in the little vessel which brought him here."

"Captain," exclaimed Eugene, turning to the commander of the yacht, "you remember the craft that was getting under way just as we came ashore?"

"Yes, I remember."

"Well, that was the vessel. I am sure of it."

"Without the shadow of a doubt," agreed the consul.

"Then let us start for Pago-Pago at once," said Eugene, promptly.

"Better remain where you are," advised the consul. "He expects the *Rover* here in a day or so, to take him to Tonga, and will return to-morrow. If you undertake to follow him, you only run the risk of missing him; and if you wish very much to see him, your best course

will be to keep a sharp lookout for the *Rover*, and when she arrives, keep an eye on her. In that way you are pretty sure to nail him."

"That's it!" agreed the Captain; "and that's just what we will do. And now, as we have already taken up too much of your valuable time, Mr. Griffin, we will transfer the infliction to my friend Davis, here."

"I can stand it," laughed Mr. Davis; "so come along, or I fear Captain Watson and the Professor will be getting impatient."

So, after promising to see the consul again, they accompanied Mr. Davis to his delightful home, in the pleasantest part of the town, and there found Captain James Watson and Professor William Gregory patiently awaiting his return.

The astonishment of these two worthy gentlemen on beholding the one, an old friend and brother officer, and the other, an old class-mate and brother professor in the same college, can better be imagined than described. It almost took away their appetites, which had been growing with enforced delay; but after much talking and comparing of notes, all sat down to a bountifully spread table, and enjoyed a hearty repast.

After it was over, and they had once more gathered in the drawing-room, Professor Singleton seized his brother professor affectionately by the button-hole, and exclaimed:

"And so, my dear frater, you have been rambling over Australia, New Zealand, and Tasmania? How I envy you!"

"Yes, it has been a most delightful trip," assented Professor Gregory, "and I have enjoyed it exceedingly."

"The Australians—I mean the Anglo-Australians—are quite a go-ahead people, I have been led to believe," said Eugene, in a tone that invited further information on the subject.

"They are, indeed, my young friend," answered Professor Gregory, readily. "They are rapidly developing the country, and building up some really splendid cities in that great and far-away island."

"I wish you would tell us something about the country and its inhabitants," said Eugene.

"Ah! do, my dear Professor," urged the palæontologist.

"I am perfectly willing to do so, if it would be agreeable to the company," and Professor Gregory looked inquiringly toward Mrs. Davis.

"We should be delighted, I am sure," said their hostess, in answer to the look.

"Wait a moment before you begin!" exclaimed Mr. Davis. "It is a delightful evening, and I think we would be more comfortable out on my little veranda here,—come," and passing through the open windows, they seated themselves on the pretty open portico, and under the dark-leaved bread-fruit trees and waving palms.

CHAPTER XXV.

AUSTRALIA.—TASMANIA.

“MY visit,” began Professor Gregory, “as you know, was not alone to Australia, but to other islands of Australasia, — a name, by the way, given by modern geographers to what is now regarded as the fifth division of the globe; and though at first confined to Australia and its contiguous islands, is now made to comprehend all the islands in that part of the Pacific, commencing with Papua, and including the Admiralty Islands, New Britain, New Ireland, and even the Solomon Archipelago on the north; Queen Charlotte’s Isles, the New Hebrides, and New Caledonia on the east; Tasmania, New Zealand, and Chatham Isle on the south and southeast; and all the interjacent islands. A part of these, I think, as, for instance, the New Hebrides, New Caledonia, Queen Charlotte’s, and, indeed, the Solomons, should be classed with the Loyalty and Fiji Islands in Melanesia, as Logan and others place them. The English usually restrict the term Australasia to the great island, and Tasmania, and New Zealand. The French, on the other hand, make the name Melanesia include not only what is generally understood by that term, but all Australasia besides.

“Of course, I only visited a few of these many islands, and the first on which I set my foot was Australia. We came to anchor in Port Phillip, and shortly afterwards I landed in Melbourne, the Capital of Victoria, on the banks of the Yarra-Yarra River, about nine miles from its mouth, at the upper end of the great estuary. It is

a city of about 225,000 inhabitants, and growing quite rapidly. The principal part of the town is on the north side of the river, but some wards lie on the southern side. The river is spanned by a substantial bridge. On the north side the chief part of the town lies in a valley with its suburbs carried over two hills. The south side is flat and swampy, excepting the sandy margin of Hobson's Bay, where Sandridge, now a part of the city, stands. The streets of Melbourne are mostly laid out at right-angles, wide, straight, and running the whole length and breadth of the town. They are macadamized in the middle, well drained, mostly flagged at the sides, and lighted with gas and electricity. It is quite a handsome city, with the exception of some very narrow streets or lanes in the older part. In general the buildings are either of brick or stone, and well constructed. It became the seat of a Roman Catholic bishop in 1847, and of an Anglican bishop in 1848; some years later the Catholic diocese was erected into an archbishopric. Among the many prominent buildings are the houses of parliament, the post-office, the treasury, the custom-house, the free library — with an excellent museum of art and a reading-room, — an opera house, several theaters, and a costly club house.

“Of course, I was greatly interested in the rapidly growing university, which, as perhaps you will remember, Professor, was opened in April, 1855. It occupies a beautiful site, just north of the city, and has some forty acres of land, which form part of extensive pleasure grounds. The buildings are arranged in a parallelogram, something after the plan we hope in time to carry out. The institution has departments of law, medicine, civil engineering, and arts, and enjoys an annual government appropriation of about \$45,000.”

“There is a gallery of fine arts, and a botanic garden

attached to the university, if I remember rightly," said Professor Singleton.

"Yes," assented the other, "and also a public museum



RIVER YARRA-YARRA, AT ST. HUBERT.

of natural history, manufactures, and mining, as well as a bureau of statistics, with a fine observatory."

"I have heard that they have excellent water-works," suggested Chester.

"Yes," rejoined Professor Gregory, "the Yan-Yean water-works supply the city from an artificial lake formed in the valley of the Plenty River, more than eighteen miles away."



A VINEYARD AT SAINT HUBERT.

"And they have several very fine parks or pleasure grounds, have they not?" asked Eugene.

"Yes," and all in the immediate neighborhood of the city," was the reply.

"I suppose Fitzroy gardens is considered the finest?" said Eugene.

"Perhaps; but the Royal Park and Carlton Garden are very beautiful."

"I suppose there are several railways leading into the city?" said Chester, inquiringly.

"Yes, four," answered the Professor, "besides a short one connecting it with the harbor. And there are good roads to all the principal points in the country."

"I presume you made some delightful excursions?" suggested Professor Singleton.

"I did, indeed," was the emphatic reply; "and one of the most delightful was up the valley of the Yarra-Yarra, as far as St. Hubert. I have gazed upon many pleasant scenes, but few more beautiful than the river at that point. I shall never forget it."

"St. Hubert is quite an interesting place, is it not?" asked Eugene. "I have heard something of its extensive vineyards."

"Have you ever visited any of the magnificent vineyards of California?" asked Professor Gregory.

"Never," answered Eugene, regretfully.

"Then I fear I can hardly give you an adequate idea of those of St. Hurbert. They cover acres—I might say square miles; rows upon rows of stakes, some three or four feet high, to which the vines are tied, and these, at the proper season, loaded with delicious grapes. It is a wonderful sight."

"You went to Sydney, of course?" said Chester.

"Certainly," was the reply; "and was greatly interested in the rapidly increasing town. It is situated on the south side of a lovely bay called Port Jackson, and is the capital of New South Wales. The city is regularly laid out, after the most approved modern examples; the streets are long and spacious, the buildings well erected,

and the place adorned with many very superior public institutions and edifices of a beautiful architectural design. The stores of Sydney are particularly fine, indeed imposing, and in many instances hardly second to those of New York or Boston. The city is the residence of the Governor of New South Wales, is the see of a bishop and the abode of the prelate, and the center of the judicial courts, and may be regarded as one of the two great centers of literature for all the Australian colonies. Connected with the university, whose degrees confer the same rank as those of the English universities, are St. Paul's Anglican college, St. John's Roman Catholic college, a Presbyterian college, and a Wesleyan college. There are also a normal school, a nautical school, many public and private schools, a free museum, a free library, an observatory, several daily and weekly papers, and eight or ten monthly periodicals."

"The harbor, I suppose, is one of the best in the world," said Chester.

"It is a magnificent harbor," replied the Professor. "It is completely landlocked, and the largest vessels can come close to the wharves; and extensive ship-yards and dry-docks furnish every facility for repairing vessels. The port is defended by several well-constructed forts and batteries."

"What is the population?" asked Mr. Davis.

"With the suburbs, I should think, not far from 160,000."

"Where did you go, from Sydney?" asked Eugene.

"I hired a very good team and driver, and with the Captain here, went right across the mountains into the interior, a hundred and fifty miles or so, and so gained a general idea of the appearance of the country. We stopped at Paramatta and Windsor, both important country towns, and passed the first night in a village on the

banks of a river, at the foot of the Blue Mountains, nearly forty miles from Sydney. The roads were excellent, being thoroughly macadamized, and it was a pleasure to ride over them. The one we took is much frequented, and perhaps is the oldest in the colony. The land is inclosed with high rail fences, kept in good repair. There are many substantial houses and good cottages to be seen on every hand; but, although a large portion of the land is under cultivation, there are still many tracts in a wild state.

“The extreme uniformity of the vegetation is the most remarkable feature in the landscape of this part of Australia. Everywhere there are open woodlands, the ground being partially covered with a thin pasture, with little appearance of verdure. At one time we entered a grove of giant trees, the finest we had hitherto seen. We both uttered cries of admiration at sight of the eucalypti, two hundred feet high, whose spongy bark was at least five inches in thickness. The trunks measured twenty feet in circumference, and were furrowed by streams of odorous sap. Not a branch, not a twig, not a single shoot, not even a knot, disfigured their perfect symmetry. They could not have issued smoother from the hand of the turner. They were like so many columns exactly mated, and could be counted by hundreds, spreading at a vast height into capitals of finely-shaped branches adorned with vertical leaves, from which hung solitary flowers, whose calices were like inverted urns. Nearly all the trees we saw belonged to this family, and mostly had their leaves placed like these, in a vertical, instead of, as with us, in a horizontal position. The foliage was scanty, and of a peculiar pale-green tint, without any gloss. For this reason the woods appeared light and shadowless. This, although a loss of comfort to us and to all travelers, under the scorching rays of the sun, must be of import-

ance to the farmer, as it allows grass to grow where otherwise it would not. The trees are evergreen, not shedding their leaves periodically."

"Why is it," asked Eugene, "that the leaves present their edges and not their faces to the sun? I don't understand it."

"In Australia," said Professor Gregory, "where the air is exceedingly dry, where rains are rare, and the soil is parched, the trees need neither wind nor sun. Hence these narrow leaves seek to defend themselves against the elements and preserve themselves from too great an evaporation. They, therefore, present their edges and not their faces to the action of the solar rays. There is nothing, my young friend, more intelligent than a leaf."

"The leaves of the eucalypti, at least, seem to be very intelligent," rejoined Eugene.

"Much more so than the botanist who gave them their name," smiled the Professor.

"Why, what does the word mean?" asked Mr. Davis.

"It comes from the Greek words *εὖ χαλύπτω*, signifying *I cover well*," answered Professor Gregory; "but you can readily understand from what I have said, that the various eucalypti do not cover at all well."

"But all the eucalypti are not exactly such trees as those you have described, nor all the forests so clean and free from undergrowth," said Chester.

"You are right, my young friend," returned the Professor, "there are varieties of the eucalypti which more nearly resemble trees of other species, and there are extensive forests where the greater number of the trees, with the exception of some of the blue-gums, do not attain a large size. I remember passing over a road through the gum-trees in the valley of the Blackspur. It was a most romantic drive. Now and then,—not often,—we came upon a species of palm. Acacias, of

which there are more than a hundred varieties, were to be seen on every hand. Cedars were abundant; and at certain favorable points we beheld wonderful specimens of the arborescent ferns, some thirty feet high, and putting forth branches from eight to twelve feet long. But among the more numerous trees were the *xanthorchææ*, the principal kind being the black boy or grass gum-tree. The undergrowth everywhere was luxuriant, and in some places even dense."

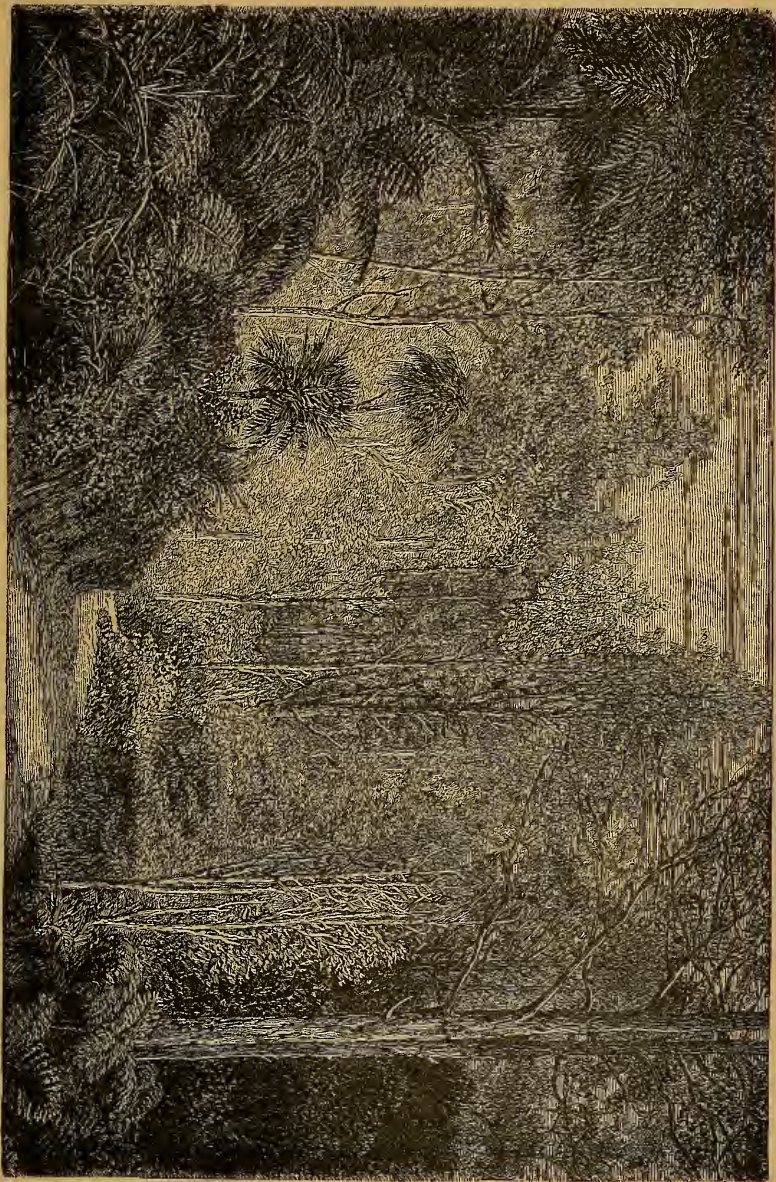
"Are the Australian forests as silent as I have heard them described?" asked Eugene. "Of course," he quickly added, "there are few animals, but are there no birds to make a noise?"

"Sometimes," rejoined the Professor, "we would travel all day long through such a forest as I first mentioned, and meet neither quadruped nor human being. A few cockatoos inhabited the tops of the trees; but at that height they could scarcely be distinguished, and their chattering was an almost inaudible murmur. Sometimes a flock of parrots would shoot across a distant vista, illumining it with a rapid flash of variegated light. But generally a deep silence reigned in this vast temple of verdure, and the measured tread of the horses, a few words exchanged now and then in desultory conversation, the cracking of the whip, and from time to time a cry from the driver as he urged on his span, were the only sounds that disturbed this vast solitude."

"Ah!" exclaimed Eugene, "the Australian parrots and parrakeets! Please tell us something about them, Professor."

"Well, as I have said, in the woods there were not many birds; but we often saw large flocks of the white cockatoo feeding in the corn-fields, and a few most beautiful parrots came under our observation. The parrakeet cockatoo, although not clothed with the brilliant plumage

ROAD THROUGH THE GUM TREES, VALLEY OF THE BLACKSPUR.



that decorates so many of the parrot family, is a remarkably pretty bird, and is worthy of notice, not only for the curious crest with which its head is adorned, but for the grace and elegance of its form. With the exception of the head, on which a little crimson and yellow are seen, its plumage is simply tinted with brown, gray, and white; but these colors are so pure, and their arrangement so harmonious, that the eye does not at all look for brighter coloring. It is mostly seen upon the ground, where it runs with great swiftness, and is very accomplished at winding its way among the grass stems, upon the seeds of which it subsists. It is by no means a shy bird, and will permit of a close approach, so that its habits can be readily watched. When alarmed, it leaves the ground and flies off to the nearest tree, perching upon the branches and crouching down upon them lengthwise, so as to be invisible from below."

"I think I should like to get a shot at that kind of game," mused Eugene.

"There is no great difficulty in shooting it," returned the Professor; "and that fact is a matter of some consequence to the hunter, as its flesh is notable for its tenderness and delicate flavor."

"The eggs of this species are pure white, are they not?" asked Professor Singleton.

"Yes," was the reply; "and that is the case with parrot-eggs generally."

"What is their number?"

"From four to six," said Professor Gregory.

"Mr. Gould made a study of the parrakeet cockatoo, if I remember rightly," said Chester. "Did you ever see the result, Professor?"

"Yes, indeed," was the answer, "and it is very interesting. He says 'the interior portion of the vast continent of Australia may be said to possess a fauna almost

peculiar to itself, but of which our present knowledge is extremely limited. New forms, therefore, of great interest may be expected when the difficulties which the explorer has to encounter in his journey toward the center shall be overcome. This beautiful and elegant bird is one of its denizens. I have, it is true, seen it cross the great mountain ranges, and breed on the flats between them and the sea; still this is an unusual occurrence, and the few thus found, compared to the thousands observed on the plains stretching from the interior side of the mountains, proves that they have, as it were, overstepped their natural boundary.

“Its range is extended over the whole of the southern portion of Australia, and, being strictly a migratory bird, it makes a simultaneous movement southward to within one hundred miles of the coast, in September, arriving in the York district, near Swan River, in Western Australia, precisely at the same time that it appears in the Liverpool plains, in the eastern portion of the country.

“After breeding and rearing a numerous progeny, the whole again retire northward in February and March, but to what degree of latitude toward the tropics they wend their way, I have not been able to ascertain. I have never received it from Port Essington, or any other port in the same latitude, which, however, is no proof that it does not visit that part of the country, since it is merely the range near the coast that has yet been traversed. In all probability it will be found at a little distance in the interior, wherever there are situations suitable to its habits, but doubtless at approximate periods to those in which it occurs in New South Wales. It would appear to be more numerous in the eastern divisions of Australia than in the western. During the summer of 1839, it was breeding in all the apple-tree (*Angophora*) flats, on the Upper Hunter, as well as in similar

districts on the Peel and other rivers which flow northward.

“ ‘After the breeding season is over, it congregates in numerous flocks before taking its departure. I have seen the ground quite covered by them while engaged in procuring food, and it was not an unusual circumstance to see hundreds together in the dead branches of the gum-trees in the neighborhood of the water, a plentiful supply of which would appear to be essential to its existence; hence, we may reasonably suppose that the interior of the country is not so sterile and inhospitable as is ordinarily imagined, and that it yet may be made available for the use of man. The harlequin-bronzewing and the warbling grass-parrakeet are also denizens of that part of the country, and equally unable to exist without water.’

“The head and throat of this species are yellow, and there is a patch of crimson on the ears. Upon the head there is a long, slender, painted crest, yellow at the base and gray at the tip, giving the bird so curious an aspect that at first sight it appears either to be a cockatoo or a parrakeet, as the eye is directed to the crest or the general form. The back and under portions of the body are brown, and a large part of the wings is white. The central tail-feathers are brown, and the rest gray. The female is distinguished from the male by a green-tinge, which pervades the yellow of the head and throat, and the numerous bars of yellow and dark-blackish-brown, which cross the tail.”

“What are some of the other birds, Professor?” asked Chester.

“Among the peculiar birds are the emu, the black swan, the ibis, and the ‘laughing jackass’ or ‘bushman’s clock.’ Then birds of paradise and orioles are abundant; a large king-fisher, with a remarkable voice, is often seen, and there are several of the largest species of eagles, falcons, and owls.”

"I should like to hear something about the animals — what few there are," said Eugene.

"The animals of Australia are peculiar, not less in themselves than in their distribution," remarked the Professor. "The carnivora are few, and the only really destructive beast of prey is the dingo, an animal in size between a fox and a wolf, and resembling a dog. The dingoes roam about in packs and attack sheep, killing and wounding many, but eating few."

"There are no ruminating animals, I think?" said Chester.

"None, whatever, and pachyderms are unknown. But while this strange country is thus deficient in the classes of animals most abundant elsewhere, its fauna consists very largely of a class almost unrepresented in other parts of the world."

"You refer to the *marsupialia*, or pouched animals," said Eugene, quickly.

"Exactly," assented the Professor; "and of these the largest and perhaps the most common is the kangaroo. A smaller species of this animal is called the wallaby. The opossum, the flying opossum, and a carnivorous pouched animal, the *dasyurus*, are the other species most frequently met with."

"Then there is the duck-bill," suggested Eugene.

"You mean the *ornithorhynchus*," returned the Professor; "it belongs to the family of monotremata, and is a water animal shaped like a beaver, but has web feet, a bill like that of a duck, and, in the case of the male, spurs upon the hind feet. The other species is the *echidna*, or porcupine ant-eater. There are several species of rodents, most of them small and insignificant, but one somewhat larger and resembling the beaver in its habits."

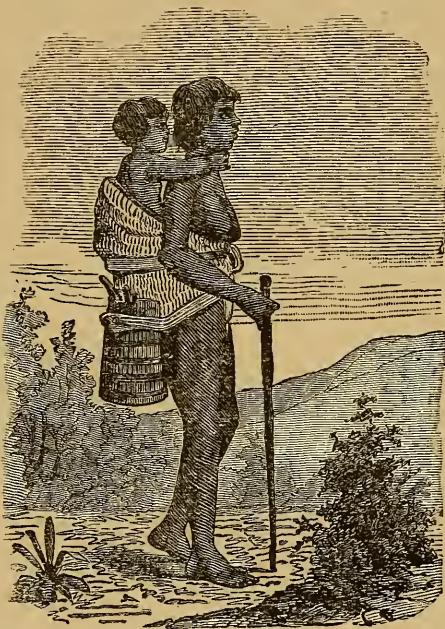
"I suppose you fell in with some few of the aborigines while in the country?" said Captain Bradford, inquiringly.

"Yes," replied Professor Gregory, "the second or third day after we left Sydney, on the excursion I have before alluded to, a party of a score or more passed by, each carrying, in their accustomed manner, a bundle of spears and other weapons.

They were all partly clothed, and most of them could speak English.

They were, as a whole, good-natured and not bad looking, and they appeared far from being such utterly degraded beings as they have usually been represented.

"A little later we passed a young-looking woman, nearly naked, with a child strapped to her back, and a



THE WANDERERS.

bucket containing a few implements fastened to her hip. She held a staff in her hand, apparently to aid her in walking, and a piece of sheep-skin partially protected the child. Whether these two wanderers belonged to the band that had gone on before, or not, I cannot say, but if so, the woman showed no anxiety to catch up with her friends. It is curious thus to see, in the midst of a civilized people, a set of harmless savages wandering about without knowing where they shall sleep at night, and

gaining their livelihood by digging roots and hunting in the woods.

"They seldom build huts or other fixed dwellings, but content themselves with a strip or two of bark, or a large bough, as a shelter from the wind. At best, their huts are of the rudest fashion, more like a kennel than a habitation. Whether they knew the use of fire is uncertain; they now kindle fires by rubbing two dry sticks together. But they frequently eat their food raw, and their cooking is performed by making a hole in the ground, lighting a fire in it, putting in the slain animal, and covering it with earth until the fire is out, when it is considered sufficiently cooked. In the wild districts they go entirely naked; in the vicinity of settlements they wear sheep-skins, or the blankets and clothing given to them by the settlers. Insensible, apparently, to the humanizing influence of love, they lie in wait for their brides, and having stupefied the unhappy creatures by savage blows, bear them on their backs to their huts, where they are often beaten into submissive slaves to their brutal masters; and should the mother die, while suckling, the child is buried alive with its parent. The number of the aborigines is rapidly diminishing; and it is probable a few more years will witness their total extinction."

"They practice polygamy, I believe?" said Chester, inquiringly.

"Yes," assented Professor Gregory, "every man has as many wives as he can manage—not take care of, mind you, for they take care of him."

"I wish you would give some further account of your excursion, Professor," said Eugene.

"It would take too much time to do so, I fear; indeed, I repent that I undertook the task."

"At least, how far did you travel inland?"

CAMP OF AUSTRALIAN ABORIGINES.



"Beyond Bathurst and Wellington, and then turning eastward, reached the coast at Port Macquarie."

"Did you visit Queensland?"

"Yes, we landed at Brisbane, and crossing the Craig and Denham Mountains, followed the course of the Dawson River to its juncture with the Fitzroy, and so reached Gladstone and Rockhampton."

"And what interested you most in that region?"

"A bottle-tree, I think."

"Ah, they must be very curious to look at."

"They are very interesting. The tree belongs to the family *Sterculiaceæ*. It has the calyx five-cleft, usually colored; no petals; column of stamens with fifteen or rarely ten anthers; stigma peltate; carpels five, distinct, with two or more ovules; narrow, digitate leaves; paniculate, axillary inflorescence; flowers unisexual or polygamous, the female flowers expanding first."

"But it is the trunk that is most curious, is it not?"

"Perhaps so, for it is expanded to a greatly disproportionate size. Where the ground is rocky this remarkable expansion is greatest just below the branches; but in favorable soils the foot of the tree is largest, forming a uniform cylindrical column, from whose summit the branches issue as from the neck of a bottle."

"You went to South Australia, Professor?" said Chester, inquiringly.

"Oh, yes," was the answer, "we spent some time in Adelaide and its vicinity."

"Adelaide is quite an interesting city, is it not?" asked Mr. Davis.

"It is, indeed," replied the Professor, "and has much to make it so. It is the capital of South Australia, is situated on the river Torrens, about seven miles from the Gulf of St. Vincent, where stands Port Adelaide, connected with the capital by a short railway; for, in conse-

quence of the river terminating in a morass, and the draught of water only permitting ships of limited burden to pass, all vessels homeward and outward bound are compelled to discharge and take in their freights at Port Adelaide. The city is built on rising ground, on either side of the river, being connected by two bridges, thus dividing the city into two towns, North and South Adelaide, both parts being laid out with spacious and well-built streets, running in parallel and diverging lines, imparting an appearance of extreme order and beauty to both divisions."

"There are some fine buildings, I suppose?" said Eugene.

"Yes, among them the governor's house, government offices, banks, churches, and school-buildings."

"The city has not grown as fast as Melbourne, I believe?" said Mr. Davis, inquiringly.

"No; but it has progressed with great steadiness, and, considering its natural staple, with a success equal to the most prosperous settlement in the South Seas."

"It is not an old city, if I remember rightly," observed Chester."

"The foundation of Adelaide," said Professor Gregory, "only dates back to the year 1834, and it was not till 1842 that the place can be fairly said to have had vitality and strength. In that year copper was first discovered in the neighboring hollows of Burra-Burra, an event that immediately changed the occupation and destiny of the colony, and had so marked an effect upon the commerce and prosperity of the settlement, that the city and province at once rose to a state of healthy development that it had never before known; and, though it was five years later before the mines were adequately worked, and made to produce a 'yield' that raised mining in Australia to a state of fabulous wonder, such was the effect of the dis-



A BOTTLE TREE.

covery, both on the social and political condition of the country, that South Australia thereafter took a position of commercial importance second to no dependency of the British crown in the southern hemisphere. Some idea of the immense value and importance of these copper mines may be formed from the fact that one individual, holding a hundred £5-shares, has drawn an annual fortune of £11,000, or about \$55,000, in dividends. In 1851 the prosperity of the city and province was seriously interfered with, and in a manner that threatened great misfortune, though from a singular cause, namely, the discovery of gold in the neighboring State of Victoria. This discovery produced such an effect on the minds of the people, and so unsettled all social and industrial habits, that, in one year, between 1851 and 1852, no fewer than 12,000 men and 4,000 boys left the infant colony, their homes, wives, and mothers, for the gold-fields of Victoria. The want of men to work what had become the staple of the province, copper, and the paucity of laborers for the field and factory, produced a commercial panic that must have completely paralyzed every branch of trade; but for the judicious conduct of the governor, who, by causing a route to be opened direct from Adelaide to the diggings of Mount Alexander, and stamping the ingots, and using them as a means of currency, caused a diversion in the transit of gold from Melbourne, large quantities being brought direct to Adelaide. By these and other judicious measures, the colony was saved from what might have been its ruin; and gold-mining, having now lost much of the enthusiasm that appertained to its earlier operations, and the general fever that disturbed all relations of society having died out, vast numbers of the people returned to their former avocations, and the province of Adelaide has once more returned to the even tenor of its commercial and prosperous career."

"What is the population?" asked Chester.

"Between 40,000 and 45,000, including Port Adelaide and Albert Town," was the answer.



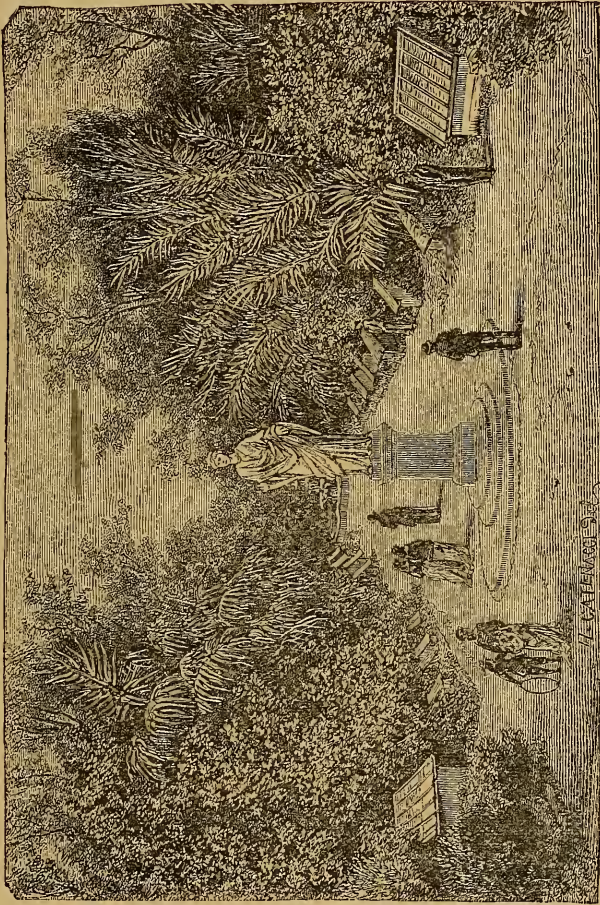
A SOUTH AUSTRALIAN ABORIGINAL.

"There are some very fine public squares, I have been told," observed Mr. Davis.

"Yes," assented the Professor; "and a magnificent botanical garden with a conservatory."

“Is not King William Street the central thoroughfare?” asked Mrs. Davis.

“It is ma’am; and Hindly Street is the chief business locality.”



BOTANICAL GARDEN AT ADELAIDE.

“I am told,” remarked Professor Singleton, “that they export enormous quantities of wool.”

"More than 7,000,000 pounds annually," rejoined the other Professor.

"The soil of South Australia is very good, is it not?" asked Mr. Davis.

"Like other parts of the country," said Professor Gregory, "the soil is extremely fertile and productive, yielding all manner of European and American fruits and vegetables in great abundance."

"I think you said you saw something of the country round Adelaide," observed Eugene.

"Yes, we made several excursions from the city, one to a point beyond Port Augusta, where we saw a curious specimen of the Australian Aborigines. He had a face almost European in shape and expression, but the lower part was concealed under a forest of hair, and what was still more remarkable, his body and limbs were completely covered with hair. Certainly he was the most singular specimen of the human race it was ever my fortune to meet with."

"I suppose there are some wonderful sheep-runs and cattle ranges in the country?" said Mr. Davis, who was becoming quite interested in Australia.

"You may well say wonderful," returned Professor Gregory. "A sheep-run or station a thousand square miles in extent is nothing uncommon, and there are cattle stations in Queensland ranging from 5,000 to 7,500 square miles."

"Gracious!" exclaimed Eugene, "do private individuals own as much land as that?"

"Very few," was the reply, "the land is generally held on lease from the government, at a merely nominal rental."

"I don't wonder they export so much wool," said Chester.

"Why," rejoined the Professor, "it is the land of the

grazier; arid as it seems, it is a wonderful region for raising, maintaining, and fattening live stock. A year or so ago Australia contained more than 62,000,000 of sheep, nearly if not quite 8,000,000 cattle, and over 1,000,000 horses. When there is no grass, the animals live and thrive on the salt-bush and other shrub foliage."

"I should think it would be a lonely life," observed Eugene.

"Yes, bush life is lonely enough even now, in the remote regions, but it is nothing to the loneliness of the old days."

"I suppose not," assented Eugene. Then suddenly: "From Australia where did you go?"

"To Tasmania," answered the Professor.

"How did you like that island?"

"On the whole, very much indeed. We landed at Launceston, and from thence made trips to various parts of the island."

"Tasmania is only a short distance from Australia, I believe?" said Mr. Davis, inquiringly.

"It is separated from Victoria by a strait one hundred and fifty miles wide and five hundred long, called Bass Strait. In appearance it somewhat resembles a heart, or an imperfect quadrilateral; it is two hundred and twenty miles in length, north and south, and one hundred and sixty wide in its broadest part, and contains a superficial area of 23,000 square miles.

"The northern coast-line is bold and precipitous in places, with alternate rocky headlands and low sandy beaches, on which, at certain seasons, a tremendous surf breaks with a deafening noise. The other sides of the island are generally high and rocky, and, being deeply indented, abound in safe harbors, bays, and inlets; this is particularly the character of the south and eastern coasts. On the south side are situated Storm, Norfolk,

and Ralph Bays, and Tasman's and Forester's Peninsulas; on the north are Port Dalrymple and Port Sorel; and on the west coast Macquase Harbor and Port Davey."

"I should judge the interior of the country must be mountainous," remarked Chester.

"The interior," rejoined Professor Gregory, "presents constant alternations of hill and plain, mountain and valley, occasionally interspersed with lofty table-lands and wide stretches of rolling prairie, thinly wooded, but extremely fertile. A chain of lofty mountains in the western portion of the island runs from north to south, through the whole length of Tasmania, from which spurs or short off-shoots proceed in all directions. The average altitude of this chain is 3,500 feet. Mount Wellington, or Table Mountain, 4,195 feet high, forms the background to Hobart Town, and there are many other lofty mountains, some of them isolated, rising in solitary grandeur from the center of wide plains."

"They must have plenty of good water then," observed Captain Bradford.

"Tasmania is abundantly supplied with water," returned the Professor; "it has several fine rivers, numerous streams, and, for its size, a large proportion of lakes. The Derwent and Ouse Rivers unite to form the splendid estuary, on the western shore of which is situated the capital of the island, Hobart Town, fifteen miles above its entrance into Storm Bay. The lakes of chief note are the Sorrel, St. Clair, and Great Lake."

"Is the soil as good as that of South Australia?" asked Mr. Davis.

"The soil," replied the Professor, "is very various; in some places being extremely fertile, in others little better than desert sand. Along the banks of rivers the land, however, is remarkably rich, consisting of a black alluvial mold of an extraordinary and, in many directions, highly fertile character."

"I have heard the climate highly spoken of," remarked Chester.

"The climate," said Professor Gregory, with enthusiasm, "is extremely salubrious, and is regarded by Europeans as delicious, from being free from all sudden and extreme fluctuations of heat and cold. It exercises a marked influence on the health and physical condition of all new-comers, who not only feel themselves strengthened and revived by a residence on the island, but even their natural term of life seems enlarged under the genial influence of the balmy air of Tasmania."

"They must have plenty of fruit and vegetables," suggested Eugene.

"All the fruits and vegetables of Europe and America grow in perfection," returned the Professor, "but, taken generally, Tasmania is more a grazing than an agricultural country; this fact is evident from its staple productions, which consist of wool, grain, cattle, sheep, oil, timber, and potash."

"The island produces some valuable timber, does it not?" asked Mr. Davis.

"The wood of Tasmania is particularly valuable," answered the Professor, "the forests abounding with timber of the most useful varieties, some trees attaining a height of one hundred and fifty feet, with a girth of sixty feet, and for shipbuilding and all ordinary purposes of carpentry are equal to the best oak or ash."

"The eucalyptus is quite common, I suppose?" said Chester, inquiringly.

"Yes, in many parts certain varieties grow to a great size, and compose a noble forest."

"You saw some fine specimens of tree-ferns, no doubt?" queried Professor Singleton.

"In some of the dampest ravines," rejoined the other, "tree-ferns flourish in a most extraordinary manner. I

saw one which must have been at least twenty-five feet high to the base of the fronds, and was in girth exactly six feet and four inches. The fronds forming the most elegant parasols, produced a gloomy shade, like that of the first hour of night." *

"Is the country rich in minerals?" asked Mr. Davis.

"The mineral resources of the island are considerable," was the reply, "and embrace copper, iron, lead, zinc, manganese, coal, slate, sandstone, and quarries of white and gray marble."

"There are but few native animals, I believe," said Chester.

"Very few," assented the Professor, "the most remarkable being the kangaroo, of which there are five varieties, from the great forest kangaroo down to the brush rat kangaroo. The other animals are, the opossum, and a creature called the *thylacinus cynocephalus*, which takes the place of the dingo or Australian dog, resembling a panther in its marks, and which shuns the presence of man, flying from him on every occasion, yet committing terrible ravages on the flocks, especially among the lambs."

"The country is growing in importance very rapidly, is it not?" asked Captain Bradford.

"It is, indeed," answered the Professor, "the island is now divided into eleven counties, and there are many growing towns. Launceston, the Liverpool of Tasmania, is the chief town of Cornwall County, and is regarded as the northern capital; while Hobart Town, in Buckingham, in the south, is the principal city and actual capital of the island. The government is vested in a lieutenant-governor, aided by an executive and legislative council. The population at this time is not far from 130,000."

* See frontispiece.

"There are a number of islands which come under the government of Tasmania, I think?" said Chester.

"Yes, those lying adjacent to the coast," explained the Professor; "the most important of these form an archipelago on the northeast point of the island, separated from the county of Dorset by a narrow branch or arm of the sea called Banks Strait. This group consists of Flinders Island, two hundred miles in circumference, Chappell, Clarke, Barren, Franklin, and Vansittart Islands, while a corresponding but much smaller group, off the opposite or northwestern point of land, lies nearer to the coast of Wellington County; these are Albatross, the Three Hummocks, Hunter, Walker, and Robbin's Island. From Oyster Bay, or the Glamorgan Peninsula, on the east, to the Southwest Cape in the west, are Schouten, Maria, and the large island of Bruny, with the Needles and several rocky islets of no special account."

"I should like to hear something of the history of Tasmania," said Eugene."

"Well, I can very soon put you in possession of some of the more important facts," returned the Professor. "In 1642, the Dutch navigator, Abel Janssen Tasman, first discovered and took possession of the island, and, in honor of Van Dieman, the Governor of Batavia, gave it his name. It was not till the eleventh of March, 1773, that it became a British possession, when it was immediately surveyed. In 1798 Captain Flinders and Doctor Bass made a more accurate and complete examination of the island, with all its adjacent isles, preparatory to erecting it into a penal colony. It was not, however, till five years later, or the year 1803, that Lieutenant Bowen, with a party of military and convicts, landed at Risdon, on the Derwent, and there established the first colony, at the same time changing the name of the island from Van Dieman to Tasmania. The unhealthiness of the

first site soon compelled the removal of the settlement to the opposite side of the Derwent, where a regular city was built, and called, after the Governor, Hobart Town.

“The infant colony made but little progress till 1820. From that time, however, the advance of Tasmania was rapid; Launceston rose in commercial importance, and a spirit of enterprise and industry actuated every branch of society, while the discovery of a new source of wealth acted as a powerful stimulus to the colony. This discovery, which eventually became the great staple of Tasmania, was wool. Of so little account was this important article deemed as late as 1827, that the average price of wool was 6*d.* per pound, the highest sum paid for best samples being only 7½*d.* From the moment when the importance of this article was first ascertained, the quality of the pasturage better understood, and new sheepwalks discovered, the increase of the flocks, and the weight and quality of the fleeces, progressed at a ratio truly marvellous, till a state of prosperity was obtained that up to that time had had no precedent in colonial history.

“The early years of the Tasmanian settlement, especially from 1825 to 1837, were greatly disturbed by the depredations of the escaped convicts, or bush-rangers, and by the open hostility of the natives, who pillaged and murdered the outlying farmers and colonists wherever they encountered them; so that, between the danger of the vindictive and prowling savage, and the brutal violence of the audacious convict, no man, unless armed to the teeth, could visit his fields or stir beyond the protection of the stockade. After a few years the escaped convicts were all either captured, shot down in a hopeless resistance, or perished horribly in the bush from hunger or the maddening effects of cannibalism. The natives, however, still remained as implacable and vindictive as ever, all attempts of the government to pacify or subdue

them proving abortive; nothing seemed to fully impress them with an adequate idea of the overwhelming power of the English, until the whole island, in 1830, was put under martial law, and by proclamation all the inhabitants commanded to assist in one great attempt to secure the entire race. The plan was to drive and confine them in the remote western part of the island, by drawing a cordon of 4,000 armed men across the country, and steadily advancing north. The attempt failed; the natives, having tied up their dogs, stole during one night through the lines, and no wonder that they could do so, when their manner of crawling after wild animals is considered. All efforts by force having failed, a Mr. Robinson, a solicitor of Hobart Town, a good Christian, and a worthy philanthropist, made an offer to the governor by which he guaranteed to bring the whole native population in peace and obedience to the feet of his excellency. The project appeared so rash, dangerous, and impracticable, that the executive long refused to sanction the undertaking; but the failure of the cordon scheme, and the increasing danger to society, at length wrung a tardy consent from the governor in the spring of 1837. Mr. Robinson, who had made himself familiar with a few words of the native language, totally unarmed, with only a knapsack of necessities on his back, and attended by one or two Australian natives, who, he thought, might assist him, but who, in reality, were of no use, immediately started on his perilous mission, and, plunging into the scrub, soon began to experience all the dangers of the undertaking. The privations endured for the want of food and water were the least of the perils he had to encounter; the hostile natives perpetually threatened him with death; indeed, his escape from the spears and tomahawks of the different tribes was often miraculous. By kindly words, by gentleness, and by sympathy for their

wrongs, he ultimately succeeded in accomplishing the duty he had assigned himself; even to the subduing of the Oyster Bay tribe, the most implacable of all the natives; and before the end of the year this noble minister of peace returned to Hobart Town followed by every native in Tasmania, unarmed, peaceful, and obedient as a flock of sheep; and while the natives bivouacked in the streets and outbuildings, Mr. Robinson returned with joy and satisfaction to the bosom of his family. The government, rejoicing at the success of the undertaking, and the safety and confidence it imparted to the colony, fully confirmed all that Mr. Robinson had promised; appointed that gentleman their guardian, and, assigning to them the whole of Flinders Island as a home and hunting-ground, transported all the natives to their new country, allowing to each individual a certain annual supply of blankets, implements, food, and necessaries of all sorts. In this large and beautiful island, closely adjoining their native country, huts were built for them, and, while allowed to follow their natural pursuits, a system of order, morality, and education, with Christian instruction, was established for their welfare."

"But it did not benefit them much, I fear," observed Eugene.

"Right, it did not. The aborigines of Tasmania were descended from the Papuan negro, and differed but slightly from the natives of Australia. They were justly ranked among the lowest in the scale of intellect of all the races of the human family, and one of the most remarkable circumstances connected with them—the same, however, is true of all natives of Australasia—was the fearful mortality that attended them whenever the European settled in their neighborhood; and this, too, without any assignable cause, for, even when well cared for, and allowed at the same time to pursue their natural

occupations and pastimes, and guarded from all the vices of the white man, as in Flinders Island, death, like a fearful Nemesis, still hung over their doomed path. In the year 1803, when the first English settlement was founded, it was ascertained that the entire number of aborigines in Tasmania was 1,600; of that number in thirty-four years, 1,300 had perished; a few fell by war with the colonists, but by far the greater proportion by disease or natural causes; so that in 1837, when Mr. Robinson returned from his mission, three hundred natives were all that could be found alive, and were the number transported to Flinders Island. They continued to decrease, and in a few years were removed to Maria Island, and finally, in 1849, when only thirty-six remained, were taken to the vicinity of Hobart Town, where they were established in comfortable quarters. In 1870 only one, a woman, survived; and now she, the last of her race, is gone."

The silence that followed the Professor's last words was broken by an exclamation from the lips of Captain Bradford.

"I declare!" he exclaimed, "I had no idea it was getting so late. Really, my friends, we must be going."

"But you are to remain with us to-night," interposed Mrs. Davis.

"We should be delighted to do so," returned the Captain, "but it is impossible; certain matters demand our presence on board the yacht."

"Come, come, Captain; this won't do, you know," remonstrated Mr. Davis.

"Indeed, we must go, my friend," replied the Captain, firmly; "but we shall see you again to-morrow."

"And then," said Eugene, turning eagerly to Professor Gregory, "you must tell us about New Zealand, and all the other islands that you visited."

"I shall be glad to do so, if you think I can give you pleasure," smiled the good natured Professor.

"No fear but you will do that," said Chester; "we have enjoyed hearing you so much this evening."

"Indeed we have, my dear friend," added Professor Singleton. Then, after the good-nights had been spoken, they hastened to the point where the boat was awaiting them, and were speedily pulled out to the yacht.

CHAPTER XXVI.

NEW ZEALAND — OTHER GROUPS AND ISLANDS.

CAPTAIN BRADFORD and his passengers were early on deck the next morning, but no signs of the *Rover* greeted their eyes; and neither had the small craft in which "George Thompson" had gone to Pago-Pago the day before returned, though this was hardly to have been expected.

"If we only knew just when the uncertain fellow would come back, or if we were sure it would not be to-day," said Eugene, while they were at the breakfast table, "we might make a delightful excursion into the interior of the island, or to some of the villages on the coast."

"But we don't know anything about it, and hence it would be taking too much risk to leave Apia at this time," returned the Captain, quickly.

"For my part," remarked the palæontologist, "I enjoy the society of Professor Gregory and our other friends on shore too much to seriously regret being detained here for a day or so."

"And surely, I have no cause to complain," said the Captain. "I have two old and tried friends in that pleasant island home, yonder, and being near them, I am content."

"Well," said Chester, "as there is nothing to keep us on board the yacht, and as we all enjoy the society of our friends at the Davis's, I propose that as soon as we have finished our breakfast we go to them."

"But what about the *Rover*, and the other vessel?" asked his brother.

"Why, either Mr. Morgan, here, or Seth Cook, can keep a lookout for them, and send us word when either or both come into port."

"Seth will remain on board," said the Captain. "Watson and Morgan are old friends, and Jasper would like a chance to see his old shipmate again."

"By all means," exclaimed Chester, heartily.

Matters being thus arranged, the party, a little later, left the yacht in charge of Seth Cook, and were pulled to the shore.

They stopped for a few moments at the consulate, and then proceeded to the residence of Mr. Davis, where they found their companions of the evening before gathered in the shade of the bread-fruit tree.

The greeting between Captain Watson and Jasper Morgan, who had made more than one voyage together, was quite cordial; it was plain to see they knew each other's worth.

A picnic had been planned by Mrs. Davis, who was anxious to take her guests to a lovely valley and bay, a few miles distant, but Captain Bradford explained the situation, and she at once declared that they were very well where they were, and that lunch should be served under the noble tree in whose shadow they reclined.

A few minutes later, an opportunity offering, Eugene seized it to remind Professor Gregory of his promise of the night before.

"Ah, you want to hear about the other islands I visited, my young friend?" smiled the Professor.

"Yes, sir," answered Eugene; "but I am not alone in this; we all want to hear you."

"Very good; and as the islands of New Zealand were the first I saw after leaving Tasmania, we will begin with

New Ulster, the most northern of the group. We first cast anchor in the harbor of Wellington, now the seat of government for the islands, and the next day sailed for Auckland. Since the latter city ceased to be the capital of New Zealand it has been outstripped in population by both Wellington and Dunedin, notwithstanding its fine harbor, or, rather, pair of harbors; for it stands upon a narrow isthmus formed by two deep bays setting in from the opposite sides of the island, and almost cutting it in two, each being an excellent port. But the abundant shipping I saw, evinced that it still has an extensive commerce.

“There is much about Auckland to remind one of an English town, the hansom cabs and dog-carts, the somber-looking hotels, with their more somber apartments, whose walls are

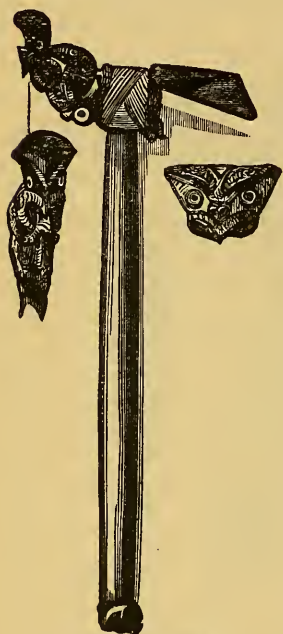
hung with portraits of the Queen and royal family, in close companionship with pictures of steeple-chases and fox-hunts, and the busy barmaids, always found in the public rooms of these hotels, flitting through the dense tobacco-smoke, supplying the foaming beverage to thirsty beer-drinkers, or dutifully waiting upon the rotund and very English landlords.

“The public buildings are substantial structures,



GREEN JADE ADZE AND CHISEL.

though not so fine as those I had seen in Melbourne. The one most interesting to me, and to all of us, was the museum, which contains a valuable collection of Maori articles of dress, tools, and implements of war. Among the first are mats, not unlike those of Samoa, made of the fine native flax, tastefully dyed, and which, among themselves, constitute nearly their only article of dress. Among the tools and implements of war are a green jade



STONE ADZE.

adze and chisel, a common stone adze, and specimens of the *amere-mere*, or war-club. These clubs, as well as the first-named adze, are made of jade, ground, or rather rubbed, into shape, and polished with infinite labor. Years are often bestowed upon the fashioning of one of them.

Among other curiosities are a number of carved feather-boxes. These are used by the Maori chiefs, to keep the tail-feathers of the *huia* in. This rare and beautiful bird is allied to the hoopoes, and is remarkable for the fact that the beak of the male is straight and stout, while that of the female is long, slender, and sickle-shaped. Its color is a dark-glossy-green, of so deep

a hue that, in some lights, it seems to be black. The tail feathers, however, are tipped with snowy-white, so that when the bird spreads its plumage for flight, the tail looks at a distance as if it were black, edged with white.

“The bird is only found in the hills near Port Nicholson, and, as it is very timid, can scarcely be obtained

except by the help of a native, who imitates its cry with wonderful precision. The name *huia*, is said to be merely an imitation of the long shrill whistle of the bird. They are so valued by the Maoris that in all probability the species would have been extinct by this time, but for the introduction of European customs, which, to a certain degree, have altered the native fashions and habits.

"It is the tail feathers the chiefs most value, and for the safety of which the boxes are made. So much do they prize these feathers, which they wear in their hair on great occasions, that they take the utmost pains in the manufacture of the boxes. These boxes are made by the chiefs themselves, and are covered with the most elaborate carvings, some of them being the finest specimens of art that can be found in New Zealand.

"What other curiosities are there in the museum, Professor?" asked Eugene.

"I saw one thing worth mentioning," was the reply; "it was a small fossil specimen of the extinct moa, that wingless bird, of whom partial skeletons have been found, indicating that it sometimes reached the height of seventeen feet."

"On the whole the city has rather a dingy look, has it not?" asked Captain Bradford.

"Yes, especially the central part," was the reply.

"And if a man wanted to find a drinking-place, he'd have no trouble in that part of the town," added Captain Watson; "for about every other house is one, and they're all English, with English names."

"Very true," smiled the Professor. "'The Queen's Arms,' 'The Forester's Arms,' 'The Black Bull,' and 'The Red Bull' are to be seen in every street and alley."

"The climate of New Zealand is very fine, is it not?" asked Chester.

"It is said to be the finest in the world," answered the Professor.

“There are several islands?”

“Yes, two large and one small one, and a number of isles and islets lying off the coast.”

“Taken together they comprise a large extent of territory?”

“The whole group has a length of about 1,200 miles, and an area of more than 97,000 square miles, being much larger than Great Britain, and about twice as large as the State of New York.”

“What is the population?”

“About 470,000, of whom 425,000 are colonists, mainly from England and Scotland, the remainder being Maoris.”

“You said there were three islands of importance?” inquired Eugene.

“Yes, the first, or northern island, is New Ulster; the central, New Munster; and the last, or southern, New Leinster. The coasts of these islands, especially those of New Ulster, are deeply indented by bays, estuaries, and creeks, all of them affording excellent anchorage for ships even of a large size. A lofty chain of mountains, attaining an altitude of 14,000 feet, runs in a waving direction from north to south, through a part of New Ulster, and entirely through New Munster, forming what has been called the back-bone, from which, in all directions spring lofty branches or off-shoots trending either east or west, or in diverging lines northeast and southwest. These lofty Alpine chains are clothed up to the snow-line with dense forests composed of splendid and towering trees, while innumerable streams burst from all sides of the different ranges, and, forming mountain torrents and cataracts, precipitate their waters into the valleys to swell into rivers; at the same time imparting to the scenery all the grandeur of an Alpine country.”

“The islands are volcanic, of course?” said Mr. Davis, in an inquiring tone.

"All the islands of the group," returned Professor Gregory, "possess the marks of an igneous origin, while in many there are immense tracts which present all the grand and terrible desolation of a volcanic region; here and there, as in Iceland and in our own great National Park, broken by boiling fountains and streams of seething waters."

"Are there any active volcanoes?" asked Mrs. Davis; "if so, I should so like to see them."

"In New Ulster there are two," replied the Professor, — "Mount Egmont, or Taranaki, which has an elevation of nearly 10,000 feet, and Tangarero, with an altitude of 6,300 feet; while in New Munster there is a third, Mount Arthur, exceeding 8,000 feet in height."

"The group is rich in minerals, is it not?" asked Chester.

"The minerals are copper, manganese, coal, sulphur, lime, titaniferous iron, with indications of tin, lead, silver, bismuth, and nickel, and gold has been reported in abundance; but, from the geological features of the country, that metal, I am inclined to believe, will not be found in any remunerative quantity."

"But," observed Mr. Davis, "there is something better for a country, in the long run, than minerals — grain, and the like."

"Yes," assented the Professor, "and though New Zealand is generally so mountainous, it has several very extensive and fertile plains, and many beautiful valleys. The flax plant, sweet potato, a variety of ferns, and some fine timber trees are the chief indigenous vegetables of the islands; but wheat, and all the European grains and vegetables introduced, have been cultivated with remarkable success, while the richness and abundance of the pasture renders it an admirable grazing country."

"Then it's safe to be great some day."

"I am sure of that."

"There were very few native animals, Professor?" said Eugene, inquiringly.

"A kind of fox-dog and a species of rat were the only quadrupeds known to the natives when Captain Cook first visited the islands," was the Professor's reply. "Now, however," he added, "all the domestic animals have been introduced and largely propagated."

"Tasman discovered the group, did he not?" asked Chester.

"He discovered a part of one of the islands in 1641, or possibly 1642; but nothing further was known of the discovery till Captain Cook, in 1769 and 1770, thoroughly investigated the islands, and took possession of them in the name of his sovereign. From that time till 1814, the group was totally neglected, or only resorted to by the South Sea whaling ships; in the latter year, however, a body of missionaries, from the Church of England Mission, landed and commenced their arduous duties of civilizing and Christianizing the cannibal savages, who then formed the native population. Missionaries of other denominations followed, and in 1839, these excellent pioneers having almost entirely altered the nature of the aborigines, the New Zealand Company sent out their first body of settlers, who founded a colony on Cook's Strait. In 1840 the sovereignty of Great Britain over the islands was formally proclaimed, and from that time the colony has slowly but steadily advanced."

"I suppose the government is very similar to those of Victoria and New South Wales?" said Chester, inquiringly.

"It is much the same," was the reply.

"For my part," said Eugene, "I should like to hear something more about the Maori natives. What do you think of them, Professor?"

"On the whole, they are a fine, well-made, and intellectual race of men, tall, with majestic features, and of a copper color; they are honest, gentle, easily taught, generous, and capable of appreciating the highest degree of civilization."

"Oh, belay there, Professor!" laughed Captain Watson; "you're carrying your praise too far."

"How so?" demanded the Professor, quickly.

"Fine, well-made, and tall, you said."

"I did."

"The average height of the men is exactly five feet, six and one-quarter inches, and their average weight one hundred and forty pounds. They are not well-proportioned, their bodies and arms are too long, and their legs too short."

"Well, what other objections have you to offer?"

"Intellectual, you said, with majestic features."

"Well?"

"I claim they are not particularly intellectual, and as for their majestic features, this picture will give some idea of them. It represents one of their most noted chiefs, and I assure you, my friends, he was greatly pleased with the faithful likeness. There's intellect for you! There's majesty of features!" Then taking another picture from his pocket:

"Now just let me place this beside it. There! how does it look now? Where's the intellect and majesty of features? In the right-hand picture, or the left?"

"Here!" exclaimed Captain Bradford, with a laugh, "don't make so free with my picture, I beg. Where did you get it, any way?"

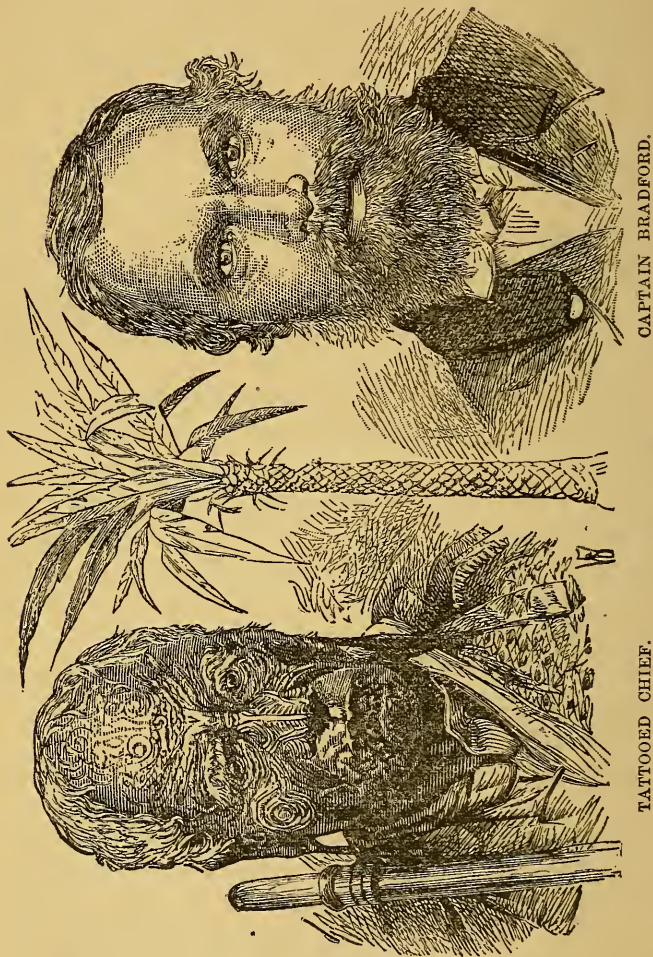
"Why, you gave it to me the last time we met. Don't you remember?"

"Ah, yes; but I had quite forgotten."

"I had n't; but come, good people, what have you to say to the two faces?"

“It is not a fair comparison,” objected Professor Gregory.

“And why not?” asked the Captain.



“Why, Captain Bradford, here, has had all the advantages of centuries of civilization, while during those same

centuries the tattooed chief's ancestors were groping in heathen darkness."

"That's all very well; but whose fault is it?"

"There, you are getting away from the question now. For my part, I still hold firmly to this: Physically, the Maoris are a fine people. In stature and physical strength they will compare favorably with Europeans. Mentally and morally, in most respects, they rank far above the majority of uncivilized people. I'll put it that way."

"And I'll let it pass at that," said Captain Watson.

"What did you say of their complexion?" asked Eugene.

"Generally they are of a light-brown color, with straight, black hair and prominent features," said the Professor. "I have seen a few," he added, "of much darker color, and with hair almost woolly, indicating a portion of other blood."

"But whence came the admixture?" asked Professor Singleton.

"Ah, that is a matter of conjecture. Until the advent of the whites, a little more than a century ago, there is no evidence, from tradition or otherwise, that a single person from other shores had touched at the islands since the first canoe-loads of Maoris, a thousand in all, they say, drifted thither. For my own part, I am inclined to think that these blackest people are sprung from aborigines, who were on the islands when the Maoris came. But in other respects I see no special difference between them and their brown neighbors.

"The Maoris have a great weakness for tattooing," remarked Eugene.

"Yes, in that they have outstripped all other people," said the Professor.

"I doubt if they are ahead of the Marquesans," interposed Captain Bradford, quickly.

"I think they are," rejoined the Professor; "but I don't know that I am able to prove it."

"They are an affectionate people, and love their children, do they not?" asked Chester.

"I have never seen anywhere parents more fond of their children," was the reply. "They exert themselves to find means of amusement for them, and have many games. One of the most popular is a kind of swing — many single ropes fastened to the top of a tall and somewhat flexible pole, which stands on a slight elevation. The children — boys and girls, indiscriminately — seize the dangling ropes and swing off the bank to a considerable distance, returning with a rush. While they are thus at play, their parents come and sit down on the banks and watch them complacently."

"They live in what are called *pahs*, built on peninsulas or on hill-tops, do they not?" asked Mr. Davis.

"They did live in *pahs* or fortified villages," returned the Professor; "but of late, these forts have been abandoned, except a few that are conveniently situated, and the natives live in open villages and farm-houses."

"What was the particular use of the *pahs*?" asked Eugene. "Were they always obliged to be on the defensive?"

"That's it, exactly. The different nations were almost constantly at war, and deadly feuds were frequent between tribes. These contests were carried on with great ferocity, the defeated tribe being reduced to slavery or killed and eaten."

"The *pahs*, then, served as a safe shelter for their wives and children and old men?"

"Yes; and for the warriors, when they were too weak to take the field."

"I knew they were cannibals."

"Cannibalism was universal."

“What did they find to quarrel about?”

“Land and women were the usual causes of strife,



MAORI CHILDREN AT PLAY.

but wars were not entered upon without much deliberation and attempts at conciliation.”

"They sometimes engaged in naval battles, I have seen it stated," said Chester.

"Yes, sea-fights occasionally took place between fleets of canoes, the war canoes being eighty feet long, four feet wide, and four feet deep. They were propelled by fifty paddles."

"They don't do much fighting now I suppose?"

"No, wars among them have nearly ceased since slavery and cannibalism have been removed by Christianity."

"I am heartily glad to hear it. You say they quarreled about women; when they got one was the marriage ceremony elaborate?"

"Marriage among them did not involve any religious ceremonies whatever. Before marriage, girls not betrothed were permitted to indulge in promiscuous intercourse if they pleased, and the more lovers they had the more highly they were esteemed. Married women, however, were kept under strict restraint, and infidelity was punished severely, often with death."

"Polygamy was practiced?"

"It was permitted, but was not common, and men could divorce their wives simply by turning them out of doors."

"That was pretty hard on the women."

"Yes, but since the introduction of Christianity a great change has taken place. The natives are now generally clothed like civilized men, and possess flocks, herds, furniture, houses, and cultivate lands. One half of the adults can read and write, and quite two-thirds of them belong to the Christian churches."

"Oh, yes, they are becoming civilized," laughed Captain Watson, "Professor, do you remember that day we spent at Tauranga?"

"Of course. What of it?"

"Do you remember watching the canoes as they crossed

the inlet, and how the dutiful wives would jump overboard, when their crafts could come no further up the shelving beach, and taking their lordly masters on their backs wade slowly ashore?"

"Why, yes; but that was so they need not wet their shoes, you know."

"Oh! that was it, eh? And so all the shoes in the family belong to the husband, do they?"

"Why, yes. I believe so."

"We saw all sorts of costumes that day, did n't we, Professor? There would be a native clad in jaunty European attire, of almost the latest fashion: high silk hat, well starched linen, nice spring overcoat, and swinging a dandy cane, and with him you might see another, whose wardrobe consisted only of a shirt and blanket. I remember one who wore a cap, a short coat, and—what do you think? a pair of shoes, and nothing else! Oh, they are great on shoes; if they can only get a pair, they are quite happy."

"You are too hard on them, Captain," cried the Professor; "I protest, it is not fair."

At this moment Mrs. Davis, who had withdrawn to the house some time before, returned, and informed her guests that they must move and so make room for the table and lunch.

The table was brought out, the good things were arranged upon it, and all were invited to partake. For a while they were too busy to think of islands; but at length Eugene saw that Professor Gregory was ready to talk again, and so at once addressed him.

"What island did you next visit, after leaving New Zealand?" he asked.

"Norfolk Island," was the reply.

"It is a lovely spot, I have heard."

"Yes, it is the largest and most delightful of a small

cluster consisting of Norfolk, Nepean, and Philip Islands, together with several islets, or rocks, called the Bird Islands."

"How large is Norfolk?"

"It is about five miles long, with an average breadth of nearly three miles. Its area is fourteen square miles."

"How far is it from Sydney?"

"Nine hundred miles."

"Captain Cook discovered it, did he not?" asked Chester.

"Yes, in 1774."

"What are its general features?" asked Professor Singleton.

"The cliffs round the coast are steep and lofty, and form a frowning barrier to all hostile access and exit, rising in a perpendicular wall in many places to a height of two hundred and forty feet. It has no harbor, though the anchorage is good all round the island. The interior is hilly, and covered with dense forests, chiefly of a spruce-pine; the soil is rich, deep, and very fertile, yielding excellent crops of cotton, indigo, and fruits — oranges and lemons growing in extraordinary abundance, and of rare quality. The guava, banana, yam, sweet potato, and arrow-root grow luxuriantly; and coffee, maize, and wheat are raised."

"Palms and tree-ferns grow on the island, do they not?" asked Chester.

"Yes," responded the Professor, "there is a small species of palm, and a gigantic tree-fern having fronds more than eleven feet in length."

"There is at least one considerable mountain," said Captain Bradford.

"Yes, Mount Pitt, in the northwest corner, rises to the height of 1,000 feet."

"The climate must be delightful," observed Chester.

"It is healthy and very agreeable," returned the Professor.

"They have plenty of domestic animals?"

"Horses, horned cattle, sheep, and other animals have been introduced."

"Who were the first white settlers?" asked Eugene.

"A large number of convicts and freedmen from New South Wales settled there in 1787; but they abandoned the island in 1810, and all their buildings were destroyed."

"At one time it was a penal colony," said Captain Bradford.

"Yes, in 1825, the incorrigible offenders among the convicts of New South Wales were sent there, as, from the nature of its coast, it was thought escape would be well-nigh impossible. At one time more than 2,000 prisoners were on the island, with a strong force to watch them and keep them in order, notwithstanding which many convicts made their escape to various South Sea islands, to the great detriment of their inhabitants."

"But there are no convicts on the island now, I suppose?" said Eugene, inquiringly.

"No, as a penal establishment, Norfolk island was abandoned in 1855."

"And then it was given up to the descendants of the mutineers of the *Bounty*," said Eugene quickly.

"Yes, in 1857, it was given by the British government to the Pitcairn Islanders, 194 in number; and though some have returned to their old home, by far the greater number remain at Norfolk Island."

"I suppose you did not pass by New Caledonia, Professor?" said Chester, in an inquiring tone.

"No, that was the next island on which I set my foot; but before reaching it I caught a glimpse of two others, Walpole, and Kunie or Isle des Pins."

"The latter is quite a noted little spot," remarked Captain Bradford.

"Yes, the soil is rich and the natives are restless. The island lies thirty miles to the southeast of New Caledonia, and in fact forms a part of the same group. Captain Cook called it Isle of Pines, in consequence of the vast number of araucarias with which its hills are covered. The strait between this island and New Caledonia proper is nearly all shoal water, caused by the numerous coral reefs."

"You say the natives are restless. I suppose they belong to the same race as those of the islands about them, do they not?" inquired Chester.

"In many respects they resemble the natives of New Caledonia," replied the Professor. "They are not, however, so dark, and their features are tolerably good."

"They are miserable cannibals," growled Captain Watson.

"They were, you mean," rejoined the Professor; "and that too from choice, wrapping up the bodies of their victims in banana leaves, and then cooking them in ovens."

"If they have given up the practice, I am glad of it," said the Captain; "but it is not so many years since, when, having come into possession of a lot of fire-arms, they crossed over to New Caledonia and shot down as many of the natives as they could, and brought off their bodies for consumption. It is true, I suppose, that a constant feud raged between the two islands, but the sudden acquisition of fire-arms gave the people of the Isle of Pines a terrible advantage over their hereditary foes, and enabled them almost to depopulate the southeastern part of the larger island."

"But how did they come into possession of such a stock of fire arms?" asked Mr. Davis.

"Obtained them from traders, I suppose," said the Captain.

“Why,” explained Professor Gregory, “about the year 1840, it was found that sandal-wood grew on the island, and several vessels proceeded thither for the sake of procuring this valuable product. At first they did so with great risk, and lost many of their men from the onslaughts of the natives, whom they were forced to repel by the use of fire-arms. Thus learning by bitter experience the tremendous power of these arms, the first thing the natives did, as soon as they had become accustomed to trade, was to procure a large stock of them, and the next was to put them to the use the Captain has mentioned. But after a while a Sydney merchant set up an establishment for the collecting and storing of sandal-wood and *bêches-de-mer*, and since that time the natives have become quite peaceable.”

“Well, even if they are peaceable, they don’t amount to much,” said Captain Watson. “They care no more for dress than the New Caledonians, and that’s precious little. They are very fond of ornament, however, the men appropriating all the best decorations, and leaving the women to take what they can get. A funny thing is, the men friz their hair out as much as possible, to make the most of it, and wrap a thin scarf round it, to protect it; sometimes, but not often, they cut it short, leaving only a tuft on one side of the head. The women, however, shave off the whole of the hair, thus depriving themselves of their natural ornament, and rendering themselves perfectly hideous in a white man’s eyes. The rough work is done by them, the men reserving to themselves the noble occupations of war, which the Professor says they have given up, fishing, a little house-building, and canoe-making, the only real work which they do being yam-planting, after the ground has been carefully prepared by the women.”

"What did you think of New Caledonia, Professor?" asked Eugene.

"I was pleased with much that I saw there, but not with all," was the answer. "We first came to anchor in the harbor of Port St. Vincent, on the southwest coast, but soon moved to Numea or Port de France, near the southwestern extremity. This is quite a civilized little town; perhaps too much so—after the French fashion. It reminds one of the poorer quarters of Paris. There are cafés, wine-shops, and casinos on every hand, with their inevitable French accompaniment, dancing-girls. Gens-d'armes, too, are to be met at every turn. The harbor is a great resort for shipping, and at all times there are many vessels in port. There are several public buildings, including a government house, a prison, and a large hotel. The harbor is guarded by a fort or battery, and a telegraph line has been established. The situation is picturesque, but the streets are badly laid out, and the houses poorly built.

"Next to Australia and New Zealand, this island is the largest in the South Seas, its extreme length being two hundred and forty miles, by an average breadth of thirty miles. The whole island is surrounded by dangerous reefs, and its surface is diversified by hills and valleys, with an abundance of rivers and woods. The land in many parts is sterile, but the natives take pains in its cultivation, and irrigate it with a fair degree of science."

"Is it not thought," asked Professor Singleton, "that a more advanced civilization once existed on the island?"

"Ah, now you come to one of the things that interested me," exclaimed his brother Professor. "The remains of ancient aqueducts, paved roads, and fortifications have been found, some of them are wonderful, and these I carefully examined. My impressions in regard to them

and their builders, I shall give to the public at an early day."

"The natives are still cannibals, I have been informed," said Chester.

"There is no disputing the fact," returned Professor Gregory. "I was told at Numea that it is impossible to satisfy their appetite for human flesh, which they say is a staple article of their food."

"Have they acquired the habit of using liquors?"

"No, they use no intoxicating drinks, but consume great quantities of salt water."

"How do they treat their women?"

"Much as do the natives of the Isle of Pines, subjugate them to a lower level than their own. They force them to go into battle with them, and when an enemy falls, rush forward and obtain the body for the oven. Their priests are also obliged to go to war, but they sit at a safe distance calling on the gods for victory."

"How do they dress?" asked Eugene.

"The men wear little or no dress, the women, who are modest and far better disposed, wear a short petticoat, which, with the married, is black; with the unmarried, white. This petticoat consists of a kind of fringe made of filaments of cords, strung together on a long string and hanging loose, which being carried several times round the body, the fringe forms an effectual covering.

"I have seen pictures of their war canoes, and should judge they were curious affairs," said Eugene.

"Yes," returned the Professor, "they consist of two, three, or even more, single canoes lashed together, and a large deck laid over all, on which one or more masts are raised, with lateen-sails, by which the whole is propelled, or when the wind is adverse, the crew use their spade-like oars, and force the craft through the waters on their voyage of pillage, conquest, or ceremony. Their

weapons are still clubs, spears, darts, and slings, though they are not wholly without fire-arms."

"When did the French take possession of the island?"

"In September, 1853, and almost immediately established on it a station for their Pacific squadron, and a penal colony. They have had many fights with the natives, but hostilities ceased in 1857, when the most troublesome chief was captured."

"What do the natives call the island?" asked Eugene.
"I know, but cannot think."

"They call it Balade; and that name has now been given to a port on the northeast side of the island."

"The Loyalty Islands are close by?"

"Yes, and are claimed by France, as being part of the same group."

"I suppose you went next to the New Hebrides?"

"I did; and one of the first islands I visited was Erromango, where the martyr, John Williams, met his death. I also went to Vanikoro or Recherche Island, where the celebrated voyager La Pérouse and his companions perished."

"There are quite a number of islands in the group, are there not?" asked Chester.

"At least twenty of considerable size, and a great number of islets and rocks."

"What are the most important?" asked Mr. Davis.

"The first in importance is Espiritu Santo, which is seventy miles long by about twenty-five miles broad. Then come Mallicollo, sixty by twenty-eight miles; Erromango, Tauna, Ambrim, Annatom, Banks, Vaté or Sandwich, and Whitsuntide."

"There is a very fine harbor at Mallicollo," observed Captain Watson.

"Yes," assented the Professor, "Port Sandwich; it is the best in the group."

"One of the islands disappeared a few years ago, I remember," said Professor Singleton. "There was a great deal of talk about it at the time."

"That was Aurora, one of the most beautiful and fertile of the group," explained Professor Gregory. "It was fully thirty-six miles long, by more than five miles broad. It disappeared in 1871, leaving no trace whatever of its existence."

"Are there any active volcanoes?" asked Eugene.

"Yes, there is one in Tauna."

"The islands are all mountainous, are they not?"

"Most of them, to say the least, are hilly, and there are a number of high mountains."

"Are they well wooded?"

"With the exception of Erromango and some smaller islands, they are all well wooded and supplied with good water, and present a most luxuriant vegetation. Much of the timber is very valuable, sandal-wood and ebony being found on all or nearly all the islands."

"There's one good thing about them," exclaimed Captain Watson, rousing himself. "They produce plenty of fruit and vegetables. Bananas, shaddocks, limes, cocoanuts, yams, taro, cucumbers, and a species of sweet potato are cultivated and can be had in abundance."

"That sounds good," said Eugene; "but how about animals?"

"There are but few animals," replied Professor Gregory; "the most remarkable is a diminutive species of hog, the funniest thing I ever saw, and which, when full-grown, is not larger than a rabbit."

"I should like to see one of the little fellows," said Eugene.

"They are well worth it, I assure you," returned the Professor.

"The natives are of the Papuan negro race," said

Chester, "that I have found out from the books, and from Professor Singleton here."

"There can be no doubt of it," assented Professor Gregory. "They are black of skin, but tall and well-formed, and their dress in many points resembles the costume of several African tribes. That of the men consists of a broad belt or wrapper of matting worked in patterns colored with red, white, and black. The hair is generally gathered up into a bunch at the top of the head, stained yellow, and adorned with a plume of feathers. The lobes of the ears are always much distended, from the habit of wearing in them heavy ornaments cut from white shells, or similar materials. The septum of the nose is usually pierced, and the aperture filled with a



NATIVES OF THE NEW HEBRIDES.

white stone. Raised scars are made on the arms and chest, and arranged in definite patterns. Armlets made of shells are also used by them.

"The women are equally well-made with the men, and the general fashion of their dress and adornments is much the same. One article, however, is different and worthy of notice. Passing round the waist is a belt some seven inches wide, made of plaited fiber, woven into neat patterns. From this belt depends in front a small square apron, and behind is attached a broad strip of the same plaited matting as that which faces the belt. It descends half-way down the leg, and is finished off with a fan-like fringe of plaited grass, some eighteen inches long, and of proportionate width. The women as well as the men, practice the custom of making raised scars on their bodies. They differ from the men in the mode of dressing the hair, reminding one of the women of the Isle of Pines, as they keep it cut close to the head, instead of allowing it to grow to its full length and tying it up in a bunch. These people are less intelligent than the other South Sea Islanders, and are, I think, justly accused of cannibalism. Their habits, to my certain knowledge, are disgusting, their persons filthy, and their faces are usually smeared with turmeric and charcoal."

"They chew the betel-nut, too, do they not?" asked Chester.

"Yes, the use of the areca or betel-nut and chunam is quite general?"

"They must have had more or less intercourse with the Malays," suggested Professor Singleton.

"Without a doubt," rejoined the other Professor; "for, from observation, I know the language possesses a great similarity to that of the Malays."

"They are not navigators, I believe?" said Mr. Davis.

"Nothing of the kind," exclaimed Captain Watson,

quickly. "They have no canoes—don't know how to make them, and when they are obliged to venture on the water, use a sort of raft, on which they only go a few hundred yards from the shore."

"When was the group discovered?" asked Eugene.

"In 1606, by Quiros," answered Professor Gregory; "but he only saw one of the northern islands, the largest, which he supposed to be a portion of a continent, and named it *Australia del Espiritu Santo*. A century and a half later, Bougainville ascertained that this portion consisted of several islands, which he called the Great Cyclades. Cook discovered the greater part of the southern chain in 1773, and called the whole group the New Hebrides; and as his discoveries much exceeded those previously made, this name has superseded that applied by Bougainville."

"Professor," said Chester, abruptly, "I thought Vanikora, where La Pérouse and his crew perished, was one of the Queen Charlotte's, or Santa Cruz Islands."

"Well," returned Professor Gregory, "some geographers make a separate group of that cluster, and, on the whole, it is more nearly correct to do so."

"For my part," remarked Professor Singleton, "I think the Queen Charlotte's are a well-defined group by themselves. They are at some little distance to the north of the New Hebrides proper, lying between the tenth and twelfth degrees of south latitude, and 165° and 168° of east longitude. Santa Cruz is the largest of the group, being twenty miles long by ten wide. The natives belong to the Austral race of negroes. These islands were first discovered by Mandana in 1595, but were never again visited till Captain Carteret, in 1767, explored them, giving the group the name of his queen."

"Did you go to the Solomon Islands, Professor?" asked Chester, turning to Professor Gregory.

"I did not," was the answer; "my time was so nearly up that, from Santa Cruz I returned to Sydney. But Captain Watson here has visited those islands, and others to the north and northeast of Australia."

"And what did you think of the Solomon Islands, Captain?" asked Chester.

"In some respects they are well enough," was the reply; "but, on the whole, I would not advise you to visit them."

"Why not; is the climate not healthful?"

"You might survive the climate. It was the natives I was thinking of."

"Ah! they are fierce and treacherous, I have heard."

"So treacherous that they display a great genius for lulling voyagers into a fancied security, and then murdering and eating them. They have committed so many murders on seamen, and even captured so many vessels, that the greatest precautions are now taken by those who visit the islands."

"But why should any one want to visit them, if they are obliged to run such risks?" asked Eugene.

"Ah, for the sake of gain man will take any risks; and the fact is that the hawk's-bill turtle, so valued as supplying the tortoise-shell of commerce, is plentiful on the coasts, and is captured by the natives, who reserve the shell for barter with vessels."

"How do the ships manage to carry on the trade?"

"They only approach to within a certain distance of the shore, where they anchor, the natives then put off in canoes; but only a certain number are allowed to approach, the hammock nettings being triced up so as to prevent them from boarding the vessel. Only the principal chief is allowed to come on board, and through him the bargains are made. These are very tedious, as the natives will insist on haggling separately over each piece

of tortoise-shell, instead of selling the whole lot at once, as is done at other places. The usual articles of merchandise are employed in the trade, such as glass bottles, beads, axes, cloth, knives, and similar objects."

"The natives are not handsome, I believe," said Eugene.

"No, indeed; they are very dark, and may even be



A SOLOMON ISLANDER.

called black, with thick and crispy hair. Neither do they add to their beauty by their modes of adornment. The inveterate use of the betel-nut blackens their teeth, and their faces are often disfigured with streaks and patches of white paint, which has a horribly ghastly appearance against the black skin. They are fond of

wearing numerous ornaments in their ears, the lobes of which are perforated, and so distended that they can wear in them circular blocks of wood nine inches in circumference. Their chief ornament is, however, an armlet made from a large shell found on the reefs. Shells of sufficient size for this purpose are extremely rare, and are prized even more than whale's teeth among the Marquesans. Wars are often caused by a struggle for the possession of a single armlet; while in comparison with so valuable an article, human life is regarded as utterly worthless."

"They don't wear a great deal of clothing, I suppose?" asked Mr. Davis.

"They care very little for clothing," returned the Captain, "their whole dress being simply a piece of matting tied round the waist. But they stain their hair yellow, white, or red, like the Fijians."

"The negrillos are not the only race on the islands?" said Professor Singleton, inquiringly.

"No, there are more or less Malays everywhere. The population is very irregularly distributed, however, the majority of the inhabitants being in the northern part of the group."

"How many islands are there?" asked Eugene.

"Seven large, and quite a number of small ones. The more important are Bougainville, Choiseul, Malayta, Santa Isabella, New Georgia, Guadalcanar, and San Cristoval, the area of the whole being about 10,000 square miles.

"Are they mountainous?" asked Chester.

"There are mountains of considerable height in many of them. The shores, however, are generally low, and in some places bordered with mangrove swamps."

"Are they well watered?"

"Yes, there are numerous streams, and the temperature is cooled by copious rains."

"They must be exceedingly fertile."

"Few islands are more so ; bananas, yams, sugar cane, and ginger are extensively cultivated ; and the bread-fruit, cacao, and clove trees are seen on every hand."

"Who discovered the group?"

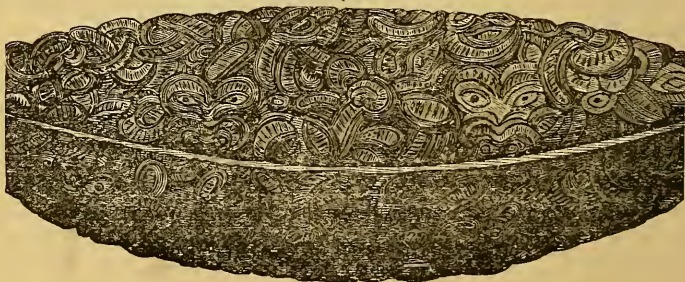
"It was discovered and the islands were explored in 1568, by Alvero de Mendaña, the great Spanish navigator, who was sent out by his uncle Lope de Castro, viceroy of Peru. Being desirous of inducing his countrymen to visit and colonize so fertile a land, he concocted a pious fraud, and called the group Solomons Islands, as being the Ophir from which Solomon's ships brought the vast quantities of gold with which he adorned the Temple and his own wonderful palace."

"Did his scheme work?" asked Eugene.

"It did not; and for a very good reason: When he again went in search of the islands he could not find them, owing, I suppose, to the imperfect instruments he had used in locating them. He afterwards, as I presume you know, died off one of the islands of Queen Charlotte's group, in 1595, while on his way to colonize them."

"Excuse me a moment," said Captain Bradford, suddenly. "There comes Tom Grayson. Something must be up, and Seth Cook has sent him to inform us."

At this announcement all started to their feet, and Chester and Eugene hastened after the Captain, who was already on his way to meet the old sailor.



CARVED FEATHER BOX.

CHAPTER XXVII.

PAPUA—THE MOLUCCA ISLANDS.

“WELL, Tom; what is it?” asked Captain Bradford, when the old salt had rolled into speaking distance.

“The *Rover* is in port, sir; and her mate, Daniel Kirby, is on-shore.”

“What is he doing? Where is he?”

“I met him with the British consul, as I came along, just now. Near the consul’s house they were joined by a third party—a spruce-rigged chap—and all went in together.”

“Did the mate know you?”

“Can’t say; think not,—but this rig, you know, Cap’n.”

“Ah, yes; he would remember that. No signs of the sloop, I suppose?”

“No, sir; but if you please, sir, Mr. Cook thinks you’d better come off, in case she should slip in, sudden like, you understand.”

“He’s right,” said the Captain, turning to the brothers; “we had better go on board at once.”

“As we may be obliged to lie quietly in the harbor the rest of the day, why not invite all our friends here to join us?” suggested Eugene.

“A good idea! And it may mislead Kirby. We’ll do it.”

“The invitation was given, and promptly accepted; and half an hour later the whole party were seated under an ample awning on the yacht’s quarter-deck.

The *Rover* lay at a short distance on the larboard quarter, but the other vessel had not made her appearance, neither had Daniel Kirby returned to the schooner.

"Well," said Eugene, presently, with a sigh, "I suppose we are likely to have some hours of this." Then, abruptly: "Captain Watson, why can't you go on with your story? Tell us something about New Ireland, New Britain, and all the rest of the islands in that wonderful region."

"I can do so, if it would be agreeable," said the Captain.

"Of course it would; so begin."

"Well, Tambora, or New Ireland, as you call it, is separated from Birara or New Britain on the southwest by St. George's Channel, and from Hanover on the northwest by Byron's Strait. The island is perhaps a little more than two hundred miles long, with an average breadth of twenty miles. Its area, therefore, is about 4,300 square miles."

"There are some quite respectable mountains, are there not?" asked Chester.

"Yes, the mountain range reaches an altitude of 1,500 or 2,000 feet, with several peaks much higher, and the slopes are clothed from base to summit with the most luxuriant forests."

"What are the highest peaks?" asked Eugene.

"They are called 'Mother and Daughter.' Their exact height I am unable to give you."

"They have some wonderful forests, I have been informed," observed Professor Singleton.

"Their forests are indeed wonderful. The trees grow to a great height, many of them being eighty, ninety, and even a hundred feet, perfectly straight, and often nine or ten feet in circumference."

"There are some very good harbors, are there not, James?" asked Captain Bradford.

"There are many good harbors, and several that are really excellent," was the answer.

"Are the inhabitants inclined to be industrious?" asked Mr. Davis.

"Judging from what I saw, I should say they were. The lower tracts are all well cultivated, producing bananas, cocoanuts, sugar-cane, yams, and numerous other plants and trees."



PREPARING DINNER.

"The inhabitants belong to the same race as their neighbors, I suppose?" said Chester, inquiringly.

"Yes, and I am glad to say their villages are very neat, and everything about them has a thrifty look. Of course, the women do much of their work in the open air, and I have been greatly interested in watching the young girls while they were preparing their meals in the shade of a spreading tree or under the canvas procured from some trading vessel."

"What do the islanders trade in mostly?"

"Fancy woods and tortoise-shell; the latter of a very superior quality."

"They have some animals, I suppose?"

"Very few besides dogs, pigs, and turtles."

"What is the number of the inhabitants?"

"Not far from twelve thousand."

"It's only a step to New Britain from New Ireland by the nearest way," suggested Eugene.

"St. George's channel is about twenty-five miles wide," returned the Captain.

"Then how wide is Dampier Strait, which separates New Britain from Papua?"

"About fifty miles wide," was the answer.

"New Britain is quite a large island, is it not?" asked Mr. Davis.

"Birara or New Britain contains an area of about 10,000 square miles," answered the Captain. "There are several islands belonging to the group. The extreme length of the large island is three hundred miles, and its breadth is from five to fifty miles. It is of crescent shape, and has several fine bays and harbors. At Spacious Bay, I am inclined to think, there is a channel extending across the island. In the interior there are many high mountains, and in the north several active volcanoes."

"Is the island as productive as New Ireland?" asked Chester.

"It could be made so," replied the Captain. "Much of the surface is covered with dense forests, and bordering the coast are extensive fertile plains. The principal productions at present are palms, bread-fruit, sugar-cane, pigs, turtles, and fish. The inhabitants are a tribe of negritos, well-made, and very dark, but not at all bad-looking."

"There are two or three groups in these waters," said Eugene, "that I wish to ask a word about. The Louisiade Archipelago, Dampier's group, and the Admiralty Islands."

"The first," returned the Captain, "are just off the extreme southeastern point of Papua. The Dampier's group are midway between Papua and the Admiralty Islands, and these last are a little northwest of New Ireland and north of Papua. They consist of one large island, Admiralty or Basco, in the center of the group, which is nearly sixty miles long; another called Matthias, containing more than one hundred and seventeen square miles, situated one hundred and fifty miles to the northeast, and some twenty-five or thirty much smaller ones. Basco is mountainous, and can boast of many lofty peaks, but generally the islands are low and fertile, abounding in cocoanut and other palms."

"When were the islands discovered?" asked Eugene.

"In 1616, by Cornelius Schooten," answered the Captain.

"Ah! that's why they are sometimes called Schooten's Islands," exclaimed Chester.

"Exactly," assented the Captain; "and they received their present name from Carteret, who rediscovered them in 1767."

"They are not often visited, I think," said Mr. Davis.

"Very seldom," returned the Captain, "access being difficult on account of the coral reefs which surround them."

"I wish I had been with you on some of your voyages," exclaimed Eugene, suddenly. "Pray, what took you to Papua, Captain?"

"I have been to that island more than once," was the reply. "My purpose in going there the first time was to land two passengers—a missionary and a naturalist.

The next time I was on a trading voyage, and brought away nutmegs, tortoise-shell, a few birds of paradise, and even trepang or *bêche-de-mer*, which I sold to the Chinese."

"Did you see much of the island while you were there?"

"Much of it!" exclaimed the Captain. "That's hardly likely. Why, my young friend, it's the largest island in the world, with the exception of Australia and possibly Borneo."

"I did n't think of that. About how large is it?"

"Its extreme length is 1,500 miles, and its maximum breadth 400 miles. Its area is estimated at nearly, if not quite, 300,000 square miles."

"The island, I suppose, is very little known to civilized man?" said Chester.

"It is less known than any other region of equal extent on the earth," rejoined the Captain. "Until recently no European had ever been able to advance more than a short distance into the interior, and even the principal features of the coast had not been accurately determined. I shall not undertake to describe its shape, but be assured of one thing, if you have not seen a map made since Captain Moresby's late survey, you have never seen anything like a correct representation of its outlines."

"The Dutch hold possession of a large portion of the island, do they not?" asked Mr. Davis.

"They claim all that part lying west of the 141st parallel of east longitude," answered his friend.

"Is the country mountainous?" inquired Eugene. "Some authorities say that it is, and others that it is not."

"I don't see how there can be any question about it," returned the Captain. "Mountains are visible in the interior, from all parts of the coast. The principal chains are the Arfak range in the northeast peninsula;

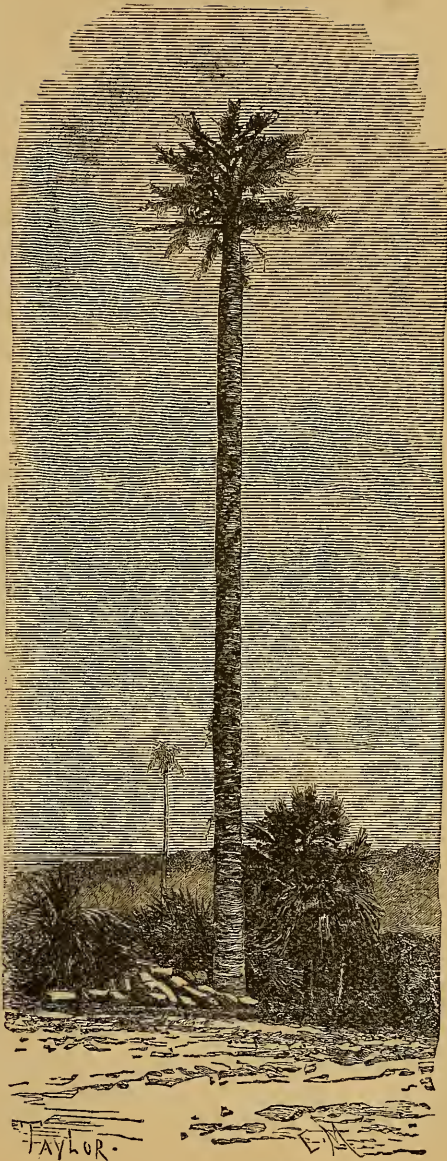
the Snowy Mountains, east of Geelvink Bay; and the Stanley range, in the southeast peninsula."

"There must be some fine rivers then, I should judge."

"As to that I am not well informed. So far as I know, few have been discovered; but taking into consideration the great height of the Papuan mountains — some of the ranges reaching an altitude of 13,000 feet — and remembering their distance from the coast, it is natural to infer that there are many large streams in the country."

"There must be some wonderful forest trees."

"Forests cover



A PALM TREE.

a large portion of the island, and are of the most tropical character. The palm flourishes in great perfection, and there is much valuable timber growing to a great size. I saw any number of trees from two hundred to two hundred and fifty feet in height."

"It is not a healthy country," observed Mr. Morgan, who had joined the group.

"No," returned Captain Watson, "the climate of Papua is warm and moist. During the wet season the rains on the coast are exceedingly heavy, and hence, malarial fevers are prevalent."

"I think I would be willing to run the risk of the fever for the sake of seeing the beautiful birds," said Eugene.

"Ah," exclaimed the Captain, "the birds are indeed beautiful — wonderfully so, and very numerous. There are no less than a dozen species of birds of paradise, of which eight are not found elsewhere, except in the closely contiguous island of Salawaty. There are no less than thirty species of parrots, among them the largest and smallest parrots known to ornithologists; some forty species of pigeons, including the beautiful crowned pigeons; and sixteen species of king-fishers. The cassowary is also met with, and there are many other beautiful and curious forms among the one hundred and eight known genera of Papuan land birds."

"I had no idea there were so many species of the birds of paradise," observed Mrs. Davis.

"In Papua and the Molucca Islands there are not less than eighteen species," said Professor Gregory. "These beautiful birds have aptly been designated 'the children of the sun.' Their plumage is so flocculent and downy that they are incapable of flying otherwise than *against* the wind, for were they to fly *with* the wind, their plumage would become so disordered that they would be

unable to control their movements. The golden bird of paradise is remarkable for having long slender feathers, ending in a small oval vane on either side of the head. The Incomparable is distinguished by a tail three times longer than the body, and by the most magnificent plumage. The habits of these beautiful creatures are not perfectly known; they live in troops in the vast forests of the islands they inhabit. Their colors are much more brilliant when living than when dead, therefore, only a very poor idea of them can be formed from stuffed and mounted specimens. M. Lenon, having visited Papua, and seen one of them on the wing, thus describes his emotions: 'Scarcely had I walked a hundred paces into these ancient forests, the daughters of Time, whose somber depth was, perhaps, the most magnificent and stately sight I had ever seen, when a bird of paradise struck on my view. It flew gracefully and in undulations; the feathers of its sides formed an elegant and aerial plume, which, without exaggeration, bore no little resemblance to a brilliant meteor. Surprised, astounded, enjoying an inexpressible gratification, I devoured this splendid bird with my eyes; but my emotion was so great that I forgot to shoot at it, and did not recollect that I had a gun in my hand till it was far away.' "

"I suppose it is only the male birds that can boast of the brilliant colors and remarkable plumage?" said Chester, interrogatively.

"You are quite right," replied the Professor, "the females throughout are very plain looking personages."

"They have no song?"

"No; and although you would hardly think it, they are allied in structure and habits to crows and starlings."

"Did you ever read Wallace's description of their dancing parties?" asked Professor Singleton, with a smile.

"I never did, and I should like very much to hear what

he says about them," exclaimed Mrs. Davis, somewhat eagerly.

"Perhaps I cannot recall his exact words," rejoined the Professor, "but the birds molt in January and February; and are in full plumage in May. At this time, he says, the males of the great bird of paradise (*Paradisea apoda*) assemble early in the morning to exhibit themselves in a singular manner, which the natives call their 'Sáccleli,' or dancing-parties. The ball-room is a huge tree, whose wide branches afford them abundant space for display. On one of these trees a score of males will assemble, raise their wings, and keep them in constant vibration; flying now and then from branch to branch, so that the whole tree is alive with their waving plumes. When at the utmost point of excitement, the wings are raised over the head, the plumes expanded until they form two magnificent fans, overshadowing the whole body, while the yellow head and green throat form a foundation and support for the golden glory which waves above. When seen in this attitude the bird of paradise really deserves its name, and must be ranked as one of the most beautiful of living things.

"'This habit enables the natives to obtain specimens with more ease,' says Dr. Hartwig. 'As soon as they find that the birds have fixed upon a tree on which to assemble, they build a little shelter of palm-leaves in a convenient place among the branches, and the hunter ensconces himself in it before daylight, armed with his bow and a number of arrows terminating in a round knob. A boy waits at the foot of the tree, and when the birds come at sunrise, and a sufficient number have assembled, and have begun to dance, the hunter shoots with his blunt arrow so strongly as to stun the bird, which drops down and is secured without its plumage being injured by a drop of blood. The rest take no

notice, and fall one after another till at last some of them take the alarm.

“Another species, the red bird of paradise, found in some parts of Papua, is caught in a very ingenious manner: There is a large tree bearing a red fruit, of which these birds are very fond. The hunters fasten this fruit on a stout forked stick, and provide themselves with a fine strong cord. They then find out some tree in the forest upon which these birds are accustomed to perch; and climbing up it, fasten the stick to a branch, and arrange the cord in a noose so ingeniously that when the bird comes to eat, its legs are caught; and by pulling the end of the cord, which hangs to the ground, it comes down free from the branch, and brings down the bird. Sometimes when this favorite food is abundant elsewhere, the hunter sits from morning to night under his tree, and often for two or three whole days in succession, without getting even a bite; while at other times, if very lucky, he may get two or three birds a day.’”

“About how many inhabitants are there on the island?” inquired Mr. Davis.

“There is no means of forming any trustworthy estimate, that I am aware of,” replied Professor Gregory.

“It is the true home of the typical Papuan race,” observed Professor Singleton.

“Yes,” assented Captain Watson, “and I noticed with interest that they have a facial expression not unlike that of Europeans.”

“It is an unmixed race, is it not?” asked Chester.

“According to the best authorities, no other indigenous race exists on the island,” said the Captain.

“Are the natives at all industrious?” asked Mr. Davis.

“Captain Moresby, who visited the southeast peninsula in 1873, says that the country, although very rugged and mountainous, is intersected by fertile valleys, which are

well cultivated by the natives, who there excel as agriculturists. Their villages in this region he describes as singularly neat, in which respect they contrast favorably with those in the northwest part of the island near Dorey, where the houses are built on poles fifteen feet above the ground.

“Taken as a race, they are very fine examples of savage humanity, tall, well-shaped, and powerful. They are remarkable for two physical peculiarities. The one is a



NATIVE PAPUAN.

roughness of the skin, and the other is the growth of the hair. The hair grows in regular tufts or patches, each about the size of a pea, and attains to a considerable length, sometimes measuring eighteen inches from root to tip. The Papuans are very proud of this natural ornament, and therefore will seldom cut it off; but as, if left untrained, it would fall over the eyes,

they have various modes of dressing it, generally, however, they make it stand out at right-angles from the head; and, as the hair is very coarse, crisp, and stiff, it assumes a mop-like shape, and increases the apparent size of the head to an enormous extent.”

“That’s where they and their island get their name,”

explained Professor Singleton ; "the word Papua is derived from this peculiarity of the hair. In the Malay language, the word which signifies 'crisped' is *puapua*, which, of course, is easily contracted into *pa-pua*."

"No doubt, Captain, you have visited the Molucca Islands, on some of your many voyages?" said Chester, interrogatively.

"Of course, one could hardly sail those seas without touching at the Spice Islands occasionally."

"Do tell us about them, Captain," exclaimed Mrs. Davis, eagerly ; "for there has always been something fascinating in the very name to me."

"Well, the Moluccas, or Spice Islands, as I like better to call them, are a group in the Indian Ocean, constituting a part of the Indian Archipelago, and lie between the latitude of 5° north and 9° south, and between the longitudes of 122° and 131° east, and distributed over the sea from the east coast of the island of Celebes to the western point of Papua.

"Though the number of the Moluccas is estimated at several hundreds, only a few are of any remarkable magnitude or particular importance. The large islands are Ceram, Gilolo, and Booro. This part of the archipelago is naturally divided into three clusters, namely, the Moluccas proper or Gilolo group, the Ceram group, and the Timor Lant group. The first includes Gilolo, Morty, Mandioly, Batchian, Oby, Makian, Motir, Tidore, Ternate, and many other islands. The Ceram cluster, which lies in the center of the group, contains, among others, Ceram, Booro, Amboyna, and Banda. The third cluster lies further south, between Australia and the west of Papua, Timor Lant being the principal island, and the Kei Isles and Arrus helping to make up the group.

"Nearly all the Moluccas are mountainous, the peaks of their ridges reaching to an altitude of from 7,000 to

8,000 feet, the base on which they rest being nearly all volcanic. Though the surface is broken and extremely rugged, the islands, taken generally, are particularly fertile. The coast is defended by coral reefs, and each island has one or more secure and often commodious harbors or basins for shipping. Though the greater number lie nearly under the equator, yet, from the length of the monsoons and the smallness of terrestrial surface, the heat is by no means so great or oppressive as it would be were the surface larger or the trade winds less frequent. The vegetable products are the same as those of Java, with the exception of rice, all of which is imported, the natives living chiefly on the products of the sago-palm. Oranges, lemons, and most other fruits are abundant. The staple of the islands, however, are the spices, especially cloves, mace, and nutmegs. Edible bird's nests, shark-fins, and sea-cucumbers or trepang, form a large branch of the native trade with China, as well as a small amount of gold, and birds of paradise. Fish are abundant in all the waters, and on the land a species of deer and wild hogs abound. Serpents of a dangerous character infest the islands, as does a ravenous variety of the alligator. The inhabitants are composed chiefly of two races, the Malays, who here, as everywhere else, monopolize the sea-board, and the Papuans, who occupy the mountains and interior; and though a few of them are Mahomedans, the great bulk of the people are idolaters. The Moluccan Malays are generally industrious; they cultivate the soil or gain a subsistence by fishing. They are very expert in the construction and management of their vessels, and are greatly addicted to piracy."

"Yes, I suppose they are addicted to piracy," observed Eugene; "but I must say I am beginning to feel some respect for the Malays. They seem to me to be a bold, pushing, and thoroughly energetic race."

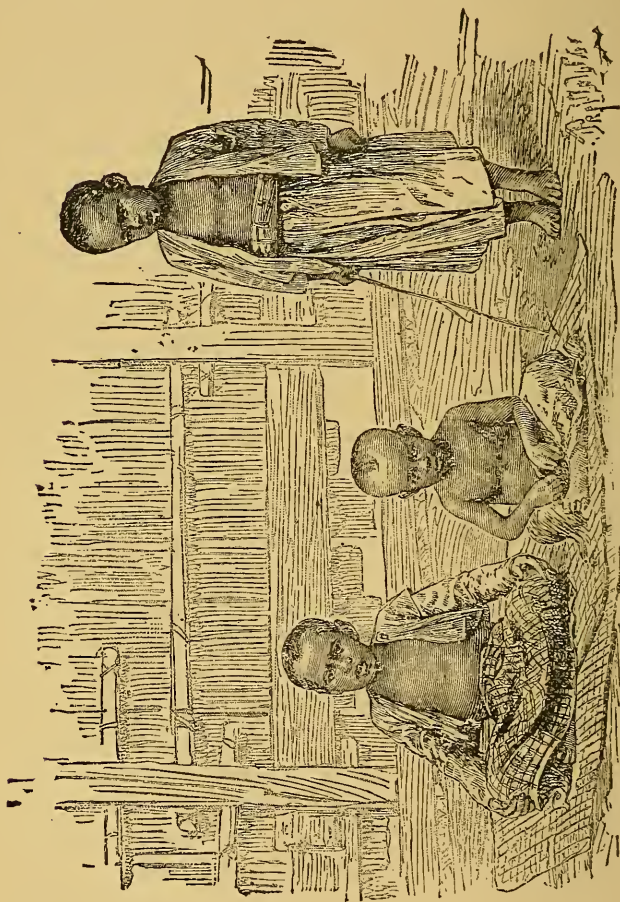
"They are one of the most civilized and aggressive nations of their part of the world," returned the Captain. "They are, as you say, a bold, roving, and energetic race of people, strongly addicted to war, plunder, emigration, adventure, and gallantry. Their residences, whether on the Malayan peninsula or the larger islands, are always on the coast, driving the natives, who look on them with dread, wherever they colonize, from the sea-board, and in a measure shutting them up in the center of the land, while in the smaller isles they have exterminated the original possessors. In the north of their own peninsula, they are mixed with the Siamese, and in other places where the natives are more numerous and resolute, with the Burmese and Celebes. Physically considered, the Malays are rather below the ordinary stature, well-formed, but slight, and with remarkably small wrists and ankles; the face round, mouth large, teeth fine, jaw square, and prominent cheek bones. The nose is short and small, but never flat; the eyes black, hair long, harsh, and shiny, and of a deep black, and the complexion tawny. They practice agriculture, have some knowledge of the mechanical arts, and a limited acquaintance with medicine. They are the greatest boasters of all the Asiatic natives, talk incessantly of their truth and honor, and yet, Mr. Eugene, I am sorry to say, in all the purposes of life they are the most false, ferocious, and treacherous people alive; while the soft and musical language in which they express their ideas—in these respects the most pleasing imaginable—makes their treachery seem more hateful from the gentle tones in which their murderous projects are clothed."

"But they are kind husbands and indulgent fathers, are they not?" asked Chester.

"Generally, I think, they are considerate toward their

wives, and regard their children with affection. On the whole, the little ones are a happy race of mortals."

"But, judging from what you say, I apprehend the Malays are not a very devout race," observed Mr. Davis.



MALAY CHILDREN.

"No, their religion, though a mixture of Mahommedanism of the Soonnee sect, is the most tolerant and liberal of all the creeds and opinions of Asia. These

people never forgive an affront, but sooner or later take a cruel revenge. They live by plunder, and, as I have already said, are naturally pirates, darting out from their back streams and hidden rivers in their strongly manned *proahs* upon any vessel that approaches too near their coast, or in fleets lying in wait on the open sea, for any rich prize on her homeward or outward voyage."



MALAY WOMAN AND CHILD.

"When were the Moluccas discovered?" asked Eugene.

"They were discovered in 1511," answered the Captain, "by the Portuguese, who, after holding them for nearly a century, were expelled in 1607 by the Dutch. Ten years later, the English obtained a right to trade with the islands, which the Dutch ultimately allowed to the extent of a third of the produce, each country con-

tributing a contingent to the defense and military government of the islands. The Dutch, however, jealous of their English rivals, determined to get rid of them, and, to this end, in the year 1622, they resolved to accuse them of a conspiracy with the Amboynese, to seize one of their forts. They managed to get a Japanese and a Portuguese, who were in the English service, into their power, and secretly put them to torture until they had 'confessed' whatever was wanted of them. Then, under the semblance of the purest friendship and neighborly hospitality, they invited the governor, officers, men, women, and children — in fact, the entire community of the English factory, to the Dutch settlement, on the plea of celebrating some national event, in which both nations were supposed to feel an interest; when, in the midst of confidence and rejoicing, and following on a small scale the example of Ethelred's massacre of the Danes, the Dutch suddenly fell upon the unsuspecting English, and brutally murdered a great number, and made prisoners of all who escaped the first savage onslaught. Had they completed their savage deed at once, and put old and young, women and children, to the sword upon the spot, horrible and revolting as the act would have been for a civilized people to perpetrate on men of their own faith, it would have been mild compared with the atrocities which marked the sequel of this fearful tragedy; for, with a malignity of feeling and a refinement of cruelty only worthy of the worst days of the Vehmics, the prisoners, loaded with chains, were thrown into cells and dungeons, where, from the heat and dearth of water, they suffered dreadful torments, being brought forth singly to endure all the agony that racks, pincers, and other implements of torture could inflict on their naked flesh. In this manner, with every conceivable suffering, the Dutch gloated over the total extermination of their

rivals; the women being subjected to double torture, their dying moments agonized by the sight of their butchered children, for these Christian savages left not one of that unhappy colony alive to tell the tale of murder, and it was by strangers and natives the world heard of this outrage on England's honor."

"Well," said Eugene, thoughtfully, "I knew the Dutch would do most anything for the sake of wealth and power, but I didn't suppose they were quite so bad as that."

"They have been guilty, I find, of several just such acts of heartless cruelty," returned the Captain.

"Amboyna, where this fearful tragedy occurred, is really *the* island of the Moluccas, is it not?" asked Chester.

"Though small as respects geographical extent, presenting a superficial surface of but two hundred and eighty square miles," returned the Captain, with enthusiasm, "Amboyna is the most valuable and productive of all the islands in this region of spice and perfume; for the cinnamon, nutmeg, clove, and all the pepper bushes that yield the various sorts of this condiment, grow here in profusion, while, in addition, the sago tree is native to the soil, and flourishes with cotton, indigo, and all the luscious fruits common to tropical climes. Indeed, so valuable is the island, and so high a value do the Dutch put upon it, that its possession is regarded with more consideration than any other colony belonging to their crown; and so great has been their jealousy of being sole masters of this settlement, that, as you already know, they have stopped short of no treachery or blood that would insure them its sovereignty. When they had firmly established themselves in the Moluccas, they endeavored to get the exclusive trade of spices into their own hands; an advantage which the nations they had

expelled were never able to procure. They skillfully availed themselves of the forts they had taken, and those they had erected, to draw the kings of Ternate and Tydor, who had considerable authority in the archipelago, into their scheme. These petty kings, for a small sum, — a little more than \$15,000 — agreed to root out all the clove and nutmeg trees in islands under their dominions ; and a garrison of seven hundred men was appointed to secure the performance of the treaty. At Amboyna they concentrated the cultivation of cloves. They allotted to the inhabitants four thousand parcels of land, on each of which they were compelled to plant one hundred and twenty-five trees, amounting, in all, to five hundred thousand ; and the collective produce averages more than 1,000,000 pounds. To keep up prices in foreign markets they frequently burned whole cargoes of spices.”

“I am beginning to like the Dutch less and less, I think,” muttered Eugene. “Burn whole cargoes of spices, indeed ! The selfish, mutton-headed fellows !”

“I don’t wonder you are indignant,” smiled Mrs. Davis ; “I am, myself.”

“Yes,” said her husband, carelessly, “she is very fond of spices.”

“It is from the Banda Islands we get our best nutmegs, is it not, Captain ?” asked Chester.

“Yes,” was the reply, “there are twelve of them, all small. Two of them are uncultivated and almost uninhabited, and three others claim the distinction of producing the best nutmegs in the world. Excepting this valuable spice, the Banda Isles are fearfully barren. The land will not produce any kind of grain, and the sago serves the natives of the country instead of bread. The land is mostly owned by Europeans. The Dutch, finding that the natives were savage, cruel, and treacherous, because they were impatient under their yoke, resolved

to exterminate them, and did so. Their possessions were then divided among the white settlers, who procured slaves from some of the neighboring islands to cultivate the lands. The climate of the Bandas is particularly unhealthy, for which reason the Dutch attempted to transfer the culture of the nutmeg to Amboyna, but their experiments were not successful in giving them as good a spice there."

"Timor is not classed as one of the Moluccas, I suppose?" said Mr. Davis, interrogatively.

"No," answered Captain Watson, "it belongs to the Indian archipelago."

"It is quite a large island."

"About three hundred miles long and fifty miles wide, with 200,000 population."

"Does it also belong to the Dutch?"

"The natives on the western and southern coasts acknowledge the supremacy of the Dutch, who have their principal settlement at Kupang, or Coepang, as it is sometimes called."

"The Portuguese are also established on the island," observed Chester.

"Yes," assented the Captain, "at Dilli; and the natives of the eastern and northern parts pay tribute to them."

"Is it a rich island?" asked Eugene.

"Fairly so," was the reply. "A considerable trade is carried on, principally from Kupang, and is chiefly in the hands of the Chinese."

"What have you to say of the people?" asked Mr. Davis.

"They are of low stature, with very dark complexions and bushy hair, and resemble the Papuans. The women weave cloth, while the only work the men do is to construct canoes and make ornaments for their horses."

"Celebes is wholly under the control of the Dutch, if I am not mistaken?" said Chester, in an inquiring tone.

"Yes; and it also belongs to the Indian Archipelago," replied the Captain.

"It has a very remarkable outline," observed Professor Singleton.

"True," assented the Captain; "and after a glance at it, you don't wonder it has 2,600 miles of sea-coast."

"What!" exclaimed Eugene; "2,600 miles? How large is the island, pray?"

"The Dutch say about twice the size of Ireland; but I am inclined to think, with Wallace, that they make it out larger than it really is."

"What is the population?"

"It is estimated all the way from one to three millions."

"There is no want of birds, beasts, and reptiles on the island," remarked Mr. Morgan.

"You are quite right, Jasper; and some of them are interesting specimens, as, for instance, the sapi-utan or wild cow of the Malays, a black, baboon-like monkey, the Malay civet, an ox-like antelope, and the python."

"They must have magnificent forests," said Mr. Davis, musingly.

"The uncultivated portions of Celebes are covered with forests, abounding in the luxurious vegetation of an equatorial climate. Besides tree-ferns, pandani, the wild jack-fruit, and hundreds of others, there are a dozen or more varieties of the palm, including the cocoanut, the betelnut, the sago, and the sugar palm. There are more fruits than I can begin to name, including bananas, breadfruits, pineapples, and durians."

"They raise vast quantities of rice and coffee," observed Mr. Morgan.

"Yes," assented Captain Gregory; "rice and coffee

are the most important agricultural productions. Cacao, cotton, maize, and tobacco are also raised."



A CELEBES FOREST.

"Do you know the amount of coffee the island produces?" asked Captain Bradford.

"The annual yield of the Dutch Government coffee plantations on the tablelands of Minahasa is about 5,000,000 pounds. The coffee raised here is superior to any from Java, and commands a higher price."

"Gold is found on the island, I have been informed," said Mr. Davis.

"Yes," assented the Captain; "gold is found in considerable quantities, and not only throughout the whole northern peninsula, but also near the southern extremity."

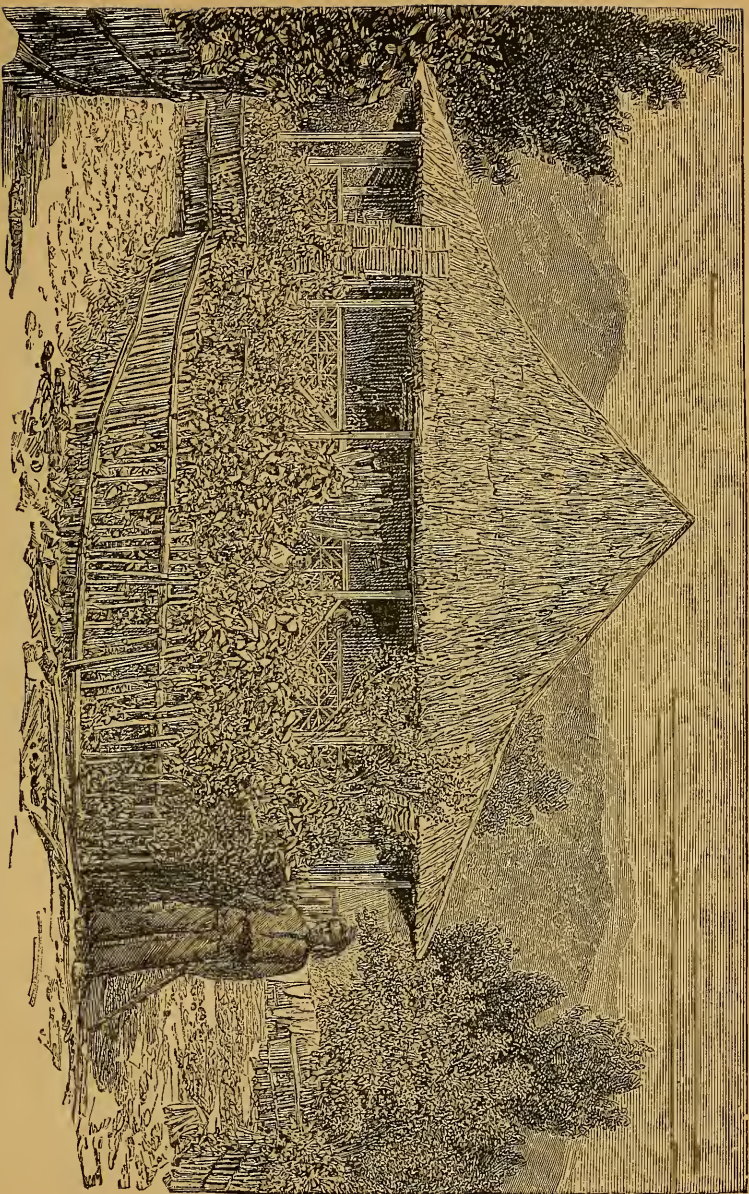
"The natives have kings of their own, I have seen it stated," observed Chester.

"Yes," returned the Captain; "but these kings are dependent upon the Dutch government."

"They are all Malays, I suppose?" asked Eugene.

"Yes; all belong to the Malay race. The Bughis constitute the most numerous and active portion of the population. They are sailors and traders. The sailors are wild and ferocious in appearance, but really of quiet and peaceable disposition. The natives in the northern part of the island, while they are known to be Malays, have been classed as savage, though of late they have made some advancement. They are short in stature, of light-brown complexion, with high, projecting cheek-bones, and have long, straight, black hair. Until quite recently, they devoted much of their time to head-hunting, like the Dyaks of Borneo, and they are said to be as fierce in battle as the Manyemas, whose very women fight in the ranks with their husbands; still they make good servants, and are not slow to adopt the manners and habits of civilized life. The Mandhars, of whom I can tell you very little, dwell in the most western part of the island, north of Macassar."

"Celebes can boast of several quite important seaports, I believe?" said Mr. Davis, in an inquiring tone.



RESIDENCE OF THE OVERSEER OF COFFEE CULTURE.

"Yes," assented the Captain; "and the most important are Menado, Kema, and Macassar or Vlaardingen, all of which carry on a considerable trade with China and other parts of the world."

"Of course," observed Eugene, "the natives do not call the island Celebes."

"No," returned the Captain; "the name is hardly known to them. They call it Negri Bughis, or Bughis Land."

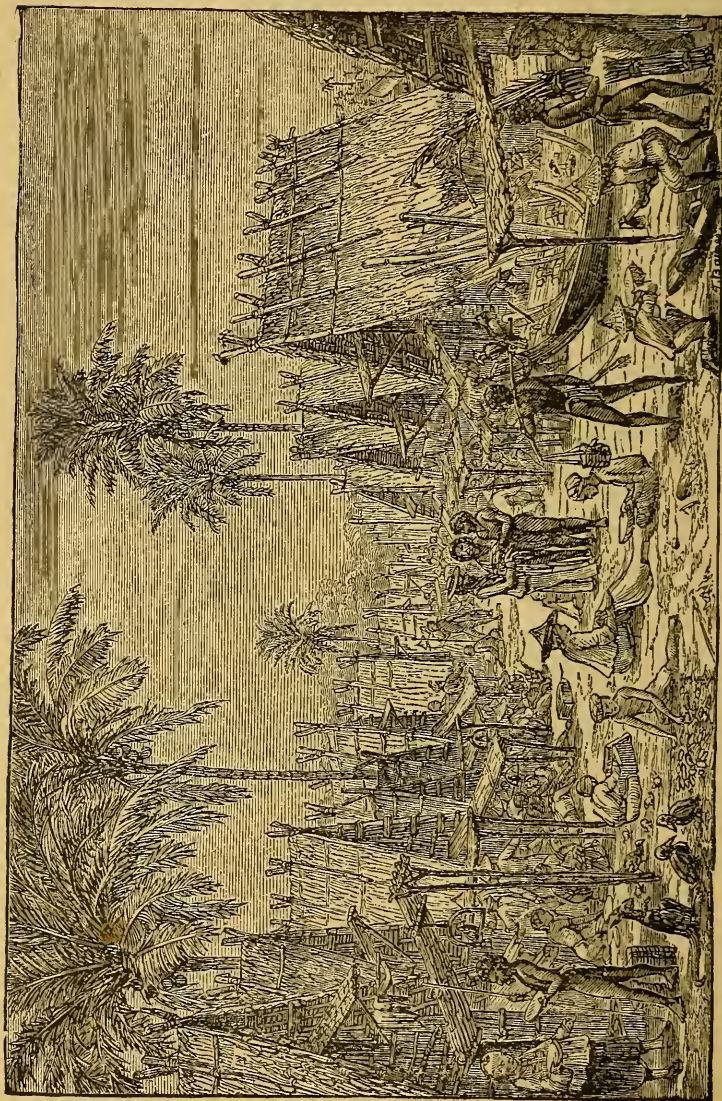


MANYUEMA WARRIORS.

"As we have so far touched upon the Malay or Indian Archipelago proper, as to speak of Celebes and Tamor," said Chester, "I wish, Captain, you would give us some information about the other islands, particularly those which were formerly designated as the Sundas."

"I could n't begin to give you an account of each one,"

replied the Captain; "they are very numerous, and all are interesting."



A VILLAGE OF THE MALAY ARCHIPELAGO.

"Well, tell us about some of them, then," urged Eugene.

"Between Timor and Java," said the Captain, acquiescing, "there are several rich and exceedingly beautiful islands, the most important of which are Sumba, Flores, Sumdawa, Lomblen, Lombok, and Baly. They are all under the control of the Dutch, unless Flores be excepted, and are inhabited by the Malay race, who greatly resemble the people of Celebes. They usually live in villages, on or near the coast, the streets of which, during the day, present a succession of animated and curious scenes."

"You mentioned Java," said Chester. "I suppose that island is really the most important colonial possession of the Dutch in the East Indies."

"Yes," assented the Captain, emphatically; "and it is the most fertile and prosperous tropical island in the world."

"How large is it?" asked Eugene.

"It is 666 miles long, by a breadth varying from 56 to 135½ miles, and including the island of Madura, contains 51,336 square miles."

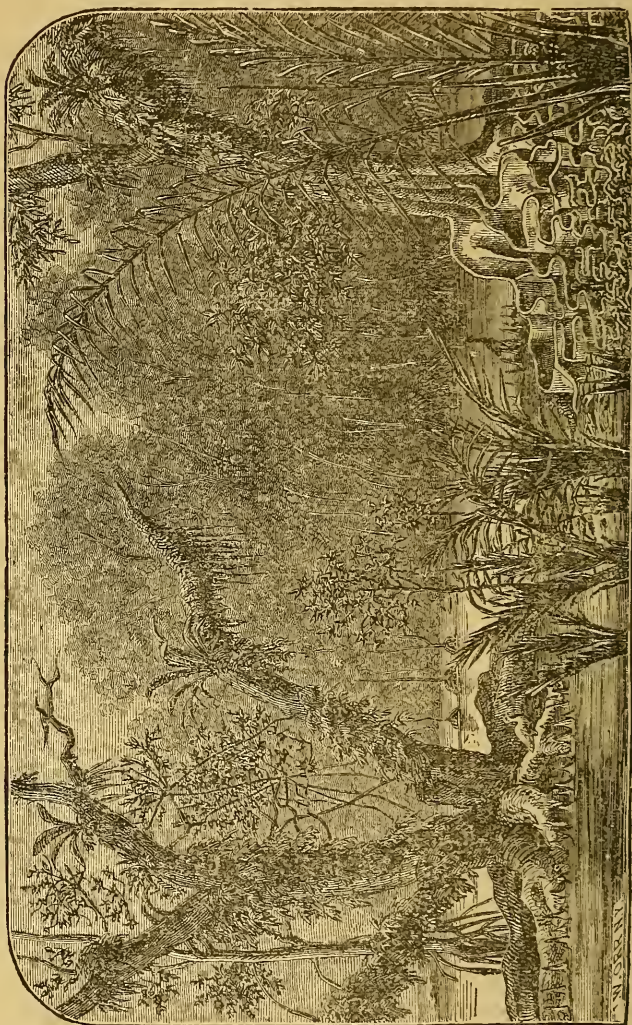
"It is densely populated," remarked Professor Gregory.

"Java is one of the most densely peopled countries of the world," affirmed the Captain. "Its population exceeds 18,000,000, of which more than 30,000 are Europeans."

"It must indeed be a wonderful soil to support so many," exclaimed Professor Singleton.

"The soil of Java is very deep and rich," said the Captain; "and as I have already said, the whole island is far above the general average of fertility. A lofty range of mountains thickly set with volcanoes, varying from a height of 5,000 to an altitude of 12,000 feet, intersects the entire length of the island; while numer-

ous ranges of inferior elevation, and short, hilly chains, traverse the country in all directions. Many of these



AN ISLAND FOREST.

mountain-ranges, however, possess broad plains and fertile valleys. There are several small and beautiful

lakes among the mountains, and some extensive marshes, which in the rainy season become lakes and are navigated. The rivers are very numerous, but generally running from the central range to the ocean on either shore, are short and of little importance."

"Is the island as well supplied with timber as Celebes?" asked Mr. Davis.

"Java," returned the Captain, "contains several dense forests, which, at certain points in the vicinity of the rivers, extend into swampy lands, and remind one very much of the forests on the Amazon."

"The country is subject to earthquakes, is it not?" asked Chester.

"Yes, as the mountains are nearly all of a volcanic origin, earthquakes and thunder-storms are frequent, and the former often fearfully destructive."

"What are some of the products?" asked Eugene.

"It's well you put the question in that form," laughed Captain Watson, "for their name is legion. Among them are rice, maize, millet, wheat, sugar, coffee, tea, cotton, tobacco, cinnamon, ginger, pepper, cardamons, betel, cocoanut, areca-palm, indigo, cochineal, a great variety of dye-stuffs, and nearly all forms of tropical fruits and esculent plants."

"But few minerals are obtained, I think," observed Mr. Davis.

"You are right," assented the Captain; "still, a large supply of iron, sulphur, salt, and saltpeter are procured."

"I see they export a large quantity of oil," said Chester.

"Yes; many of the trees yield a copious supply."

"And they are well furnished with domestic animals," remarked Eugene.

"Very true; black cattle, goats, buffaloes, and horses are numerous, and of their several breeds, excellent.

Then, too, the seas and rivers yield abundance of fish, and domestic fowls are reared in great numbers."

"With such natural resources, and almost unbounded means of commerce and subsistence," remarked Professor Gregory, "it is a subject of little wonder to me that the Dutch should early have seen the advantages of the island, and have made themselves masters of a spot so prolific and rich in all the items of comfort, luxury, and trade."

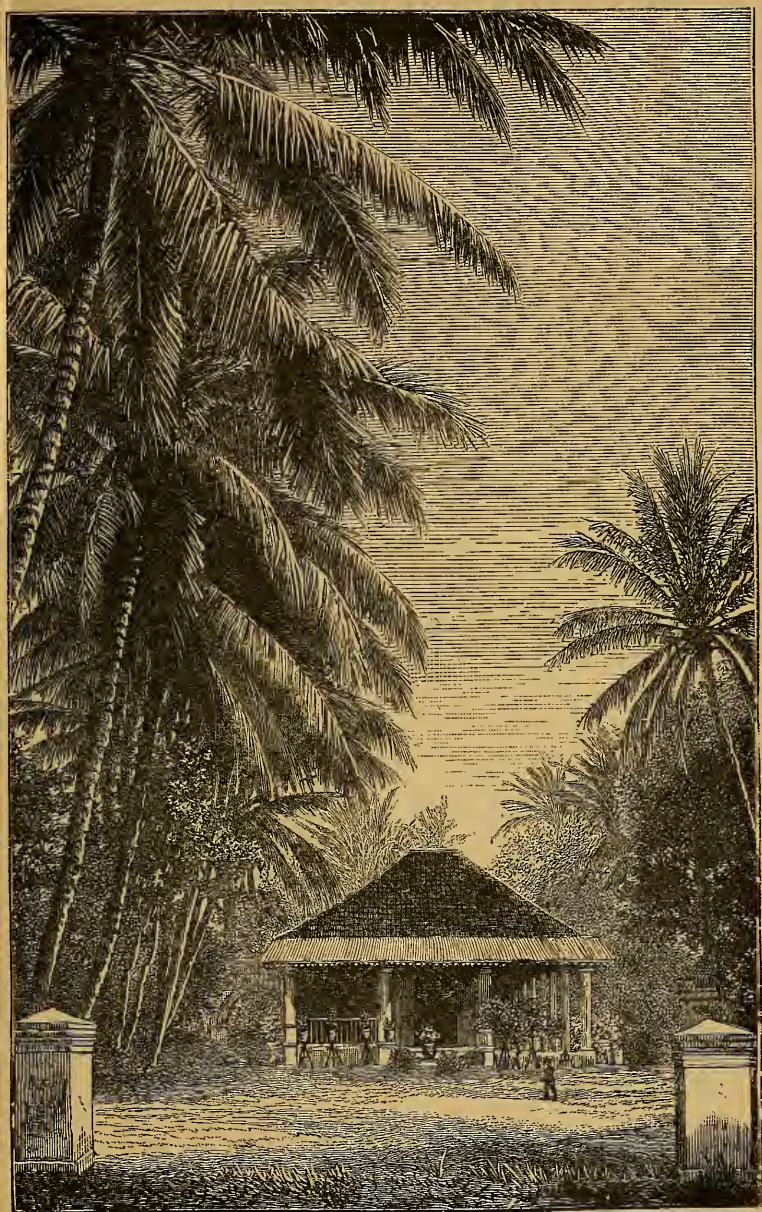
"Yes," said the Captain; "and having made themselves masters of it, they at once proceeded to make the most of it; hence Java soon became, and has to the present day continued, the great center of the Dutch East India trade."

"I have heard much said against the climate, in the past," observed Mr. Davis; "but I am inclined to think it is not so very bad after all."

"At the height of some 4,000 feet in the mountain valleys," returned the Captain, "there is a delightful climate, healthful to the European constitution, and favorable to the growth of northern fruits and vegetables. The general climate of the island is better than that of most tropical countries; and in places where malaria formerly prevailed, as in Batavia, the evil has been clearly traced to the neglect of water-courses, and has been remedied."

"I suppose the chief variety in the vegetation is caused by difference of elevation," said Eugene.

"Yes; for instance, on the low coast are found cocoanut-palms and bananas. Higher up are ferns and magnificent forests. At a greater height are forests of fig trees. Above these are oaks and laurels, and at a height of 6,000 feet the tropical character of the vegetation disappears, and is succeeded by heaths, conifers, and a vegetation closely allied to that of the temperate zone."



HOUSE AT BATAVIA.

“Do the Dutch have full possession of the island?” asked Eugene.

“In one sense they do not,” was the answer; “for two native princes, the *susuhunam* or emperor, and the sultan, rule over small portions. But these, though nominally independent sovereigns, are in reality merely tributaries to the Dutch.

“The Dutch settlements,” the Captain continued, “are divided into seventeen provinces, the most important of which are situated on the northern shore of the island, to all of which Batavia is the capital.”

“Ah! that, I suppose, is quite a fine city, as well as an important one,” suggested Mr. Davis.

“Well,” rejoined the Captain, “its roadstead, which lies between the mainland and some small, uninhabited islands, affords both good anchorage and shelter; and, though vessels of any considerable size seldom anchor nearer shore than about one and a half miles distance, a river, which runs through the town, admits of small craft of from twenty to forty tons running a couple of miles or so inland. Batavia, as has been intimated, used to be notorious for its insalubrity; but the new town, built on high ground above the swampy level of the old, in a large measure remedied the evil so far as the government officials and wealthy merchants were concerned; while latterly, owing to the intelligent exertions of the Baron Capellen, who caused some of the canals which permeated the town, Dutch fashion, to be filled up, others to be cleansed, streets to be widened, and other sanitary measures adopted, the old part has been rendered as healthy as any town on the island. Nevertheless, the wealthy classes continue to live in the new town, where there are many delightful residences, while the old is inhabited by Chinese emigrants and descendants of the original colonists. The population, exclusive of the gar-

risson, which is generally large, may be estimated at more than 150,000, of which number about 4,000, probably, are Europeans, 35,000 Chinese, 1,200 Arabs, 11,000 Papuans, and the remainder natives. The total value of the annual exports are about \$29,000,000, and of the imports not far from \$23,000,000."

"You have told us about the domestic animals of Java," said Eugene, presently, "but I don't think you have said anything about the wild game."

"The fact is," returned the Captain, "game does not abound here so much as in other countries, though hares and rabbits are pretty common, and deer and antelopes are also plentiful. Wild hogs and monkeys are found in the jungles, and the forests abound with tigers as powerful and large as in Bengal."

"Tigers!" exclaimed Eugene, "that's the kind of game for me."

"Well, you'll find plenty of them on the island. And there is a species of black tiger which is very ferocious."

"Anything else?"

"Yes; the rhinoceros is sometimes met with, and I mustn't forget to speak of the white eagle, which is often seen here."

"The Dutch did not discover Java?" said Eugene, inquiringly.

"No; the island was discovered and settled on by the Portuguese in 1511; sixty years later, the Dutch made a lodgment at Bantam, and in 1602 the English erected their first East Indian factory at the same place. The Dutch, however, soon expelled both, and, gradually increasing their sway, have from that time remained the almost exclusive masters of this splendid island."

"Now let us hear something about the natives," said Chester.

"The natives," returned the Captain, "are superior in

civilization and mechanical skill to all the inhabitants of the Indian Archipelago, some of their silk and cotton fabrics showing an unapproachable excellence; they are also admirable shipwrights, and generally make superior mechanics."

"They must be the descendants of the builders of the wonderful temples whose ruins are scattered over the island," suggested Professor Singleton.

"There can be no doubt of that," rejoined the Captain; "and the ruins you refer to are indeed wonderful. In number and beauty they are unsurpassed by the architectural remains of any country in the world. The most extensive and interesting of these structures are at Brambanam, Borobodo, and Gumong Prau. At Brambanam are the 'thousand temples,' and it is of the celebrated temple of Borobodo that Wallace says that the amount of human labor and skill expended on the great pyramids of Egypt sinks into insignificance when compared with that required to complete this sculptured hill temple in the interior of Java."

"You haven't said one word about the wonderful bats of Java," insinuated Jasper Morgan.

"True," returned the Captain; "and nowhere does the bat attain to such immense dimensions as on this island, where it frequently measures five feet across the wings, and may be seen hanging in hundreds, extended from branches of trees, like rows of hides hung out to dry along the skirts of the forest.

"Up to the time of the Arab invasion in the fifteenth century," continued Captain Watson, in a thoughtful tone, "Java appears to have been a great and flourishing state, as the splendid Hindoo temples to Brahma and Buddha, of which we have just spoken, sufficiently testify; but, through the destruction of its magnificent capital by the conquerors, the island was given over to

a number of petty chiefs, who tyrannized over the conquered inhabitants, and converted the lately orderly and prosperous country into a scene of rapine and discord. In this state the Europeans found it, when, having discovered the new route, the East became no longer a mystery to the exploring spirit of the West; and —”

“Beg pardon, Captain,” suddenly interrupted the master of the *Albatross*, who a moment before had started to his feet; “but can anyone tell me anything about that steam-yacht yonder? I ask because I saw a party put off to her a while ago, of which I think Daniel Kirby was one; and now, you see, she is getting under way.”

By this time all were on their feet, gazing at the yacht; and Mr. Davis said:

“That is the *Unrest*, young Lord Clairmont’s yacht; he has been cruising among these islands for six months or more. He is a strange sort of fellow, and I heard only the other day that he had made up his mind to sell his yacht and settle on Tutuila, where he has bought immense tracts of land.”

“Sell his yacht, eh? Hum!” and turning abruptly, Captain Bradford cast a glance at the *Rover*.

To all appearances there was not a single soul on board the schooner.

“Deserted!” he muttered. “That’s strange,” and then a thought struck him.

“Morris, you have seen Lord Clairmont?”

“Yes,” answered Mr. Davis; “many times.”

“What sort of a looking man is he?”

Mr. Davis described his lordship.

“That’s the man Tom Grayson saw with the British consul and Daniel Kirby; they entered the consulate together.”

“And what do you infer from that?” asked Eugene, eagerly.

"What can I infer but that the *Unrest* is now the property of Lyman Pierpont, or George Thompson, as he calls himself? Look at the deserted *Rover* lying there, and then at the yacht steaming away with Kirby, and no doubt the schooner's crew on board, and remember that the sloop has not yet returned, though she is certainly over-due."

"That's it! You've hit it, Captain. Uncle Lyman has given us the slip again, and now is off, perhaps to the other side of the Pacific, in a steamer as swift, no doubt, as our own."

"What had we better do?" asked Professor Singleton, nervously.

"Go ashore at once, and learn all we can from the British consul."

"And that will be precious little, I'm thinking," muttered Eugene.

"Leave it to me," said Mr. Davis, confidently. "I know a way to manage our English friend; and whatever the facts in the case may be, within an hour you shall be in possession of them. Better all go to my house, and wait for me there."

This course was decided upon; and the whole party proceeded to the shore, Mr. Davis leaving them at the landing.

An hour later he joined them at his residence, and after some hesitation, informed them that Captain Bradford's suspicions were correct. Daniel Kirby had bought the *Unrest* for "George Thompson," and sold the *Rover* to Goddefray & Co., the great Hamburg and Samoa merchants. The yacht had gone to Pago-Pago, to take her new owner aboard, and Lord Clairmont had taken passage in her.

"We must start for Pago-Pago at once," exclaimed Captain Bradford, in a decided tone.

"They'll be away before you can get there," reasoned his friend.

"I fear you are right. Where are they bound, then — did you learn?"

"To the Tonga and Fiji Islands."

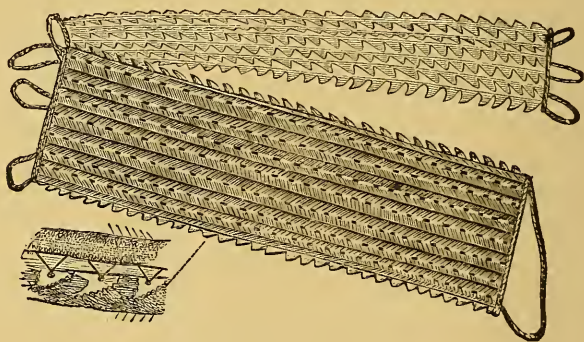
"You are sure?"

"Quite sure."

"Then we must be off."

"Yes; your best course will be to go directly to Tonga, and if you should miss him there, try Vavao before you go to the Fiji group."

"We will do so." And after once more partaking of Mrs. Davis's hospitality, the whole party proceeded to the landing, where the last farewells were spoken, when those belonging to the *Albatross*, a little sad and dispirited, were pulled aboard.



SHARK-TOOTH GAUNTLET.

While the anchors were being raised, the Professor and the two brothers stood on the quarter-deck, gazing toward the shore, where their friends still lingered.

"I had hoped to see more of these beautiful islands," said Eugene, presently; "and we must surely return to them at no distant day. I want, too, to see and learn more of their wonderful mats and ancient weapons. Did you ever hear of their shark's-tooth gauntlets, Professor?"

"I don't know that I have," was the reply.

“The mode of fighting with them was this,” said Eugene; “the teeth were fixed in three rows on the palm and fingers of a species of glove or gauntlet made of the plaited bark of the *heábo*, and both hands being armed in this manner, every man endeavored to come to close quarters with his antagonist, and to tear open his bowels with these horrible weapons. Fearful, wasn’t it?”

“Fearful, indeed!”

“Look! look!” exclaimed Chester, suddenly; “it’s our last chance to wave our friends a farewell. Quick! They see us.”

“Yes,” cried Eugene, as he waved his handkerchief toward the shore, “farewell to Samoa!”



IDOL.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

TONGA — FIJI ISLANDS.

ON leaving the harbor of Apia, the course of the *Albatross* was laid for the island of Tonga, the most important in the three clusters which make up the group known as the Tonga or Friendly Islands.

For the remainder of the day, the three passengers, and, indeed, the Captain and his mates, were quite dull and dispirited. Their repeated disappointments were beginning to tell upon them. But the next morning they were all a little more cheerful, and Eugene, seeing that they must visit another group of islands, resolved to know as much as possible about them; so, after they had finished their breakfast, and had once more gathered on the quarter-deck, he turned to Professor Singleton, who, thanks to his brother professor and Captain Watson, had had quite a rest of late, and asked:

“Who discovered the Tonga Islands, Professor?”

“They were discovered by the Dutch navigator, Abel Tasman, in 1643, and were visited and described in 1773 and 1777 by Captain Cook, who gave them the name of Friendly from the apparently hospitable reception he met with from the inhabitants,” was the answer.

“Ah! but that was a great mistake on the part of Cook,” exclaimed Chester. “Mariner, who afterwards spent some years on the islands, says they were only deterred by fear from attacking the great discoverer and seizing his ships, as they did the *Port au Prince* a little later.”

“Quite true,” assented the Professor; “and in point
(580)

of fact the character of the natives is not a whit better than that of the other Polynesians."

"The group is quite a large one, is it not?" asked Eugene.

"It consists of about thirty-two greater and one hundred and fifty smaller islands, about thirty of which are inhabited," was the answer.

"What is the population?" asked Mr. Morgan.

"Including whites and Fiji Islanders, not far from 45,000, or possibly 50,000."

"The islands are of coral formation, if I remember rightly," said Chester.

"They are mostly of coral," explained the Professor, "and are surrounded by dangerous coral reefs. A few, however, are of volcanic origin, and in Tofooa there is a small but active volcano."

"Chester tells me the group is divided into three clusters," observed Eugene.

"Yes; there are three distinct clusters," assented the Professor, "namely: the Tonga at the south, the Hapai in the center, and the Vavao at the north or northwest."

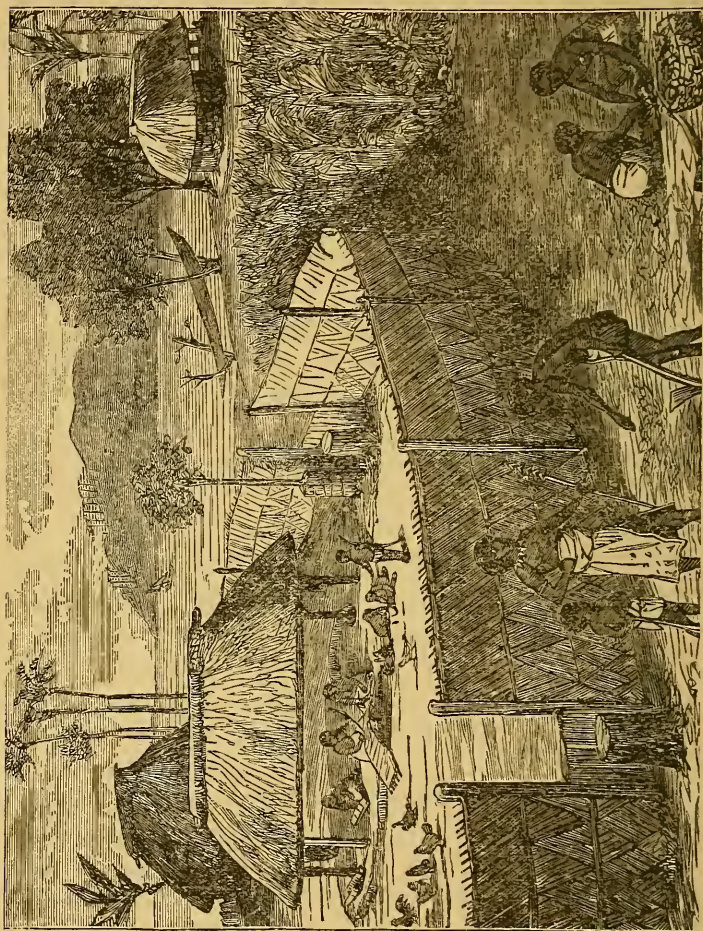
"Mariner says the climate is very agreeable," remarked Chester.

"It is healthy, but humid; much rain falls, and—a very important matter—none of the islands are destitute of fresh water."

"I judge the natives are inclined to be industrious, from what I have seen of them," said Captain Bradford.

"There can be little doubt of that," returned the Professor. "The better class own extensive plantations, which they keep in a high state of cultivation, and all the natives raise bananas, yams, sweet potatoes, bread-fruit, sugar-cane, shaddock, limes, cocoanuts, and the *ti*. The pandanus, of which they make their mats, is one of their most valued trees, and is well cared for; a little

corn is grown, and they have the papaw apple and even the watermelon."



INCLOSURE AND PLANTATION, TONGA.

"You forget the sweet orange, which has been successfully introduced by the missionaries from Tahiti," suggested the Captain.

"True ; but many other imported fruits and vegetable seeds have failed."

"The flora very much resembles that of the Fiji group, does it not ?" asked Chester.

"It is almost the same."

"Are there any native animals ?" asked Eugene.

"The hog, dog, and rat are the only native quadrupeds," was the reply.

"Why do some writers call the island to which we are bound Tongataboo ?" asked Eugene.

"Because they know no better, I strongly suspect," said the Captain. "For there's just as much sense and propriety in calling our country Freeamerica, or England Merryengland, as to call that island Tongataboo. The fact is, years ago it exercised a sort of religious supremacy over the other islands, and was often spoken of as the Sacred (taboo) Isle, or Tonga the sacred (Tongataboo) ; but the adjective was never any part of the name."

"That's about what Mariner says," observed Chester.

"Is it ?" laughed the Captain. "Well, I'm glad to be supported by such good authority."

"How large is the island of Tonga ?" asked Eugene.

"It is about twenty miles long and a little more than twelve broad ; it is low and level, of coral formation, and rises nowhere more than sixty odd feet above the sea."

"It was on this island, at the port of Bea, that Captain Croker, of the British sloop-of-war *Favorite*, was defeated in 1840 by the pagan natives," observed Chester.

"Yes," assented the Professor ; "and in the engagement, which was undertaken in behalf of the Christian missionaries and their native partisans, Croker and many of his officers and men were slain."

"Do the islands have a large trade ?" asked Eugene.

"I am inclined to think not," answered the Professor.

"The only important article of export that I am aware of," said the Captain, "is cocoanut-oil."

"Have they any good harbors?"



DAUGHTER OF A CHIEF.

"Port Refuge in Vavao is the best, and is much frequented by American and British vessels, especially whalers."

"I judge from our several conversations," said Eugene, "that the Tongese contrast favorably with their neighbors, the Fijians, both in appearance and disposition."

"They are a different people altogether," asserted the Professor; "the Fijians belonging to the Papuan race, whereas the Tongese or Tongans belong to the brown Polynesian race, which does not possess the very crisp hair and rough skin of the Papuans; and, as a rule, is much lighter in skin, the complexions being often, as we know, as white as that of many Europeans. They are, on the whole, a singularly handsome people, the beauty not being limited to the men, as is the case in so many groups, but possessed equally, if not to a superior degree, by the women."

"That is true," agreed the Captain. "I remember in particular the daughter of a Tongan chief, who, notwithstanding her slightly tinted skin, would be called beautiful anywhere."

"They must take good care of their women, then," said Eugene.

"They do, indeed," returned the Captain, "and treat them with every consideration. The consequence of which is, the women possess a gentle freedom of demeanor and grace of form which are never found among those people where women are merely the drudges of the men. Even so long ago as 1777, Captain Cook noticed that the women of this group were much more delicately formed than the men, that they were beautifully proportioned, and that the hands were so small and soft that they would compare favorably with the finest examples in Europe and America. Hard and constant labor, such as is usually the lot of savage women, deteriorates the form greatly, and the Tongans seem to have found out the fact ages ago. Their women certainly do work, but they are not condemned to do it all, the men taking the

hard labor on themselves, and leaving the women the lighter tasks, such as beating guatoo, plaiting baskets, making dishes, and the like. At the great dances, the women are not only allowed to be present, but assist in them, taking as important a share as the men, and infusing into the dance a really cultivated grace which would not exist without them."

"Are the women usually lighter in complexion than the men?"

"The better class of women are; and for the reason that they take more care of themselves than the men. Though all classes live for the most part in the open air, the wives and daughters of powerful and wealthy men are careful not to expose themselves to the sun more than is absolutely necessary, so that many of them, instead of being brown, are of a clear olive tint, the effect of which is singularly beautiful when contrasted with their dark, clustering hair, their guatoo garments, and the leaves and flowers with which they adorn themselves, changing them several times daily."

"Are their houses well constructed?" asked Eugene.

"Yes; they are exceedingly well constructed, and are divided into two and sometimes three compartments by cocoanut-leaves. The inmates sit on the carefully swept floor, with a roll of narrow matting surrounding them, and there are few other articles of furniture excepting the four-legged wooden pillow. Within doors the children never wear any clothing until they are two years old; but when they go out, their parents always wrap around them a piece of guatoo or tappa. The natives are exceedingly fastidious about their dress, criticising every fold with minute care, and spending considerable time in arranging them. Even when bathing, they always array themselves in a slight dress made for such occasions, going aside for the purpose of exchanging the

usual guatoo for an apron of leaves or matting. So disrespectful is utter nudity considered among the Tongans, that if a man is obliged to undress near the spot



INTERIOR OF A DWELLING, TONGA.

where a chief is buried, the leaf apron is worn while the dress is changed."

"The islands are all under one government, are they not?" asked Mr. Morgan.

"At the present time they are," replied the Professor; "formerly, however, they were governed by several independent chiefs. The northern and middle groups first united and formed the State of Vavao, under King George, of whom, of course, you have all heard; and some years later he became the ruler of all the islands."

"In Mariner's time, when the first Finow was king," observed Chester, "the natives were devoted to war. I suppose that is no longer true?"

"It is not," returned the Professor. "At the time you speak of, the natives were pagans; they offered human sacrifices, and cut off their little fingers and toes as propitiatory offerings to their gods; and the women went nearly naked. No wonder they knew no better than to love war."

"Their mythology was like that of the other Polyynesians—a low type of Polytheism, was it not?" asked Eugene.

"Yes; in that respect they were much like their neighbors. The spirits of all chiefs, they said, went to Bolotoo or Bulotu, which was a beautiful island not far distant, but just where they did not know. The souls of poor people remained in this world, to feed upon ants and lizards."

"The people are now nearly all Christian, are they not?" asked Chester.

"Yes; the missionaries have done a good work in the islands, and they are no longer what they were a little more than half a century ago. Indeed, the Tongans are well advanced. They have printing presses and schools. Most of the women can sew, and nearly every one can read and write both in their native tongue and English. Why, King George himself, who has already been mentioned, used to teach and preach almost every day."

"I saw it stated, some time since," remarked the Cap-

tain, "that the Catholics had obtained a pretty firm hold in the southern cluster."

"Yes," assented the Professor; "a number of Catholic missionaries came to the islands from France, and firmly established themselves in the Tongan cluster, where a large portion of the natives have joined the Catholic Church."

At this moment, with a hurried apology, Jasper Morgan called the Captain's attention to a black cloud which was just making its appearance on the southern horizon.

The Captain started to his feet, and after a hasty glance at the southern sky, exclaimed:

"We are going to have a storm, and if I am not greatly mistaken, it will be a serious one."

The Captain was right. The storm came up with fearful rapidity, and being dead ahead, the yacht could make little progress, and was tumbled and tossed about on the angry waves in a most disagreeable manner.

Of course there was no further chance for conversation. The unhappy passengers had all they could do to keep from being thrown about the cabin, whither they had retreated, and sat holding on to the table, or clinging to the sides of the stationary sofas, in silent misery.

For two days the storm continued to rage, and then subsided as rapidly as it had arisen. The yacht, on the whole, had suffered very little; but her progress had been greatly retarded, and this annoyed the Captain considerably.

"But I don't see why it should fret you so," said Eugene, when he saw how the Captain was affected. "Surely, it will have delayed the *Unrest* as much as it has ourselves."

"If you could only insure that statement as a fact I should be quite satisfied," returned the Captain.

"But isn't it a fact?" demanded Eugene.

"It may be. The chances, however, are that it is not. The *Unrest*, no doubt, was at some distance to the eastward of us, and ten to one the storm never reached her. It is simply wonderful how confined in breadth some of these storms are. They move in a certain direction, as, for instance, from south to north, like a mighty river, only with a hundred times the velocity."

"Hum! Then the *Unrest* may have reached Tonga and left again before we can get there."

"That's exactly what I fear."

"Well, then, our stay at that island will be short."

"As short as I can possibly make it," and the Captain hurried forward.

In due time the island was reached, and the *Albatross* came to anchor in a pleasant harbor. It did not take them long after they had landed to find out that the *Unrest* had arrived two days before, and that she had remained in port less than twenty-four hours. It was thought by their informant that she had gone to Lefooga, or Levuga, the largest of the Hapai cluster; but, he said, she might have gone directly to Vavao.

With as little delay as possible the *Albatross* was got under way for Vavao, the Captain thinking that, even if the *Unrest* called at Lefooga, he would stand a better chance to meet her at Port Refuge.

The brothers were disappointed in not being able to visit certain interesting localities on Tonga. Eugene, especially, was anxious to see a particular cromlech,—a wonderful stone monument consisting of two perpendicular rectangular blocks of stone, across which is a large slab holding an immense bowl, supposed to have been used in ancient kava ceremonies; but he was somewhat consoled when he learned that the king was on a visit to Vavao, and that doubtless he would have an opportunity to meet him there.

The distance from Tonga to Vavao is not very great, and, after a pleasant sail of several hours, during which they saw many of the southern islands of the Hapai cluster, they came in sight of their destination.

"What a lovely spot!" exclaimed Eugene, as the Captain pointed it out to him.

"Ah! I fancy you would not mind spending a few days there?"

"Mind it!" cried the young man. "I should like it of all things. Is it really Vavao?"

"Yes, and we shall come to anchor in Port Refuge within half an hour or so."

Rapidly they drew nearer, passing several lovely isles and islets, and at last entered the port.

Almost before the anchors were down, the yacht was fairly surrounded by canoes, and, in a marvelously short time, the decks were crowded with natives, male and female.

They were all neatly and modestly dressed, and appeared to be the best-natured people in the world. One, a distinguished looking individual, in very good English announced himself a chief, and stated that the king, being at the island and close at hand, sent word that he would be most happy to receive the Captain at his house on shore, and whoever he might see fit to bring with him.

"Just the thing for us!" exclaimed Captain Bradford to his friends. Then turning to the chief: "We will go with you as soon as you have done us the honor of partaking of a slight luncheon in the saloon."

The chief was pleased by the attention, and having indicated some half a dozen other persons of importance, they were included in the invitation, and all descended to the saloon.

Being seated at the table, and an opportunity offering, the Captain asked if there had been any other yacht in

port within the last twenty-four hours or so. There had not, but one was reported among the Hapai Islands, and was expected late that evening or some time the next day ; indeed, they had supposed this to be the same yacht.

So, in all human probability, the *Unrest* was no more than forty or fifty miles away, and they could afford to wait for her.

Luncheon being finished, the Captain made each of his guests a present, then, having selected gifts for the king and queen, he signified his readiness to start for the shore.

It was decided that they should go in two of the yacht's boats, and into these the chief and the matabooles preceded them.

The shore where the village was situated was something more than half a mile distant, but they reached it in a short time, and found the beach crowded with eager islanders. As they landed, their new friend, the chief, whose name was Talo, ordered the crowd to fall back, and immediately a path was opened, through which they passed to the king's house.

On the way Talo told them — what, indeed, they already knew — that the king usually made the island of Tonga his residence ; “ but,” he said, “ as often as once or twice a year he pays a visit to all the important islands of the three clusters which make up his little kingdom ; and so it happens that he is at Vavao now.”

By this time they had reached and entered the house, where they were warmly received by his tawny majesty.

They spent an hour or so quite pleasantly, and as they were about to withdraw the king said :

“ To-morrow, with a party of my chiefs and friends, I propose to pay a visit to the neighboring island of Hoonga, to enjoy a game of rat-shooting — something my ancestors were very fond of, and I should be pleased to have you all accompany me.”

Eugene cast an eager glance at the Captain, who, seeing and understanding it, made haste to reply to the king.

"I fear," he said, "it will be impossible for us all to accept your majesty's kind invitation, as imperative duties are likely to detain one or more of us on board the yacht; but the others will be delighted to accompany you."

The king graciously said he could not expect any of them to neglect their duties, but that he would be pleased to see as many of the party as could make it convenient to join in the sports. And with this understanding, they withdrew.

The next morning, as nothing had been seen of the *Unrest*, it was decided that the brothers should accompany the king; and so they were pulled ashore at an early hour, to be in time to join the hunting party, and soon afterwards stepped into the royal canoe.

After a pleasant sail they landed on an island as beautiful, but by no means as large as the one they had left, and preparations were at once made for the morning's sport.

As the hog, dog, and rat are the only native quadrupeds of these islands, rat-hunting is really the most exciting recreation the king and his chiefs can indulge in, and, as may readily be supposed, for ages they have made the most of it.

The attendants were ordered to procure and roast some cocoanut, which being done, and the king having informed them which way he intended to take, they proceeded along the road selected, chewing the roasted cocoanut very finely as they went, and blowing a little of it at a time out of their mouths with considerable force, but so as not to scatter the particles too much; for, as Talo told them, if they were widely distributed, the rats would not be tempted to stop and pick them up, and if the pieces

were too large, they would each run away with one, instead of stopping to eat their fill.

The bait was distributed on each side of the road, and the attendants proceeded till they reached a certain point agreed upon. Whenever they came to a cross-road they thrust a reed into the ground, as a taboo or mark of prohibition for any one to come farther in that direction and disturb the rats, while the king and his friends were enjoying their sport. And this taboo is always respected, even by the most powerful chiefs. If one should be passing, and see a reed stuck in the road, he would stop at some distance and sit down on the ground, out of respect for the king, or politeness to his fellow chiefs, and wait patiently till the shooting party had passed. A few years ago, a petty chief or one of the common people would not have dared to infringe upon the taboo, as it would have been at the risk of his life.

The attendants having arrived at the point where they were to stop, sat down to prepare kava, having previously given orders to the owners of the neighboring plantations to send the king a supply of refreshments, such as pork, fowls, yams, sweet potatoes, ripe bananas, and water-melons.

Meantime, the company having been divided into two parties, set out about a quarter of an hour after the attendants had commenced distributing the bait. But before starting they selected leaders, the king being chosen to head the first party, and Talo the other. Then the two parties were mixed in the following manner: the king having taken his place in the middle of the road, Talo designated one of his men, who instantly fell in behind his majesty. Then the king called one of his own party, who took his position behind this man; then came another of Talo's party, then one of the king's, and so on alternately. Thus the two parties were made up for the game.

The brothers noticed that certain rules were carefully observed throughout the morning. In the first place, no one attempted to shoot a rat in front of him except the person who happened, for the time being, to be first in the line; but any one shot at one that he happened to see, either abreast or behind him. As soon as one of the hunters had fired an arrow, whether he hit the object aimed at or not, he changed places with the man next behind him; so that, after a time, the last man, who naturally did not have as many opportunities to fire as the others, came to be first, and, on the other hand, the king, in his row, and Talo, in his, came to be last. Talo's party, having killed ten rats, won the game. If there are plenty of rats, they generally play several games.

As soon as they arrived at any of the cross roads, they pulled up the reeds placed as a taboo, that travelers coming afterwards might not be interrupted in their progress. When they arrived at the place where the attendants were waiting, they sat down and partook of what was prepared for them, the brothers enjoying it hugely—all but the kava, which, for obvious reasons, they could not touch.

While they were eating, Talo gave the brothers some further information with regard to the game.

"If," he said, "any one of either party should see a fair shot at a bird, he may take aim at it. If he kills it, it counts the same as a rat; but whether he hits it or not, if he ventures a shot, he changes place with the man behind him."

"I noticed," remarked Eugene, "that whenever a rat started to run, the man who was going to shoot at him cried out, '*Too!*'"

"Yes," said Talo, "in our language that means '*Stop!*' And generally, as you may also have noticed, it has the effect of making the rat stop."

"Yes," laughed Eugene, "I observed that, and then he would sit up, and appear too much frightened to attempt his escape."

"What long arrows you use," observed Chester.

"Yes," assented the chief, "for these games they are nearly six feet long, and, as you see, they are made of reed, headed with iron-wood. They are not feathered," he added, taking up one, "and their great length is requisite, that they may go straight enough to hit a small object; besides which, it is advantageous in taking aim through a thick bush."

"You don't have more than two or three apiece, I noticed," said Eugene.

"No; for as soon as a person has discharged one from his bow, it is immediately brought to him by one of the attendants who follow the party."

"The bows are also about six feet long, are they not?" asked Chester.

"Yes," was the reply; "and they are not quite as strong as ordinary bows, lest the difficulty of bending them should occasion a slight trembling of the hand, which would render the aim less certain."

"I see the rats have been saved," said Eugene. "Are they put to any use?"

"Ah!" laughed Talo. "You had better ask the attendants about that. I suppose they eat them; they either do so or sell them to the common people for food, but chiefs never make a meal of them, though, as they live chiefly upon such vegetable substances as sugar-cane, bread fruit, and cocoanut, I see no reason why we should not, if our taste should happen to run that way."

The party, having finished their lunch, directed their walk at random across the island, and came at length to a peculiar and now very famous cavern, situated on the western coast, the entrance to which is some feet beneath

the surface of the sea, even at low water, and was first discovered by a young chief, while diving after a turtle.

This really wonderful cavern is described by Lord Byron, in his poem entitled "The Island," and a fascinating legend attaches to it. Perhaps its nature will be better understood if we imagine a hollow rock rising sixty odd feet above the surface of the water, into the cavity of which there is no known entrance but one, and that on the side of the rock, several feet under the water which flows into it; and consequently the base of the cavern may be said to be the sea itself.

The king proposed that they should all enter the submarine cave, and, after some hesitation, Chester and Eugene consented. They took their places in a canoe, and were paddled out in front of the rock, where two upright sticks were pointed out to them as marking the entrance. Having jumped overboard, two natives seized each by the hand, and directed them to the entrance. They experienced some difficulty in getting through, but at last rose to the surface of the water in the cavern. The phosphorescent light caused by the movement of the water is very brilliant, and the roof and walls are indescribably grand in form and color. The brothers were charmed, delighted, and the half-hour they spent in that strange place was like a dream. But the worst part was to come: they were obliged to return to the outer world by the same way they had entered; and when at length they emerged from the water on the outside and were lifted into the canoe they were almost completely exhausted.

After this adventure the party returned to Vavao, and the brothers hastened on board the yacht. Captain Bradford and the Professor were on the quarter-deck conversing with a white man and a native chief.

"Ah!" exclaimed the Captain, as the brothers approached, "we were waiting for you."

"What! is there anything new?" asked Eugene eagerly, at the same time eying the white stranger with a curious glance.

"Yes," answered the Captain. "Your *ignis-fatuus* of an uncle has given us the slip again. He has gone to Viti Levu, the principal island of the Fiji group."

"How do you know?" demanded Eugene, quickly.

"These gentlemen told me," and the Captain indicated the white man and his tawny companion.

Eugene looked as though he would like a farther explanation; and in answer to the look the Captain said:

"This is Mr. Thomas Talbot of Viti Levu, and this the chief Lolo Hea, a native of Vavao, but residing at Viti Levu. They have been to the Hapai Islands on important business, and were anxious to return home by way of Vavoa. At Lefooga they saw the *Unrest*, and were told that she was coming here, and then would proceed to Fiji. As that would just suit them, they hastened aboard and solicited passage. 'George Thompson,' the captain and owner, informed them that he had been obliged to change his plans, and should not stop at Vavao, or any of the islands of this cluster, but proceed at once to Fiji, after which he would sail to the north."

"To the north!" exclaimed the brothers in a breath. "What does that mean?"

"It simply means he is going to Hawaii."

"Why, I thought he was going to settle in this or one of the neighboring groups," said Eugene.

"I think he is a man who is not of the same mind two days together," rejoined the Captain.

"It begins to look very much like it. But how did these men get here, if they did not come in the *Unrest*?"

"That's easily explained," said Mr. Talbot. "We came in that little trading sloop yonder, and made a mighty quick passage."

"And learning on shore that we were likely to be going to Fiji," added the Captain, "they came off to see me, and I have agreed to take them."

"And when do you sail, Captain?" asked Chester.

"Almost immediately," was the answer.

"Here comes the king and all his chiefs and matabooles to return our visit," exclaimed Eugene, suddenly.

"Then we must give them an hour, I suppose," said the Captain; "but after that we will be off."

"All right. I'm agreeable," returned Eugene.

The king and his friends came on board, and were received with due honor. They spent a very pleasant hour, and left the yacht with regret. Immediately after their departure the Captain gave the signal, and the *Albatross* steamed out of the harbor on her way to Fiji or the Viti Islands.

Naturally, it being a lovely day, or rather evening, for the day was well-nigh spent, the passengers established themselves on the quarter-deck; and here, when the yacht had been put upon her course, the Captain joined them.

"When shall we see the first islands of the Fijian group, Captain?" asked Eugene, before he had fairly taken his seat.

"By this time to-morrow," was the answer.

"There are a vast number of islands in the archipelago," observed Chester.

"More than two hundred and twenty-five," said Mr. Talbot, "of which number one hundred and forty are inhabited."

"Fiji is the name for the whole group, is it not?" asked Eugene.

"Not strictly speaking," was the reply; "though custom has made it so. Fiji is the name in the windward or northern portion, and Viti in the leeward or southern."

"You have lived on the islands for some time, have you not?" asked Captain Bradford.

"About eighteen years," answered Mr. Talbot.

"Ah! then you must know a great deal about them," exclaimed Eugene.

"Yes, perhaps as much as any white man in the group," said their new friend.

"Why, you were there before the islands were 'gobbled up' by the English."

"Gently, gently, my young friend. I am an Englishman myself, and, I can assure you, the annexation was the best thing in the world for Fiji."

"Ah! but would you say so if any other country had taken possession of the islands—the United States, for instance?"

"I would have thrown up both hands for joy if the United States had taken them. Why, young man, I was one of the seventy white residents who petitioned your government to assume the dominion or protectorate of the islands as long ago as 1869."

"And our government paid little or no attention to your petition, I suppose?"

"None worth mentioning."

"So then you turned to England?"

"Yes, for something had to be done. We were having some terrible experiences there. I could tell you things that would fairly make your hair stand on end, and matters were going from bad to worse."

"Was n't there whites enough to take control of affairs?"

"In 1871 the white population had so far increased that we thought we might venture to do something, and so established a regular government and adopted a constitution. But it didn't last: the constitution was abolished, and the government relapsed into barbarism. It was in 1874 that we tendered the sovereignty of Fiji to Great Britain, and later when she took possession."

"How many whites are there in the group at the present time?" asked Professor Singleton.

"Not less than 5,500," was the answer. "But that's nothing when compared with the natives, who number more than 250,000."

"The island to which we are bound is the largest, the Captain says," remarked Eugene.

"Yes, Viti Levu, or Naviti Levu, is the largest and most populous island of the group; it is more than ninety-seven miles from east to west, and about sixty-four miles from north to south."

"And it has at least one good harbor," suggested the Captain.

"Yes," assented Mr. Talbot, "Suva harbor is well sheltered, free from shoals, and easy of access."

"There are quite a number of large towns on the island, I am told," said the Professor.

"Yes; I can think of some eighteen or twenty, of which, perhaps, Namena is the largest."

"Which is the next most important island?" asked Chester.

"Vanua Levu, or Great Island, which is sixty-nine miles north of Bau, a small island just east of Viti Levu, from which distance in the group is always reckoned. It is one hundred and fifteen miles long, and, on an average, twenty-five miles broad. It has eleven or twelve large towns and a great many villages."

"It has a very fine bay, if I remember rightly," observed the Captain.

"Yes, indeed; the Bay of Nasavusavu is ten miles long and five miles broad, and is surrounded by very high and broken land, rising in many places into lofty mountain peaks. In fact, the island is mountainous, and can boast of several fine streams, one of which empties into the bay. The third island is Taviuni, often called Vuna or Somo-somo. It is about twenty-four miles long, and nine broad. The whole island is one vast mountain, 2,052 feet high, and very fertile."

"Is n't that the island where they catch the big eels?" asked Eugene.

"Yes. On the top of the mountain is a lake containing vast numbers of large eels, of which the natives are very fond."

"Are there many inhabitants on this island?" asked Chester.

"Yes, it is quite thickly settled, and has many large towns."

"Of course," continued Mr. Talbot, "it would take me all night to speak of all the islands; but I must not pass over one — Ovalau, a mountainous island, very beautiful, and of volcanic origin. It is about twenty miles from Bau, and is eight miles long, and about seven broad. There are many lovely valleys, but they extend only a short distance into the interior, and have little level ground. They are exceedingly fertile, with a deep, rich soil, and are all well cultivated. There are many harbors, all formed by the reefs, and on these harbors, of course, there are many towns and villages."

"Levuka is on this island, is it not?" asked Eugene.

"Yes; it is situated on the east side, and, as you doubtless know, is chiefly inhabited by foreigners. For years it has been the seat of the Fijian government, the residence of foreign consuls, the principal port, and has several large buildings, such as churches, hotels, and stores.

"But, after all, it is not the largest nor the most important town," observed the Captain.

"No; that distinction belongs to Bau, or Mbau," replied Mr. Talbot, "a place of some 1,500 inhabitants, on the small island of the same name, which is connected with the large island of Viti Levu by a stretch of coral, fordable at high water, and partially bare at low water."

"Lakemba, or Lakeba, is the principal island on the windward side of the group, is it not?" asked Mr. Morgan, who had joined the party on the quarter-deck.

"Yes," assented Mr. Talbot, "and its chief town is Tombou. It is about one hundred and sixty miles from Bau."

"Fiji is rich in vegetation and very fruitful, I believe," said the Professor, in a suggestive way.

"While there are a few not very productive islands," returned Mr. Talbot, "by far the greater number abound in forest trees and every species of fruit and vegetable. At present we are raising large quantities of cotton, and many of the whites, including myself, are planting coffee."

"Fish are plenty?"

"Yes, and of every variety, including sole, mullet, and a kind of sea worm, called *babolo*, found on some reefs toward the latter part of the year, and which is much esteemed by the natives as food. Oysters also are plenty. Then there are birds, more kinds than I can name, from the sacred coqe to the little *bici*."

"Now about the natives," said Eugene. "That's what will interest me most."

"Well, what shall I tell you about them?"

"Don't tell us anything we already know," said Chester, hastily; "for that would only be a waste of time."

"Now you have me," laughed Mr. Talbot, good-naturedly. "How can I tell what you know?"

"Well," said Chester, "we know that they belong to the Papuan race, that they are stout of limb and short of neck, that they are much darker than the Tongans, but lighter than Africans, that they dress their hair much after the style of the Papuans, and usually wear heavy beards and mustaches."

"Why, it looks as though there was very little left for me to tell," laughed the Englishman.

"Oh, yes, there is a great deal," said Eugene. "For instance: is it true that they do not practice tattooing?"

"They are not wholly free from the custom; but only

women are tattooed, and that on the parts of the body which are covered."

"How do they dress?"

"The men wear a sash of white, brown, or figured *masi*, using, generally, about six yards; but I have often seen wealthy persons with them more than a hundred yards long. The women wear a *liku*, or fringed band, made of some kind of grass, the bark of a tree, and the fiber of a wild root. The fringe is from three to ten inches deep."

"They have a great weakness for ear ornaments," suggested the Captain.

"Yes, they bore the lobe of the ear, and distend the hole, and wear enormous trinkets,"

"Both sexes paint their bodies?" said Mr. Morgan, inquiringly.

"Yes, generally using red paint. They also anoint themselves with oil."

"Girls marry at a very early age?" said the Captain.

"Yes, and often to old men. They have a great many very singular customs: for instance, brothers and sisters, first cousins, fathers and sons-in-law, mothers and daughters-in-law never speak to each other nor eat from the same dish; and, for that matter, husbands and wives do not eat together."

"They eat but two meals a day, I think," said the Captain.

"That is only the common people. The chiefs eat three, or even more meals."

"Is it true that no two persons ever drink from the same cup?" asked Eugene.

"It would be true if any one ever drank from a cup: but, because they will not drink after each other, they hold the vessel about ten inches above the mouth, and pour the stream down the throat."

"That's a little inconsistent," muttered the Captain; "for I have myself seen them eating with their fingers."

"Of course; and they would think it very uncleanly to use a knife or fork that some one might have used before them."

"They are a singular people; but the missionaries have done a great work among them of late," remarked the Professor.

"Indeed they have," rejoined Mr. Talbot, warmly. "Just think what they were only a few short years ago, and what they are to-day. Why, I can remember when they were a nation of cannibals, nothing more; but that's all changed now, and the missionaries deserve the credit of it."

"You must have seen Thakombau, the late king of Bau, quite often?"

"Oh, yes; and a more heartless old villain never lived. But the missionaries made quite another man of him before he died."

"So I should judge from an article I find in a late number of the *Missionary Herald*. Referring to the change in him and his people, the writer says: 'They have altogether ceased to be cruel. One's life is as safe in Fiji as it would be in any part of the world, and the kindly people care most thoughtfully for all who come among them. The missionaries who have labored there with such marvelous success have been English Wesleyans; and they have churches, with crowded congregations, on every island, and there is scarcely a house in which may not be heard daily morning and evening prayer in the family. There are 1,400 schools and 900 native preachers in Fiji. Old Thakombau, the once treacherous and bloodthirsty cannibal, died in 1884, a faithful, gentle, intelligent, and devoted Christian, who was greatly respected and loved by all who saw him. The lion had become the lamb.'"

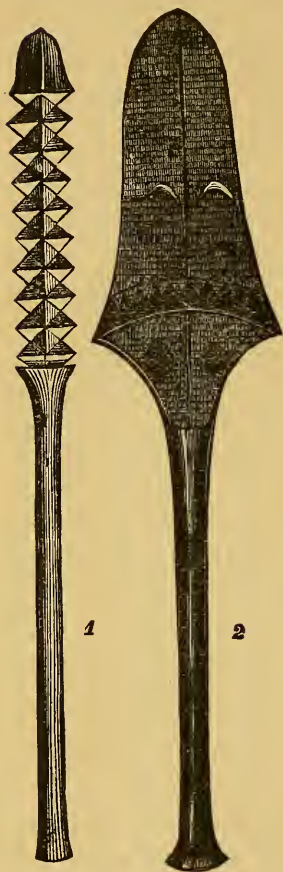
"All quite true," assented Mr. Talbot; "still, in the mountain fastnesses, there are many pagans left yet, who cling to their formidable weapons of war and ancient customs."

"What arms do these mountain savages chiefly use?" asked Eugene.

"Clubs, spears, battle-axes, the bow, the sling, the musket, and they even have a few rifles," was the answer.

"I have heard something about their clubs," said Eugene. "In most of them, I take it, is exhibited the fancifully artistic nature of the manufacturers."

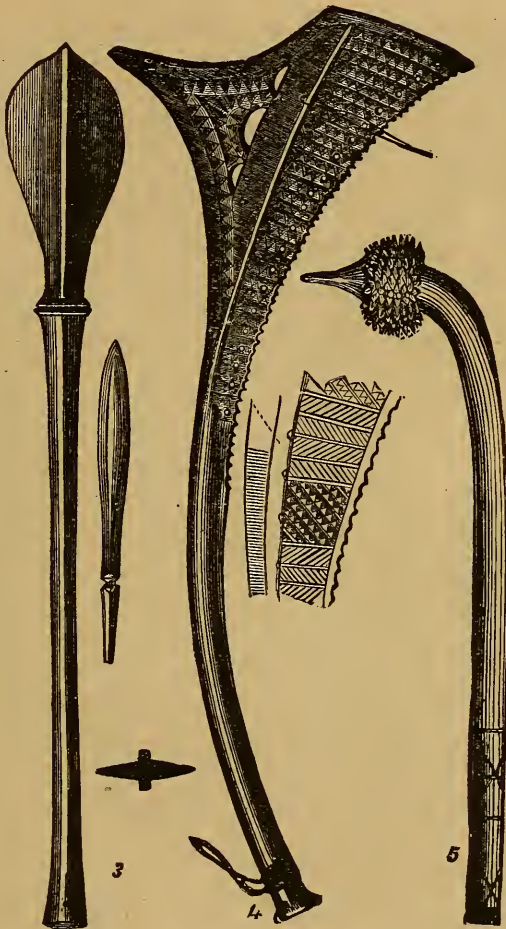
"Yes, upon his club the Fijian lavishes all the artistic power at his command, covering nearly the whole of it with the most intricate and delicately executed carvings. Some clubs are straight, like thick cudgels; others are curved. Those which are knobbed at the end have an infinite variety in the knob. Some are more or less flattened, while others are so flat and so broad that it is not easy at first sight to determine whether they are clubs or paddles. Some are so large that they require a strong



FIJIAN CLUBS.

man to wield them, while others are so short that they are kept stuck in the girdle, and are used as missiles. A pagan Fijian often has two or more of these short clubs with him."

"I suppose there are still some of their pagan temples to be seen?" said Chester inquiringly.



FIJIAN CLUBS.

"Yes, *burés*, or temples of the gods, are still to be met with. Formerly, there was at least one *buré* in every village, and in some villages there were several. They

were made of the same material as the houses, but with much more care. Instead of being merely set on the



A BURÉ, OR TEMPLE.

ground, they were placed on an eminence, sometimes only a slight one, and sometimes twenty feet or more in height. The natives used to think no labor too great for the deco-

ration of a *buré*, and it was in those buildings that their marvelous skill in plaiting sinnet was best shown. Every beam, post, and pillar was entirely covered with sinnet plaited into the most beautiful patterns, black and red being the favorite colors; and even the reeds which lined the window-frames and filled up the interstices between the pillars, were hidden in the plaited sinnet with which they were covered. So lavish were the natives of their work that they even made large plaited cords of sinnet, and hung them in festoons from the eaves."

"I certainly hope we shall have a chance to see one of their *burés*," said Eugene.

"You shall," rejoined Mr. Talbot, "for I will myself take you to one of them."

"It's a bargain," cried Eugene.

"The Fijians have a great weakness for speech-making, have they not?" asked Chester, presently.

"You may well call it a weakness," returned Mr. Talbot. "They seem, above all things, to like to hear themselves talk; and when they speak in council or before any great assembly, they always hold a curious article in their hand, which is called the orator's flapper. I have one at home, and it is well worth examining. The handle is carved into various patterns, and is terminated by a rude representation of a couple of human figures seated back to back. Sometimes the entire handle is covered with sinnet, plaited in the most delicate patterns, as only a Fijian can plait. The tuft at the end is formed of cocoanut fiber, which has first been soaked in water, next rolled round a small twig, and then dried. When it is unwound from the stick it has a crisp, wrinkled appearance, like the Fijians' hair, which I have no doubt it is intended to represent."

Eugene was about to ask another question, but the Captain intimated that the steward would probably be

glad to see them in the saloon below, as he remembered hearing the supper-bell some little time before. And so, leaving the subject of Fiji, they hastened to discuss the good things prepared for them by the yacht's "doctor."



ORATOR'S FLAPPER.

CHAPTER XXIX.

HAWAIIAN ISLANDS.

THE next day the passengers on board the yacht caught sight of the outlying isles of the Fiji group rather earlier than the Captain had promised they should. And from that time till they came to anchor in Suva harbor, there were always several to be seen on either hand.

On reaching port the Captain and his guests hastened ashore, although it was nearly night; and, while Mr. Talbot and Lolo Hea went to their own homes, the others proceeded to the residence of the American consul.

The *Unrest*, the consul informed them, had not arrived; and when they expressed their disappointment, he suggested that she might be at Bau. The suggestion appearing reasonable, they resolved to return to the yacht for the night, and if the *Unrest* was not in port in the morning, to seek her at Bau.

The morning came. They were on deck bright and early, but there was no *Unrest* in the harbor to gladden their eyes. The Captain said he would wait an hour for her, and that, meantime, they would breakfast. While they were at the table Mr. Talbot came aboard. He was already acquainted with the fact that the other yacht had not arrived at Suva, and approved of the plan of looking for her at Bau. He offered to accompany them there; and they accepted the offer with pleasure.

The *Albatross* was got under way almost immediately, and, a few hours later, was in the harbor of Bau. Noth-

ing had been seen of the *Unrest* there, and, after some hesitation, Captain Bradford determined to seek for her in every part of the group. Mr. Talbot remained with them, and the brothers found him a valuable companion whenever they had an opportunity to go ashore on the different islands. At length, when they had been cruising about the group for nearly a week, and had returned to Suva for the third time, they learned that the *Unrest* had been there for twenty-four hours, and then had sailed for Lahaina, the port of Maui, one of the Hawaiian Islands.

They hastened to the landing, where, with many expressions of regret, they parted with Mr. Talbot, and were pulled out to the yacht. A little later they were steaming toward the north at the rate of fifteen knots an hour.

That evening, when they were gathered in the saloon, Eugene took occasion to consult the chart. He saw that, on their long passage to Kalakaua's little kingdom, they would pass myriads of islands on either hand, some of which he felt quite well acquainted with, such as the Duke of York's and the Kingsmills, while of others, like Solitary, Arthur, and Palmyra, he knew little more than their names.

"Maui," he said, looking up, with his finger resting on the point toward which they were hastening, "is n't that the island where Speckles's great sugar plantation is situated?"

"Yes," answered the Professor, "and it is the largest plantation in the world, the area under cultivation being 10,000 acres, one-quarter of which is planted every year. About \$2,000,000 have already been expended on the 'plant.' The machinery, which was made in the United States, is of the best. The ditches which supply the water cost \$250,000, and one of them is twenty miles long."

"The plantation must give employment to a great many men," suggested Chester.

"Yes, more than 1,500 common laborers are employed, of which number 900 are Chinese. Then, to make up the complement, there are Japanese, Hawaiians, and other Polynesians, and natives of every nation in Europe and America."

"To support such a vast number they must produce an enormous quantity of sugar," said Chester.

"They grind up no less than 800 tons of cane per day, resulting in a daily yield of about eighty tons of sugar."

"Under favorable conditions, what ought the average yield to be per acre?" asked Eugene.

"Perhaps four tons would be a fair average, though there are small plantations that yield as high as eight tons per acre."

"It strikes me as a little singular that there should be such a wide representation of nationalities on these islands," said Eugene. "How do you account for it, Professor?"

"It is easily accounted for," was the answer. "The natives are not fond of work. As a rule, they labor only when they are driven to it, and that is n't often, as they subsist mainly on raw fish and *poi*, and the item of clothing is not very burdensome. Hence, as no dependence could be placed on them, and as it was necessary to have laborers for the plantations, the Chinese were called in; and, after 20,000 had landed, it was found that they were more of a curse than a blessing, and so further immigration from that quarter was checked. Then other nations were tried, one after another, until they came to Japan, where, I think, they have found just the help they want; and already 2,100 of the Japanese have made Hawaii their home."

"But, according to a newspaper item I have here," said Chester, "the children of the mikado are not regarded by the Hawaiians with quite the satisfaction your remark

would seem to imply. 'The authorities of Honolulu,' it says, 'are discussing a plan for importing Scotch crofters to work on the sugar plantations, the late experiment with Japanese having proved disastrous.'"

"I am surprised to hear that," said the Professor, thoughtfully, "for I had been led to expect much from the Japanese. Now, I don't know where the redemption of the little kingdom is to come from."

"I have seen many statements," said Chester, "purporting to give the population of the islands, but they differ so widely I don't know what to believe. Can you give us the correct figures, Professor?"

"On the nineteenth day of last August," replied the Professor, "the secretary of state received an official copy of the last census of the Hawaiian Islands, taken during the latter part of the preceding December, which makes the total population of the islands 84,409. Of this number 19,818 are Chinese, 9,000 Portuguese, and 2,068 Japanese."

"According to that and other published statements, I should judge the foreigners must outnumber the natives by this time."

"The foreigners and half-breeds together outnumber the natives, without doubt."

"Are there many half-breeds?"

"Several thousands."

"I have always heard the natives spoken of as a good-looking people," said Eugene.

"The men, as a rule, are tall, active, and powerful, and, in color, are of an olive brown, the precise depth of tint varying much according to the exposure to the sun, so that the skins of the upper class are much lighter than those of the common people. The hair is jet black, sometimes quite straight, and sometimes wavy. The face is usually wide, and is a very handsome one, the only

HAWAIIAN ISLAND WOMEN.



fault being a tendency to width across the nostrils. Of course, they have adopted the dress of the foreigners, though, in certain localities, they still, at times, wear the maro.

"The women, when young, are exceedingly beautiful, their features having a peculiar charm of their own, and their forms being like those of the ancient Grecian statues. Moreover, they retain their good looks longer than is usual among Polynesians; but, like the other sex, they generally attain to great size in their latter years, those of the upper class being remarkable for their enormous corpulence. This development is probably owing to the great quantity of *poi* which they are continually eating."

"Don't let us get away from their youth and beauty, if you please," said Eugene, hastily. "Just hear what the 'Haöle' says of one of them."

"We are quite ready to listen to the words of the '*foreigner*'" smiled the Professor. "What does he say of the fair maids of Hawaii?"

"On leaving the shore-road to ascend the mountains for Halawa," he says, "I met just such a specimen as has often driven men mad, and whose possession has, many a time, paved the way to the subversion of empire on the part of monarchs. She was rather above the medium size of American women. Her finely chiseled chin, nose, and forehead were singularly Grecian. Her beautifully moulded neck and shoulders looked as though they might have been borrowed from Juno. The development of her entire form was as perfect as nature could make it. She was arrayed in a single loose robe, beneath which a pretty little nude foot was just peeping out. Her hair and eyebrows were as glossy as a raven's wing. Around her head was carelessly twined a wreath of the beautiful native *ohelo* flowers (*Gualtheria penduliflorum*). Her lips seemed fragrant with the odor of countless and untiring

kisses. Her complexion was much fairer than the fairest of her countrywomen, and I was forced into the conclusion that she was the off-shoot of some white father who had trampled on the seventh precept in the Decalogue, or taken to his embrace, by the marriage relation, some good-looking Hawaiian woman. But her eyes! I never shall forget those eyes! They retained something that spoke of an affection so deep, a spiritual existence so intense, a dreamy enchantment so inexpressibly beautiful, that they reminded one of the beautiful Greek girl, Myrrha, in Byron's tragedy of "Sardanapalus," whose love clung to the old monarch when the flame of the funeral pile formed their winding-sheet.

"In no former period of my life had I ever raised my hat in the presence of beauty; but at this moment, and in such a presence, I *took it off*. I was entirely fascinated, charmed, spell-bound now. I stopped my horse; and there I sat to take a fuller glance at the fair reality. And the girl stopped, and returned the glance, while a smile parted her lips, and partially revealed a set of teeth as white as snow, and of matchless perfection. I felt that smile to be an unsafe atmosphere for the nerves of a bachelor; so I bowed, replaced my hat, and passed on my way, feeling fully assured that nothing but the chisel of Praxiteles could have copied her exquisite charms. And as I gently moved past her, she exclaimed, in the vocabulary of her country, "Love to you." There, what do you think of that for a pen picture?"

"Rather overdrawn, I fear," smiled the Captain, skeptically.

"And you have disappointed us, too," said Chester. "I thought we were to hear about a full-blooded Hawaiian girl; but it seems this one was a half-breed."

"Pshaw!" exclaimed Eugene, impatiently, "there was no good reason for the surmise that the girl who im-

pressed him so deeply was a half-breed ; because, as the Professor has already told us, and, for that matter, as we know well enough from our own observation, the natives of the better class are much fairer than those of lower rank, and are scarcely so dark as the white people of our southern States."

"Well, we'll agree that she was a full-blooded native. And now, Professor, about their dress."

"The dress of the Hawaiian women," said the Professor, "is very similar to that of the Tahitians, though, in some districts, it is more like that of the Tongans, when it consists essentially of a wrapper of bark cloth passing round the waist and falling below the knees. It is often arranged so that the end may be thrown over the shoulders, and many of the better class of women have a separate piece of cloth which is used as a mantle. When young, as in the Tonga and other groups, they wear no clothing at all."

"Are they fond of ornaments?"

"Yes, though they never perforate their ears, nor even think of wearing trinkets in them. They have a sort of necklace made of black cord, doubled many times, and supporting some trifle made of wood, shell, or bone. They also wear necklaces of small shells strung together, and very pretty ones made of dried flowers. Bracelets, too, of various kinds, are highly valued by them, and are worn with great satisfaction."

"They are fond of pets, of course?" suggested Eugene.

"Yes, like many of the other Polynesians, they have an absurd liking for pigs and dogs, carrying them about and feeding them when young, as if they were children. Even when the animals have attained their full growth, they are petted to a wonderful degree. Eugene's friend, the 'Haölä,' gives an amusing example of the extreme tenderness with which the Hawaiian girls regard these

animals. He was making an excursion through one of the islands, when he observed a group of girls sitting in the shade of a pandanus tree, surrounding something in which they seemed greatly interested. On drawing near, he found that the object of their attention was an enormous hog. The girls were taking it to market, a task which usually devolves upon them, and had to drive the animal for a considerable distance over lofty mountains, an undertaking which could not occupy them less than thirty-six hours. To produce the hog in good condition was evidently their principal object, and they would therefore hurry it as little as possible, coax it along, rather than drive it, by day, and sleep by its side at night. It so happened that the day was an extremely warm one, and the hog, which was in very good condition, was oppressed with its own fat, with the heat and the fatigue of the journey. Accordingly, the girls had led their charge to a shady spot, taken off their own garments, soaked them in water, and spread them over the panting animal, which uttered occasional grunts of satisfaction at the coolness caused by the wet clothes, and the continual fanning which the girls kept up with broad leaves."

"The women are industrious and hospitable, I have heard," remarked Chester.

"Yes, they do their share of the work, and are kind to strangers. The cooking, for instance, is entirely their business, and they are as great adepts at procuring as at cooking food. For example, if a stranger should call at the house of a native, the wife is sure to come out, pass her hand over him, and inquire whether he is hungry. Should he reply in the affirmative, she, or perhaps her daughter, runs out to one of the fish-ponds, launches a small canoc, and, in a very short space of time, has caught some fish, broiled them, cooked some taro, and laid them on plantain leaves before the guest."

"I have read of their fish-ponds," said Chester.

"They are very common in Hawaii," returned the Pro-



HAWAIIAN GIRLS AND FIG.

fessor, "and are mostly made by the women, but they are usually stocked by the men."

“You have mentioned *poi* several times,” said Eugene, “and I know it is a sort of porridge; but what is it made of?”

“It is made of a root called *kalo*, of which there are several species; but I cannot fully answer your question better than in the words of Cheever. ‘The natives,’ he says; ‘do not allow the name of *ai*, or food, to anything but *kalo*, of which they are extravagantly fond. This root is the *arum esculentum* of botanists, or the plant commonly known as the wild Indian turnip. As found and cultivated at the Hawaiian Islands, it is highly nutritious, mealy, and wholesome. It is of two kinds, the wet and dry *kalo*, the former grown always under water, which, when there is a brook, is let into a series of square beds or plats, sunk two or four feet below their borders, and let out again at one corner, when it has risen so as to cover all the plants, thus keeping a run of water through all the patches. It is estimated that forty square feet so cultivated will support a man. The root is eleven months gaining its full size. The natives then pull it, cut off the tops, and reserve them for planting, and bake the root in stone ovens made in the ground. They then peel it with a shell, and pound it with a stone pestle in large, flat, wooden trays, that may correspond to the kneading-troughs of the ancient Israelites as an article of household furniture.

“‘If it is to be kept for some time or carried away, it is then done up very neatly in bundles of forty and fifty pounds, made of the long leaves of a species of the aloe, and called *holoai*. If to be immediately used for food, it is mixed with a little water in a calabash, or large gourd, from the size of a bushel to that of a peck, and set away to ferment. By that process it becomes a slightly acid and pasty food, of a bluish white color, called *poi*, which no Hawaiian would exchange for the best turtle soup or

macaroni. You will see a party squatting around a calabash, and dipping successively their forefingers into the pasty mass, and then, with certain dexterous manœuvres, which a Hawaiian only knows, bring the poi-laden finger to a junction with the lips, with a smack of hearty satisfaction, such as no gourmand or toper could equal after a dram of Rhenish or best Madeira.' " *

"Do foreigners make use of the root?" asked Chester.

"Yes, they boil or bake it, like a potato."

"Well, for my part, I think I'd like to sit in a circle round a porridge-pot, with half a dozen pretty Hawaiian girls for companions," mused Eugene.

"Does n't Cheever rather intimate that beauty of form and feature, as well as high physical health, among the Hawaiians, is a thing of the past?" asked the Captain.

"I think I remember the passage you refer to," replied the Professor. "He says, 'The human constitution, it is evident, had attained to great perfection in the Sandwich Islands, and, their barbarism and sensuality to the contrary, notwithstanding, there was high physical health and beauty before it was poisoned and marred by the mixture of abandoned foreigners, and the fresh provocatives to profligacy thereby given. The reverse is now painfully true, for disease is rife, and there is evidence of fatal, we fear irremediable, detriment having been done to the native constitution. Still,' he adds, 'the physical aspect of Hawaiians, as a race, is pleasing.'"

"You see, Eugene," said the Captain, in an admonitory tone "you must not set your expectations too high. The Hawaiian ladies are rather dull, at the best, and I fear it will require the vivid imagination of a 'Haöle' to find a beauty such as he describes."

"*The United Service* does n't agree with you at all,"

* See illustration, "Hawaiian Island Women," page 615.

observed Chester, quietly. "In a recent number, a writer says :

" 'The Hawaiian lady, in her loose, long gown (*holaku*), is a voluptuous, good-humored, merry-making creature, of a fascinating figure, and longing, languishing, admiration-seeking, yet demure cast of face, with enviable advantages in the line of lips, teeth, eyes, hair, form, and color; for the chestnut skin, with crimson lustre of cheek, is by no means unbecoming or unattractive. She has the ability and inclination, as well as her ruder companion, of desecrating the laughable, ludicrous side of a subject, cracking a sly joke thereat, at the cost of creating an enemy of her own sex and a different race thereby. With Mongolian arrow she will hit the queer Caucasian. She must let fly that little pheasant-feathered shaft, not lacking in keen satire and mischievous point, to the conscious chagrin and furious indignation of her invitingly vulnerable foreign sister (*Haōlé*), who shrewdly suspects that the other is entirely too agreeable in the sight of the staring gentleman who accompanies her on her curious or charitable tour of island inspection. European education has greatly improved and instructed the gentler sex of Hawaii, no doubt, but it must be admitted that it has signally failed to curb the exuberance of their spirits, to tame the impetuosity of their sentiment, or to convert them into straight-laced models of propriety, they whose natures are as boisterous as the bounding billows of their sea-swept reefs. The enjoyment of fun and frolic is essential to their happiness, for they have a genuine love of the bright side of life.' "

"That sounds well," exclaimed Eugene, "and I am in favor of giving the writer a vote of thanks."

"Whatever the natives are to-day," said Chester, "I suppose there is no doubt that at one time they were a superior people. I wish it were possible to know their history."

"I fear it is not possible," rejoined the Professor; "but we can get a hint of it in their ancient weapons, tools, and articles of dress. Some of their weapons you may have seen in the collection of the Historical Society at New Haven; but an article which to me has been a source of much speculation is the head-dress of the chiefs. It is of so graceful and classical a form as absolutely to startle the spectator. It is a helmet made of wicker-work and covered with feathers, the shape being exactly that of the ancient Grecian

helmet, even to the elevated crest which runs over the top. It was not intended as a protection for the head, the material being too fragile for such a purpose, but simply as a mark of rank and wealth. Usually they were covered with scarlet and yellow feathers, disposed in bold bands or belts, and the wealth of the



HELMET.

wearer might be known by the proportion which the yellow and scarlet feathers bore to each other."

"I hope we shall have a chance to see one of those helmets and many other curiosities," said Chester.

"There's one thing I look forward to with a great deal of interest," observed Eugene, after a moment's pause, "and that is the sight of a volcano in action."

"You are thinking of Kilauea, I suppose?" said his brother.

"Of course," was the reply.

"Then I fear you will be disappointed."

"What do you mean?" asked Eugene, quickly.

"Kilauea has become extinct."

"I don't believe it. The thing's impossible."

"Read that, then. I clipped it from a newspaper the consul at Fiji gave me."

Eugene took the clipping, and read:

"Recent advices from the Hawaiian Islands to the effect that there was no more fire in the crater of Kilauea, if true, means that the largest active volcano on the planet has been snuffed out. The new lake of molten lava of Hale-mau-mau, which is mentioned as having disappeared, has not been in existence many years, and the period of volcanic activity and earthquakes which accompanied its formation immediately preceded the last great eruption from the neighboring crater on the summit of Mauna Loa in November of 1880.

"The island of Hawaii, which is the southmost of the Hawaiian group, is in the form of two great twin peaks, Mauna Loa and Mauna Kea, each of which rises to an elevation of nearly 14,000 feet. On the summit of Mauna Loa is a crater which is intermittently active. On the slope of Mauna Loa is the crater of Kilauea (Lake of Fire), which is referred to in the dispatch. Kilauea is unique among the volcanoes of the world. It is situated in a great pit in the side of Mauna Loa, 1,200 feet deep and three miles in diameter, the walls of which are almost perpendicular, so that they can only be descended where zigzag pathways have been made. The lakes of fire which make up the volcano of Kilauea are in the southern end of the pit. There is at all times more or less volcanic activity in these pits, and

they are constantly changing in form and position. In the ordinary condition of the volcano, people can descend the sides of the great pit, and walk over the floor to the lakes. The floor is black as coal, and so hot that it scorches shoe leather. There are great seams in it at intervals, from which issue steam and sulphurous smoke.

“The shores of the lakes themselves are high and steep. One can go close to the edge on the windward side, and, by holding a hat in front of the face, or wearing a mask, peep over at the infernal ‘bubbling which is going on in the abyss. The surface of the lakes, when quiet, is covered with a thin layer of black, newly hardened lava. The surface is never quiet long, nor over its whole extent. A pulsating mound makes its appearance at some point, and swells by slow degrees, until cracks appear running from the apex. The fiery molten lava appears welling up through these cracks; the layer over the surface breaks into great cakes, and, tilting on edge, these cakes disappear and are swallowed up by the red liquid underneath, which boils and bubbles and sputters in the vent it has found, throwing up spray, which is caught by the wind, and spun out as fine as silk. In this condition it is found in crevices of the lava on the banks, looking much like bunches of blond hair. The native Hawaiians term this stuff Pele’s hair, Pele being the goddess supposed to inhabit this Hale-mau-mau (House of Everlasting Fire). Natives who visit the spot throw coins or edibles into the lake to appease the wrath of the goddess. The high banks of the lakes are constantly breaking off in great masses, and being swallowed up in the seething cauldron below. In periods of great activity the surface of the lakes rises and sometimes overflows the banks, when a long stream of lava creeps over the floor of the great pit, disposing itself in smooth folds, like giant taffy.

“Kilauea is 4,000 feet above the sea level, and is

about twenty miles from the crater on the summit of Mauna Loa, which is over 9,000 feet higher. Yet there seems to be some connection between the summit crater and the vent in the side of the mountain. During the summer months of 1880 there was great activity in Kilauea, and several severe earthquakes on the island of Hawaii. The new fire lake of Hale-mau-mau, which the telegraph says has disappeared, made its appearance during this period. One night in November of that year an eruption broke out on the summit of Mauna Loa with a loud explosion, and the streams of lava came pouring down the mountain side in floods. The country through which it came was wild, an impenetrable tropical forest. In the first nights after the eruption broke out, the stream could be seen from far out at sea, looking like a fiery serpent lying on the mountain side. As the months went on, the upper part of the stream cooled on the surface and crusted over, serving as a conduit to carry the liquid to the terminus of the flow, where it broke out and pushed its way more slowly. The flow of lava continued into the summer of 1881, when it stopped about a quarter of a mile from the little tropical town of Hilo, having eaten its way sixty miles through the forest, which was utterly swallowed up in its path. No such flow of lava had come from Mauna Loa since the great flow of 1859, which reached the sea. Two eruptions so closely following as that of 1880 and the one which seems to be foretold by the phenomena in Kilauea would be unprecedented."

"That gives one a very good idea of Kilauea," remarked the Captain; "but I should think the people who live in the vicinity of those restless mountains would feel anything but comfortable just now."

"They live in a state of extreme anxiety," returned the Professor; "for there is no telling what may happen next. The lakes of fire have disappeared, but the people

KILAUEA, HAWAII.



know better than to be satisfied. They are looking for a severe eruption from the volcano on the summit of Mauna Loa; for in all cases of sudden cessation in active craters, the presumption is in favor of a fresh outburst somewhere else; but it is as likely to occur at a distance as in the vicinity."

"Well, then," exclaimed Eugene, "if we don't see Kilauea in action, we may see an eruption from Mauna Loa."

"Or possibly one in Japan, if your eccentric uncle leads us there," laughed the Captain.

"All right," rejoined Eugene, "that would suit me quite as well."

"There came near being a fearful tragedy when the fiery lake of Kilauea disappeared," said Chester, presently.

"Why, what do you mean?" asked his brother.

"It seems that a party from Australia, wishing to see the eruption, descended at night into the crater, and walked a distance of three miles over lava, until they reached the burning lake. This was very active, and they sat for hours on the brink, watching the great sea of fire, which was three miles long by one and a half miles wide. The waves of fire were running very high, often one hundred feet, while eruptions were of frequent occurrence, throwing molten lava into the air hundreds of feet high, with a noise that was deafening. At length they retired, and a few hours later, this entire lava area, including miles around the lake, the very spot where they had sat down and passed hours, and the three miles of pathway across the lava beds upon which they walked, was completely destroyed, the whole having fallen in, and leaving an open crater, miles in extent, and apparently fathomless. This was followed by forty-three distinct shocks of earthquake, lasting for a period of fourteen hours."

"That was a narrow escape," exclaimed Eugene.

"Yes, and as one of the party says, 'they will all remember for the rest of their days how near they came to a journey to the center of the earth.'"

"I don't believe I care so much about volcanoes as I did," said Eugene, with a shudder. "Please tell us something about Honolulu, Professor."

"I don't know that there is much about the town to interest you," replied the Professor. "It is situated on Oahu, the fourth island in size, and contains, perhaps, 18,000 or 20,000 inhabitants. It covers the lower portion of Nuuanu valley, and extends over the raised coral reef at the base of the lofty mountains for several miles. The houses are, for the most part, built of wood, though there are many of *adobe*, and a few constructed of coral blocks. They are seldom more than two stories high, with broad verandas, and are mostly surrounded with trees. The city is the residence of the king and his government, and the center of the chief interests of the islands. There are several public buildings, including the parliament house and the palace, which is built of coral. There are six or seven churches, two hospitals, an academy, and numerous schools. The climate of the city and vicinity is remarkably mild and uniform, and the scenery in the neighborhood, as at Waikiki, where there are extensive cocoa and palm groves, and in the beautiful valleys of Nuuanu and Manoa, verdant with patches of *kalo* and other vegetation, is of the most charming tropical character."

"You have n't said anything about the fish markets," suggested Chester.

"Because I know very little about them," returned the Professor. "Perhaps you can give us some information on that head."

"Well, here is a vivid picture from the *United Service*, which, I think, is worthy of your attention.



WAIKIKI, NEAR HONOLULU.

“‘A visit,’ says the writer, ‘to the fish market of Honolulu on a Saturday afternoon, winter or summer (for there are no seasons here, remember), is a sight seldom elsewhere to be met. Situated on the street lying beside the still surface of the bay, it seems as if the fish had only to be angled for with the fingers from the piers in order to be caught, cleaned, sold, cooked, and eaten. Every variety of fin afloat is to be seen in this market, preëminently the nutritious mullet. Fish-wives, fish-husbands, and fish-children barter the scaly merchandise from stalls or counters covered with fish and specie. Nowhere else that I know of could vendors leave in parallel piles upon their tables with impunity gold and silver coins, often amounting to scores of dollars. A good deal of chatting, joking, and bargaining accompany proceedings in this place of trade, the picturesque natives preponderating, both as buyers and sellers, while all around is life, noise, flutter, and business eagerness. The scene reminds one of the Neapolitan fish market in the square, where Masaniello organized his popular uprising and revolutionary revolt — that bold fisherman, king of but three days’ reign. Fish is a favorite food of the Hawaiian at all times, which, with a bowl of *poi*, makes up his usual meal. Shell-fish, shrimp especially, are sold for salads *a la mayonnaise*, but there is no native edible oyster. The oyster of the Pacific, anywhere I have ever been, even on our California coast, in nowise equals our Atlantic Blue Points, Chesapeakes, or East River bivalves, either as regards size, flavor, or subsequent epicurean satisfaction.’”

“That’s about it,” said the Captain, approvingly. “That gives you a very good idea of what you will see in Honolulu.”

“I wish we were there now,” exclaimed Eugene, impatiently.

"All in good time, my dear fellow," said the Captain. "The *Albatross* was never doing better than she is on this run."

And, in truth, even before Eugene was prepared for it, the volcanic peaks of Hawaii became visible on the star-board quarter.

A little later, they saw Kahoolawe, Molokini, and Maui, then Lania, on the port quarter, and at last dropped anchor in the harbor of Lahaina.

Strictly speaking, there is no harbor here, the anchorage being merely a roadstead, which protects the shipping from northerly gales. In case of a southeaster, however, vessels must put to sea or be driven on the reef. They found many ships at anchor, and among them the Captain was quick to single out the *Unrest*.

As soon as the anchor was down, and they had got rid of the harbor-master, they paid a visit to the other yacht. They found Daniel Kirby in charge. He did not seem in the least surprised or disconcerted at sight of them. Captain "Thompson," he said, was on shore, and doubtless could be found at his agent's. He cheerfully gave them the agent's name, and, hurrying into their boat, they were speedily pulled to the shore.

The town of Lahaina is beautifully situated on the level land skirting the sea, and extends along the shore for a distance of more than two miles. Back from the water front it reaches to the foot of the mountains. The streets are lined with shade-trees on either side, which, in the hot weather, afford a cool and pleasant retreat. The reef extends the whole length of the town, about forty rods, or so, from shore, and but for a small opening in it boats would be unable to land. Just in front of the landing is a large fort, built of coral blocks, yet it is not very formidable in its appearance. The site, however, is a most excellent one, as the whole shipping lies within its

range. The main street runs nearly east and west, and on it are situated the stores, offices, and most of the residences of the foreign population.

The party from the *Albatross* soon found the establishment they were in search of, and the agent informed them that Captain "Thompson" had only just left him — "gone to the hotel," he said, and at once offered to accompany them thither.

The hotel was a large and commodious building on the north side of the street, the front commanding a view of the shipping, and the sides and back surrounded by a beautiful grove, altogether as lovely a spot as one would wish to see. On entering, almost the first person they saw was Lyman Pierpont. The brothers recognized him at once, from his striking resemblance to their father. The agent was about to introduce them, but the impetuous Eugene was too quick for him.

"Ah! we have found you at last, Uncle Lyman," he exclaimed; "and I really hope you are not sorry to see the sons of your brother Leonard."

"Leonard's sons!" repeated Lyman Pierpont, gazing earnestly at first one and then the other. "No, indeed, I am not sorry to see you — far from it. Come into the parlor, and let us get acquainted."

"This is Professor Singleton, and this Captain Bradford of the *Albatross*," said Chester, presenting their friends.

"I have heard of you both, gentlemen," smiled Mr. Pierpont, "and am very glad to make your acquaintance."

The agent, seeing that his services were no longer required, withdrew, and the others followed Lyman Pierpont to the parlor. When they were seated, he abruptly said:

"Of course, gentlemen, I have been aware that you were following me about the Pacific; but I have been

laboring under a serious misapprehension, and so, until now, have kept out of your way. That misapprehension has at last been removed, and I wish to say no more about it. All that it is necessary for me to tell you is, that I am quite ready to meet you in any plan that is to benefit the old university at home, and at the same time adjust our own family affairs in accordance with my father's last wishes."

This speech was a great relief to all his hearers, and, after a moment's pause, Eugene exclaimed:

"But, uncle, we are not going to let you fix matters for us, and then quietly slip away again. Now that we have found you, we mean to keep you with us for a time, or we shall go with you, and so we give you fair warning."

Lyman Pierpont looked pleased.

"Your father, my dear boys," he said, "was my favorite at home, and I am glad to find you so like him. If you wish it, we will go to Honolulu together, where the papers you want can be properly made out, and then forwarded to the family lawyers, or to Mr. Worthington. Then, if I sell the *Unrest*, as I expect to, and you will take me to Kauai and Niihau for a day or so, I will accompany you home, provided you will go by way of China and the Indian Ocean, as I have some very important business to transact at Amoy and Hong Kong."

The brothers cast anxious glances at the Captain. He answered them by saying:

"Mr. Pierpont, we shall be too glad of your company to hesitate at any condition. The *Albatross* shall take you wherever you please."

"Hurrah!" shouted Eugene, throwing his hat to the ceiling, and catching it again. "That's settled, thank goodness!"

"Well, then," smiled Mr. Pierpont, "that being settled, as Eugene says, let us have some dinner; and,

meanwhile, I will send word to Kirby to take the *Unrest* to Honolulu."

"And you will go with us in the *Albatross*?" asked Eugene, eagerly.

"Certainly."

And this arrangement was carried out. The *Unrest* started for Honolulu within an hour, and, a little later, the *Albatross* followed her. On the passage they had a magnificent view of Molokai, but the brothers were greatly disappointed by the appearance of Oahu.

They were five days at Honolulu, during which time the Professor and the brothers saw much of the island. Meantime the *Unrest* was sold at a good profit to her owner, and then the *Albatross* steamed to Kauai. Here, and at the neighboring isles of Niihau and Lehua, they were detained for some days more, when, with a passing glimpse of Naula, they steamed away for the far-off continent of Asia.

CHAPTER XXX.

MICRONESIA.

FOR some days the *Albatross* steamed on its westward course without the usual gatherings on the quarter-deck, the Professor being busy in his own state-room, and Lyman Pierpont having many private matters to attend to. But at length, toward the close of a sultry day, they were all in their old places, and the new-comer was provided with a comfortable seat between his nephews.

"Uncle Lyman," said Eugene, presently, "I take it for granted you have sailed these seas before."

"Yes, many times," was the reply.

"There are not many islands before we reach the vicinity of the Marshall group?"

"There are Mallon, Wilson, Johnson or Crane, Ann Ete, and Isle St. Pedro to the south, and Pollard, Maurice, and Massachusetts to the north."

"There are one or two islands just north of the Marshalls?"

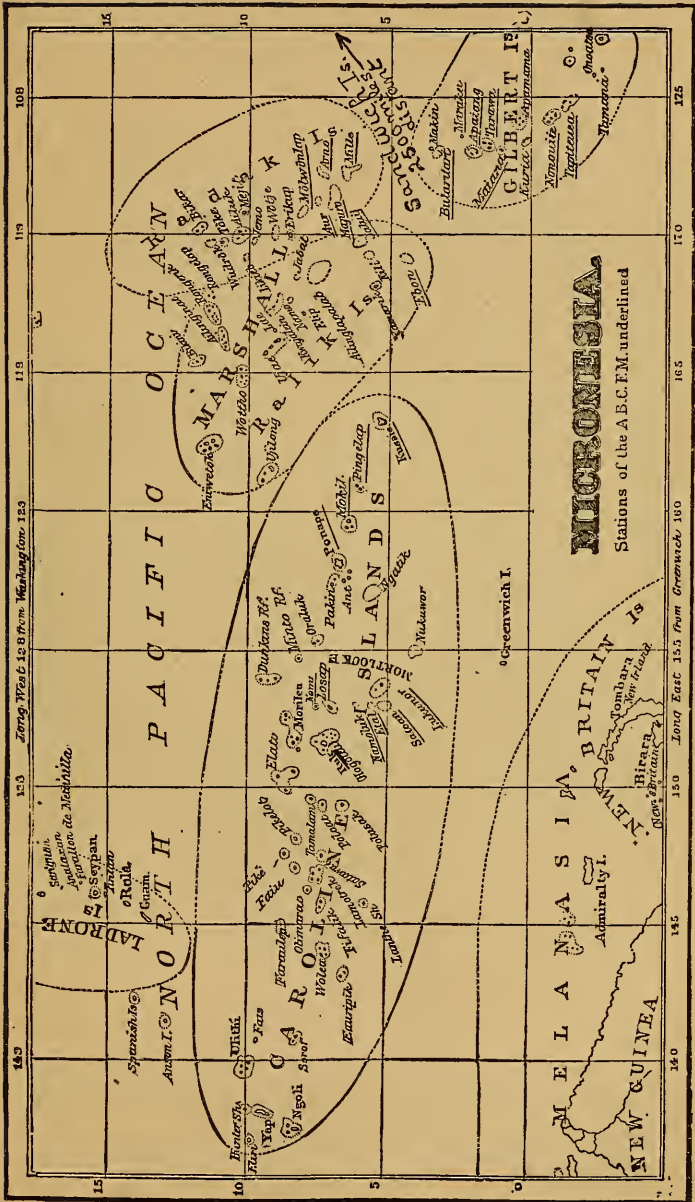
"Yes, Dawson Island or islands and Cornwallis."

"Can't you tell us a little something about the Marshall group, uncle?" asked Chester.

"There is not much to speak of outside of the work of the missionaries, and the fact that Germany has recently annexed the islands."

"Then the last is true?" asked the Captain, quickly.

"I was recently informed on good authority," said Mr. Pierpont, "that an agreement had been effected whereby Spain retains the Carolines, the Marianas, and the Palaos



Islands, while Germany acquires the Marshall and Gilbert groups."

"How do our missionaries feel about it?"

"Dr. Judson Smith, foreign secretary of the American Board, says the only detrimental effect resulting from the seizure will be the diversion of trade from the United States to Germany."

"What was Germany's excuse for seizing the islands?" asked Eugene.

"The rather lame one that there are two German trading stations on two of the Marshall Islands. As a matter of right, however, she had no more reason for taking them than she has for taking Samoa."

"No doubt it is a case of might making right," observed Chester; "but, after all, it is better to have Protestant Germany to deal with than Catholic Spain."

"That is exactly what Dr. Smith and the missionaries think," returned his uncle.

"There are two clusters or chains of the Marshalls, are there not?" asked Eugene.

"Yes, one is the Ralick, and the other the Radack chain. The whole covers quite an area, the outline of the archipelago running in a northwest and southeast direction. The population is about 14,000."

"I suppose, now that Germany has the islands in her possession, she will hold on to them?"

"Their annexation by Germany settles the status of the Marshalls indefinitely, for they are hardly worth quarreling over, and the islanders are too weak to make any opposition to so great a power."

"They are not a bad-looking people, I believe," said Chester.

"On the whole, they are a rather fine race," returned his uncle, "taller than the generality of the Caroline Islanders, and possessing tolerably good features. They

use the tattoo with some profusion, both sexes being addicted to it. They are better clothed than many Micronesians, the men wearing a short mat round their waists,



MARSHALL ISLANDERS.

and the women being clad in a very fine and neatly made mat, falling nearly to the feet. The hair has a tendency to curl, and is worn long by both sexes. Ear-rings are in

great request, and some of them are enormously large. It is evident to me that the present inhabitants are not aborigines, but came from other islands at no very remote period. They have kept up the nautical spirit to which they owe their presence in the group, and make long voyages from one island to another. Their canoes are well made, and are built of bread-fruit wood."

"I have felt a great interest in the Caroline Islands since Bismarck's attempt to gain possession of them," remarked the Captain.

"They form a very extensive archipelago," observed the Professor.

"Yes," assented Mr. Pierpont, "they occupy a considerable space in this broad ocean. They lie between the Philippines, the Ladrones, the Marshalls, and the Papuan Islands. They consist of several groups or clusters spread out from west to east, and measuring, between those extremes, about 2,000 miles, while from north to south they extend for a distance of not far from 300 miles. Five only of all the islands are high ground, namely: Kusaie, Ponapé, Ruk or Hogolu, Yap, and Pelew. The inhabitants are undoubtedly of mixed origin. 'On some of the islands,' says Mr. Logan, 'the people are woolly-haired; many of them have faces decidedly Chinese or Japanese. The islands are much more widely scattered than those of the Marshall and Gilbert groups. Hence, while one language is spoken on all the islands of each of the latter groups, we already know of six different languages in the Caroline archipelago; and a more thorough exploration of the western portion will probably reveal one or two more.

"In these islands we have specimens of every kind of coral reef. Kusaie has a fringing reef, only here and there detached from the shores. Ponapé has a most beautiful specimen of the barrier reef, being entirely

encircled by one which is separated from the island by from two to eight miles of water. Through this reef there are several passages, and, when once within, the largest vessels might sail two-thirds around the island in the calm waters of the lagoon. At Ruk, also, we have the barrier reef, nearly two hundred miles in circumference, while the island, to which it was probably once attached, has so far sunk beneath the waves that only the mountain-tops are left, forming numerous islands, from a few rods to five or six miles in diameter. Then there are the atolls, of all sizes and shapes, sometimes so large that one cannot see across from one side to the other.

“‘These islands lie so near the equator that the days and nights are of nearly equal length throughout the year. The climate is equable, the variation of the thermometer being no more than fifteen degrees Fahrenheit — from seventy-two degrees to eighty-seven degrees. The rainfall is excessive, yet malarial disorders are practically unknown.

“‘In the palmy days of the whale fishery, the harbors of Ponapé and Kusaie were much frequented by whale-ships, and the influence upon the natives, from contact with this kind of civilization, was most demoralizing. Not a few runaway sailors and others made their homes among the natives, and vice, intemperance, and licentiousness ran riot.’”

“Still the islands have been pretty thoroughly Christianized, have they not?” asked Chester.

“Kusaie has been reclaimed, but there is still left a large heathen party on Ponapé. For ten years past, however, natives of Ponapé have been doing missionary work on neighboring islands.”

“Opataia and his wife, Princess Opatinia, are among these native missionaries, I believe,” said the Professor.

“Yes, they are doing a noble work on the Mortlock

Islands. Opataia is a sincere, honest Christian, and his wife has long been an efficient teacher. She was a daughter of King Hezekiah, born while he was a bloody chieftain, and was one of the earlier ones, with him, to embrace Christianity."



PRINCESS OPATINIA.

"The Mortlocks are not a very important cluster?" said Eugene, inquiringly.

"They lie about three hundred miles southwestward from Ponapé, and are a subordinate group of three atolls. The population is about 3,500."

"Ruk is well peopled?"

"The inhabitants of Ruk number about 12,000. They are of two distinct races, and, until quite recently, were fierce and barbarous, ever at war among themselves, and merciless toward the white man. But that is all changed now; the missionaries, within the past few years, have accomplished wonders among them. Their former bad reputation is the reason why so little has been known of the cluster, which is really one of the most important in size in the Caroline range. The houses are built on the summits of the hills, which, in itself, is an evidence of the predatory nature of the people."

"There are, or have been, about as many governments in the Caroline archipelago as there are groups and islands," observed Captain Bradford, after a moment's pause.

"That is true," said Mr. Pierpont. "There are probably, even now, more government in the archipelago than can be found elsewhere over so small a population. Yap is, or has been, a constitutional kingdom, divided into sixty odd provinces, each locally self-governing. Kusaie is an absolute monarchy. Ponapé is an oligarchy ruled by five princes. The other and smaller islands are despotisms, constitutional monarchies, elective principalities, republics, communes, and so on, no two having just the same form of government. Of all the islands, perhaps Ponapé is the most prosperous."

"But Yap is of considerable importance," said the Captain.

"Yes, in both a political and commercial sense," returned Mr. Pierpont. "It is a cluster lying between the Matelotas and the Mackenzies, and consists of three principal islands, thickly inhabited by an energetic and industrious people, who cultivate large quantities of yams and sweet potatoes, tobacco, and some of the tropical fruits. Pigs are plentiful, and deer and goats abound. The dress

of the Yap natives is somewhat like that of the Pelew islanders. Tattooing is practiced among them, the patterns and figures being very elaborate. Yap is one hundred and eighty miles from the Pelews, which group the Yapites visit frequently, for the sake of the spar which they dig there, and of which they make their currency."

"I see there is a little group or cluster called Oulleai," said Chester.

"Yes, it is a group of low coral islands, almost surrounded by reefs. The natives are a fine, well-made race, of good features, light in color, and most harmless and inoffensive. These islands at one time have been thickly inhabited, and there are remains of piers, walls, and breakwaters, similar to those found on Kusaie and some of the Pelews. The dress of the natives consists of a species of fine mat, which they weave from the fiber of the pandanues. Cocoanuts and fish constitute their principal food."

"The Evalouks are also low and of coral formation, are they not?" asked Chester.

"Yes," returned his uncle, "and produce only cocoanuts. The natives, whose bodies are closely tattooed all over, resemble the Oulleai people, and dress like them. Then the Nougouras are a small group of low coral islands about five miles in breadth. The people are said to be, without exception, the finest-looking in the Caroline archipelago. There are only about one hundred and fifty inhabitants in the group. Of these people, a certain writer says:

"They have some knowledge of the division of time and of days and years. They also have a form of religion, and a temple in which are some rude carved images. The chief priest is never allowed to leave his house except on extraordinary occasions. The number of rats on these islands is almost beyond belief, and they are so tame that

when people are eating they come and sit round them, waiting for any morsels that may fall. The houses are built without sides, being merely roofed, and the supports are carefully smoothed down to prevent the rats climbing up and eating provisions which are stored away on shelves above. The chief personage on this group is always a woman, and the honor is hereditary.' He mentions the Greenwich group, which lies nearly on the equator, and



CAROLINE ISLANDERS.

says: 'It consists of about thirty low coral islands, on most of which were plenty of cocoanut, palms, and bread-fruit trees. The people appear to be an entirely different race to any hitherto met with, the men being well built, but shorter than most of the other Caroline islanders. They wear their hair very short, use no description of ornament whatever, and are not tattooed. The women have their heads shaved close, and are dressed in mats,

which they wear tied around their waists. More consideration appears to be shown to the women here than in most of the Pacific islands, and the people are hospitable.”

“The Pelew Islands are really a part of the Caroline archipelago, are they not?” asked Eugene.

“They are so classed by some geographers, while others make a separate group of them. At all events, they are a part of Micronesia, to which all the islands in this region belong.”

“They are quite an interesting group, I have been led to believe,” remarked the Professor.

“They are, indeed,” assented Mr. Pierpont. “There are twenty-six principal islands, nearly encircled by a coral reef, and they cover an extent of about one hundred and ten by thirty miles. Babelthuap, the largest, is twenty-eight miles long and fourteen broad, and contains a mountain so high that the whole group may be seen from its summit. The *Rupak*, a British schooner, paid a visit to this and other parts of Micronesia some time since, and a paper, written by Mr. Skinner, one of the owners, and from which I have before quoted, gives an interesting account of them. The writer, according to the Boston *Herald*, says:

“The northern part of the Pelew Islands, from Corror upwards, is reported as moderately high, and could, with a more industrious class of inhabitants, be made very productive, as the soil is extremely fertile. The southern portion of the group, with the exception of the Pelewlew and Ngour, is uninhabited. The islands are, as a rule, small and of basaltic formation, densely covered with hard-wood trees, the cabbage palm, etc. Breadfruit and cocoanuts are plentiful among the Pelewlew people. The Pelew Islands produce tortoise and pearl shell, and tropical fruits grow in abundance. Tobacco of a superior quality is grown, and coffee could be easily cultivated.

The staple food of the natives is taro, which is grown in the swampy or marshy land, and the tending of which falls upon the women. Pigs and goats, introduced by British war ships many years ago, are plentiful in most parts of the group. The only indigenous animal is the rat. Dogs and cats are found, but were probably introduced by vessels from Manila, which came there to trade formerly. Two kinds of snakes, neither of which is venomous, are found here. There are also a few alligators, but these are found only in one portion of a large island called Babelthuap. Green pigeons are very plentiful, and a small species of the flying fox is found. The Pelew Islands are divided into several districts, each of which has its own ruler and staff of chiefs; but, whatever may have been the case in former times, they have now very little authority. The succession of chiefs does not appear to be regulated by any fixed rule, but the most wealthy are found to attain the highest positions. There are certain families which claim to be noble, but their nobility procures them no privilege beyond the bare title, and they have to do their share of work and pay their proportion of the expenses that fall upon the community of which they are members. Polygamy is practiced, but to a small extent. Should a man have more than one wife, separate establishments are kept for each. The Pelew islanders have but a vague idea of a future state, for they believe that only those men who have been chiefs will be admitted to it. Every tribe has its own god, to whom all questions of moment are referred, the medium of communication in nearly every case being a woman known as the "Kaleeth," or god's wife. These women, by a rude sort of ventriloquism, manage to deceive the people, and have a great deal of influence in their councils. The natives have a currency among themselves of which they are very jealous, and foreigners can rarely procure specimens of it.

see 653

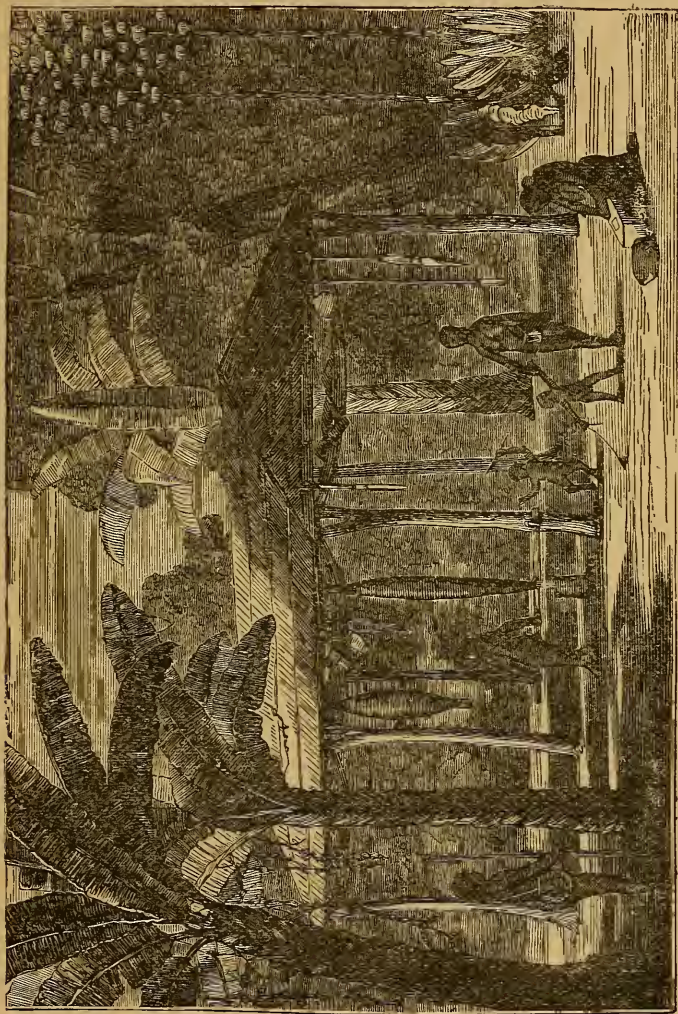
ery, great license being allowed on such occasions. The men all wear the tappa, or loin cloth, common to the whole of the Pacific islands, red and blue cloth being most esteemed. The women wear a kind of apron, made of various leaves and grasses, principally from the pandanus or screw pine, dried and shredded out. Some of the principal families have the privilege of dyeing the dresses of the women of various colors. This privilege is much esteemed, and encroachments on it are punished with a fine. All the people are tattooed on the hands, arms, and legs, and a rude system of heraldry may be traced in this and in the decoration of the canoes of the chiefs and principal people. Wars, so called, are frequent, and a settled enmity exists between the natives of the northern and southern portions of the group. In former times the spear was the only offensive weapon, but of late years the natives have been supplied with fire-arms, and generally show considerable skill in their use. The Pelews are sparsely inhabited by a race of less stature than the other Caroline Islands, with the exception of the islands of Yap, which have become celebrated in the late controversy between Germany and Spain as the scene of the act of taking possession by German marines on behalf of their government. The Pelews are also darker in color, although occasionally some of light color are found among them, principally among the better class. The men are lazy, and do little else than fish, leaving the cultivation of the taro to the women; and it is noteworthy that the women attached to the "big houses" are not allowed to work in the taro grounds. Great care is taken of the children, of whom, however, there are very few. At the age of thirty or thirty-five years the people begin to look old, and it is rare to find man or woman above the age of fifty.

“There are several half-breeds on the islands, descend-

It consists of heads of various descriptions, and of which no account as to their manufacture, nor of the origin of the material of which they are composed can be found, and the only way in which the natives account for them is that they came from the heavens. The most probable conjecture is that they were brought by the Arabs, who are supposed to have traded with the islanders in days gone by. The whole of the Pacific Islands, we are told, are being gradually depopulated. In the Pelews, the principal cause at work is an epidemic which takes the form of a species of influenza. This, or a modification of it, appears from time to time throughout the Caroline group, and sometimes attacks the Europeans living on the islands. In the Pelews and Uap — an island close to the Pelews, and known as Pillula Kap — there are institutions known to Europeans as “big houses,” which are also potent adjuncts of depopulation. The primary object of these houses is to keep the fighting men together in the event of an attack being made on the village during the night, which is the time usually chosen by these people for making raids upon each other. They are, however, merely brothels, the inmates being, as a rule, those taken prisoners in the wars, those hired from other towns, and women who have left their husbands. There are many customs regulating these houses and their inmates which are unintelligible to Europeans, and on occasions all women, even of the highest class, have to spend some time in them. As a natural consequence, there are but few people married. Of the married women, it may be safely said that not two in five bear children. Two or three children are considered a large family. In common with most Pacific islanders, these people have solemn dances, generally at the conclusion of a war or feasts; and there are also dances in which women alone perform, but they are rare, and usually scenes of debauch-

ants of European sailors and others, who have taken up their abode thereon. There are also descendants of white women and natives on the group, though no accounts of how the women got there are extant; but as the natives are known to have attacked several ships about sixty or seventy years ago, the women were probably taken from some captured vessel. The villages are, almost without exception, built at a short distance from the sea, the houses being neatly constructed some two or three feet from the ground, the roofs of which are thatched with grass and the leaves of the pandanus. In front of each house are seen the graves of deceased members of the family. The houses go with the titles, each chief in succession occupying the residence of his predecessor. In the center of the villages there are paved squares in which consultations take place and dances are performed. There are paved roads through every village of the group, and when repairs are needed they are done by the community, any person absenting himself being fined. In front of every village of importance are large sea walls or piers built out on to the reefs, and some of these are apparently very ancient. That at Corror, the most important of the towns, is very substantially built of stone and coral, and is about a quarter of a mile long. The "big houses" are substantially built of hard wood, and well thatched, and are from sixty to seventy feet long, and from twelve to fifteen wide. In these buildings the cross-beams and supports are rudely carved in relief, which carvings record the history of the people, and purport to chronicle any remarkable occurrence; but there are, however, but few of the natives who can explain them. The language of the Pelews is idiomatic and apparently difficult of acquirement by Europeans. A sufficient knowledge for trading purposes is, however, soon obtained.

“‘The Matelotas,’ he goes on to say, ‘are a group of islands to the eastward and northward of the Pelews,



A HOME IN MICRONESIA.

but to the southward of Yap. They are also known as the Gulus, and are inhabited by a few light-complexioned

people resembling the other Caroline Islanders. This and the Mackenzie group were all but swept away some sixteen or seventeen years ago by a severe cyclone, which destroyed nearly the whole of the cocoanut palms, the fruit of which, with fish, is the only food of the natives. The Mackenzie group is sparsely peopled by a light-colored race. On one of these islands the Jesuit father, Cantova, was killed, and the few natives remaining still look for his return, thinking he will restore the islands to their original state.’”

“That description gives one a very good idea of the people of Micronesia,” said the Professor, approvingly.

“They are a strange lot,” mused Eugene. Then, suddenly: “Uncle, did you ever visit the Solomon Islands?”

“Yes, on one occasion,” was the reply.

“We have heard some fearful stories about the islanders; and yet, I am told, their architecture is very good.”

“In Makira Bay, Christoval Isles,” rejoined Mr. Pierpont, “I saw some very ingenious houses which the natives had built for the protection of their canoes. These houses are capable of accommodating a considerable number of the beautifully carved craft, and are elaborately adorned, after the native fashion, with idols, human skulls, tufts of feathers, and similar ornaments.”

“The Ladrões have been in the possession of Spain for a great many years,” remarked Chester, after a pause.

“Yes,” said his uncle, “for more than two centuries.”

“They were discovered by Magellan?”

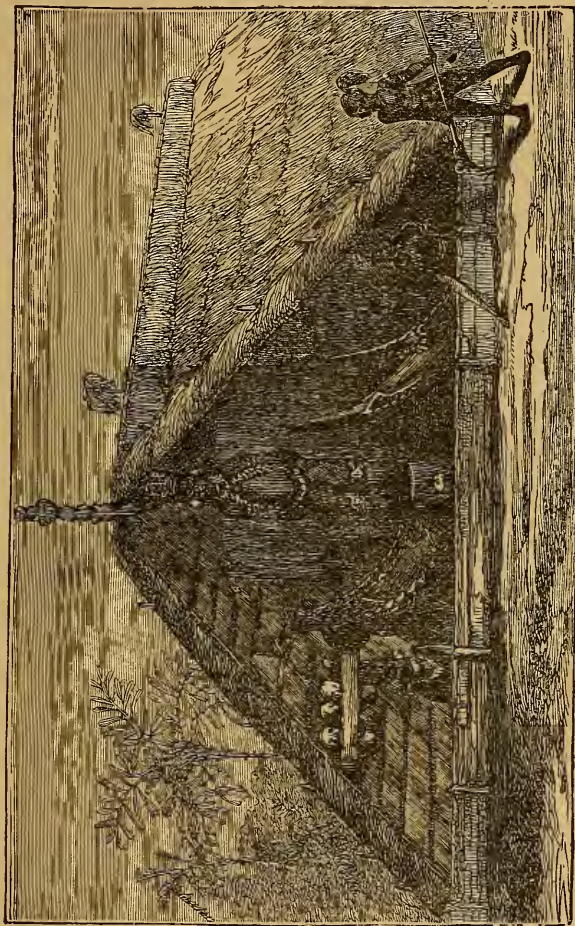
“Yes, shortly before his death in 1521, and he named them Ladrões, from the thievish disposition of their inhabitants.”

“Is it an important group?” asked Eugene.

“There are some twenty-odd islands,” replied Mr. Pierpont, “and the population is between 10,000 and 12,000.”

"I thought it was much greater."

"When the Spanish missionaries established themselves on the islands, toward the end of the seventeenth



A CANOE HOUSE, MAKIRA BAY.

century, the natives numbered more than 40,000; but they have totally disappeared, and the present inhabitants are mostly the descendants of settlers from Mexico and

the Philippines, very few Spaniards, even, remaining. The islands are of volcanic formation, extremely rugged, and in some places barren and waste. In the fertile parts, however, they produce cotton, sugar, rice, indigo, cocoa, corn, tobacco, and nearly every species of inter-tropical products."

"They are well watered, then," said the Professor.

"Yes, and can boast of some fine forests."

"Are they well supplied with animals?" asked Eugene.

"Wild hogs, llamas, horses, and cattle are numerous," said his uncle, "the first named animal attaining a great size, and proving a most formidable foe to the hunter."

"The climate is very fine, is it not?" asked the Professor.

"It is, indeed," returned Mr. Pierpont, "the heat being tempered by the trade winds."

"What are the principal islands?" asked Eugene.

"They are Guahan, Rota, Aguijan, Saypan, and Tinian."

"There are some wonderful ruins on Tinian," observed the Professor.

"Yes; they were discovered by Lord Anson, in 1742."

"There are several volcanoes in the group, I believe," said Chester.

"Those on Asuncion and Pagon, in the north, are well known," rejoined his uncle.

"The seat of government is at San Ignacio de Agaña, is it not?" asked the Captain.

"It is," was the reply, "on the island of Guahan, the most southerly of the group."

"Pearls are found among the islands, I have seen it stated," said Chester.

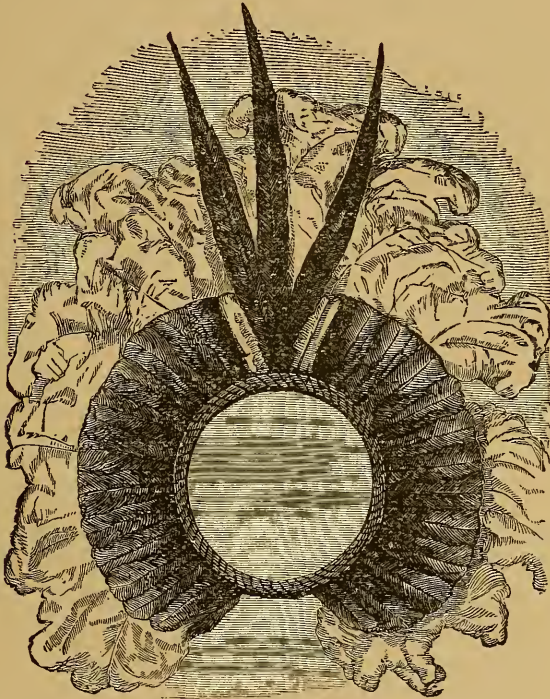
"There is quite an extensive pearl fishery on the coast of Saypan," said his uncle, "and many are secured elsewhere."

"This group of islands has one or two other names, has it not?" asked Eugene.

"Yes, it was named Mariana, in honor of a Spanish queen; and years ago the group was called the Lazarus Islands."

"They ought to stick to Mariana," said Chester; "for there are at least two other groups called Ladrones."

"Where are they?" asked his brother.



HEAD-DRESS.

"One is in China, at the entrance to the bay of Canton, and has long been the resort of pirates; the other is in this ocean, about ten miles off the coast of Colombia."

At this point the conversation was broken off, and, owing to a protracted storm which arose during the night, was not resumed for many days. At length, when they had reached the vicinity of the Bonin Islands, the

Captain resolved to call there, and the next morning the yacht came to anchor in Port Lloyd, on Peel Island.

The passengers, accompanied by the Captain, Mr. Morgan, and several sailors, made an excursion through the loveliest of these most delightful islands, and, two days later, they sailed for the Loo Choo group.

Here they remained a week, going pretty much over the same ground traversed by the party from Perry's expedition in 1854, and enjoying themselves hugely.

"I had hoped to take you to Japan while we were in this part of the world," remarked the Captain, as they were resting in the shade of a noble banyan, on the morning of the last day of their stay on shore; "but, alas! we shall have to forego that pleasure for this time, and make the most of our next place of call."

"And where will that be?" asked Eugene.

"The port of Amoy in China," was the reply.



UNDER THE BANYAN.

CHAPTER XXXI.

THE CHINA SEA AND INDIAN OCEAN.

AT daylight, the next morning, the yacht's course was laid for Amoy ; and, in due time, after passing the Madjico Sima Islands, and the Taiysu and Hoapinsu clusters, they rounded the north end of Formosa, and entered the Formosa Channel.

Formosa is a large and important island in the China Sea, being separated from the coast of China by a broad channel. The island contains 15,000 square miles of surface, and a population of 2,000,000. It is rich in minerals, gold, silver, mercury, coal, and some copper being found. The soil is extremely fertile, and yields abundantly all the ordinary crops, with sugar-canes, tobacco, spices, and some dye and medicinal woods. The exports are rice and camphor, chiefly ; the imports, silk and most European and American manufactured goods. The Dutch early made a settlement on the island, but suffered much from Malays and pirates ; and it was not till the end of the last century that it became, to any great extent, subject to Chinese rule. The eastern and mountainous portion is inhabited by a warlike race of copper-colored barbarians, of whom the Chinese are in great dread, and with whom they are almost constantly at war. They are probably of Malay extraction, wear their hair long, have rings in their ears, and are clothed only with a piece of cloth about their loins. They dwell in bamboo cottages, raised on terraces about four feet high.

It was late in the afternoon when our friends on board

the *Albatross* first caught a glimpse of Formosa; and it was not until the next morning that they entered the harbor of Amoy, and were landed in the city, which is situated on an island of the same name, in the province of Fokien, and about opposite the center of Formosa.

The city is built upon rising ground, facing the harbor, which is an excellent one. It contains many large buildings, and formerly had several considerable forts, one of them not less than 1,100 yards long. It is estimated to



CHINESE OF FORMOSA.

be nearly nine miles in circumference.—The population is a little more than 250,000, chiefly employed in trade. The merchants of Amoy are reckoned among the most enterprising in China. The port was opened to the world till 1734, when it was closed. It was captured by the British in 1841, and by the treaty of Nanking was thrown open, first to the British, then to other nations. The

native merchants carry on an extensive trade along the coast, and with Formosa, Manila, Siam, and the Malay Islands. The foreign imports are of immense value, and the exports are very heavy. There is a mission of the Reformed Church of America at Amoy, and other missions are established there.

Mr. Pierpont's business detained the yacht in this port for about two days, during which time the Professor and the brothers had an opportunity for exploring the city and island, after which they departed for Victoria, on the island of Hong-Kong. Here they were detained for two days more, and then the *Albatross* was headed for Singapore.

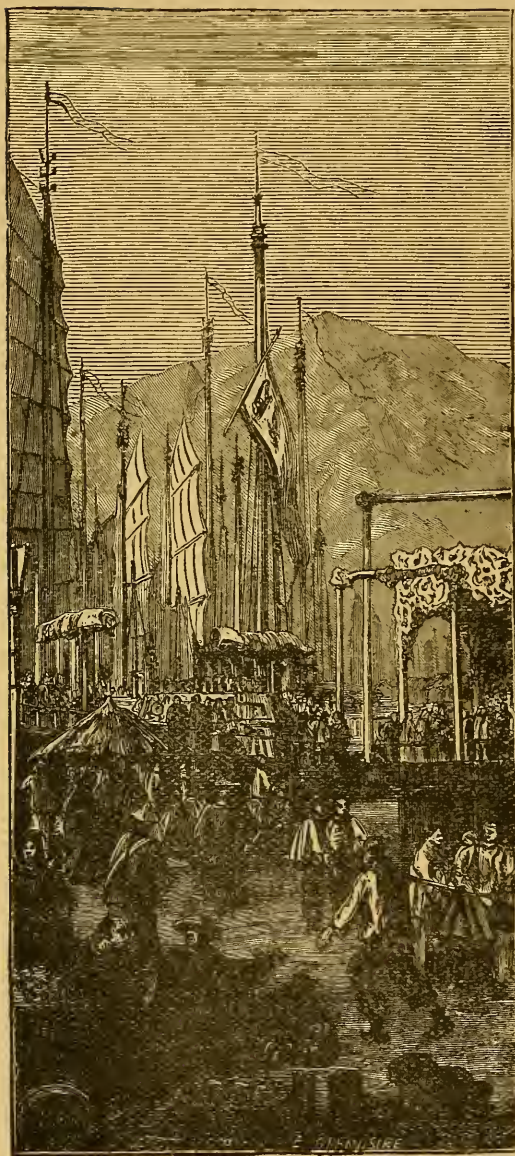
Soon they had the Philippines on their larboard quarter, and Eugene, when a fitting opportunity offered, asked his uncle regarding them.

"They form a large and important archipelago," said Mr. Pierpont, "consisting of about 1,200 islands, without including the Babuyan and Bashee Islands on the north, or the Sooloo archipelago on the south. Magellan discovered this group in 1521, but it was not till the year 1565 that they were taken possession of by the Spanish. The principal islands are Luconia, Mindanao, Panay, Palawan, and others. Together the islands embrace an area of 120,000 square miles. Their discoverer was killed here in 1521, after having named them for Philip II. of Spain. The population is now 7,451,352, and is made up of mixed races, consisting of Europeans, natives, negroes, half-casts, and Chinese."

"A fearfully destructive typhoon swept over the islands on the 7th of last November," remarked the Professor. "Many human lives were lost, hundreds of cattle perished, and thousands of buildings, including churches and convents, were destroyed."

"Yes," said Mr. Pierpont, "the typhoons are terrible in these seas; but the recuperative powers of the islands are wonderful, and, in a marvelously short time after a hurricane, all signs of the ruin it has wrought have disappeared, and all is as if it had never been."

"As you have visited the Philippines, uncle, perhaps you have also been upon the neighboring island of Borneo?" said Eugene, in an inquiring tone.



AMOY.

"Yes, I have seen something of that vast island," replied Mr. Pierpont; "and it is not too much to say that, even if I had spent years upon its shores, I could still have found much to interest me, and excite my wonder and admiration."

"Next to Australia, it is the largest island in the world, is it not?" asked Eugene.

"With the possible exception of Papua, it is," was the reply. "Its greatest length is 850 miles, by a width, ex-

cepting toward the north, of 680 miles, and it has a surface area of nearly 300,000 square miles."

"The coast of this great island," continued Mr. Pierpont, "is almost everywhere beset by vast reefs and low islets. Though mountainous in many places, especially toward the north, the general aspect of the land is that of low marshy plains, covered with interminable forests of mangroves, and other dense woods; and though we know the interior contains high regions and lofty mountains, from whence the numerous rivers descend, as yet our knowledge is imperfect on this point. The ranges of which we have positive information rise from 2,050 feet to 13,698 feet in height, the eminence of Kina-Balu giving the last measurement.

"The climate is remarkably salubrious for an equatorial island. The vegetation is rich, luxuriant, and varied. The most striking productions are the wonderful pitcher plants, which here attain their highest development in form and color. They grow on the mountains, and vary greatly in size and appearance. The pitcher of one species will hold two quarts of water. There are fully one hundred species of ferns on the island, and many varieties of the orchid. Perhaps the finest fruit in the world is furnished by the durion tree. A spiny oval mass contains the fruit, in the form of a cream-colored pulp. Other fruit trees are very abundant.

"Three nations of people, irrespective of the Europeans, who now claim possession of a large portion of the soil, are inhabitants of Borneo,—the Chinese, the Malays, and the Dyaks; the first are, however, rather visitors than possessors. The Malays are conquerors, who, crossing from Sumatra and the peninsula, four or more centuries ago, have established themselves in the country by force of arms, their possessions lying, however, only along the shore. The whole of the interior is in the

possession of the aborigines, the Dyaks, of whom there are several tribes, the Biajow, the Kajan, and Marat being the most important.

"Sarawak, a large district or state on the northwest coast, is now under an English ruler, and, by the acquisition of Labuan as a colony, British influence is paramount in this part of the island."

"From what I have heard of them," said Chester, "I think that the Dyaks must be an interesting people."

"They are so," returned his uncle, "especially the Sea Dyaks."

"Then there are both Sea and Land Dyaks?"

"Yes; there are some nine or ten branches of the latter, each of which is divided into a considerable number of tribes. These people are continually shifting their quarters, in search of new lands for cultivation; and the result is that they quarrel with each other, fight, are dispersed, and thus form new tribes in the localities where they settle. But they seldom venture to sea, either for piracy or trade, and, in this respect, are very different from the Sea Dyaks, whose existence is essentially a nautical one."

"The Sea Dyaks are a fairer, a finer, and a more interesting people than those of the land; they are also about three times as numerous. They are preëminently a nation of rovers, and, until quite recently, lived by piracy, and carried out to the fullest extent the abominable practice of head-hunting."

"I have heard a great deal of their peculiar hunting expeditions," said Eugene; "but what they wanted a collection of heads for was more than I could make out."

"They secured the heads under the belief that every person decapitated would become the slave of the hunter in the next world," explained his uncle.

"Gracious! what an idea. And yet you say they are a much finer race than the Land Dyaks?"

MALAY CHILDREN.



“They are taller and much fairer in complexion. The skin of the Land Dyak is brown, whereas that of the Sea Dyak is many shades lighter, and resembles the color of new leather—a hue which admirably suits the well-developed forms of these people. They are very proud of their complexion, and the women are fond of an excuse for throwing off the jackets which they usually wear, in order to exhibit their smooth, satiny skins, polished and shining, as if of new bronze.

“The ordinary dress of the men is simple enough, consisting merely of the *chawat*, or slight strip of cloth, which is twisted round the loins in such a manner that one end falls in front, and the other behind. The *chawat* is often very gayly colored. Sometimes they wear a *sarong*, or short petticoat of cotton cloth, which reaches from the waist to a little above the knees. Young men who can afford the expense wear many ornaments. From the elbow downward, both arms are covered with rings of brass, and above the joint are usually two broad armlets of snowy shells, which contrast admirably with the yellow-brown skin.

“The women dress somewhat like the men; but, instead of the *sarong*, they generally wear a rather longer petticoat, called a *bedang*. When obliged to go out in the sun, they wear a jacket, without sleeves and open in front; but as this hides the glossy brown skin on which they so pride themselves, they lay it aside when in the house. In youth they are remarkable for their slender and graceful forms and attractive faces. But, alas! after a female has passed the age of twenty, she begins to deteriorate, and at thirty is an old woman. Nowhere in all my wanderings have I seen a face more pleasing in expression than among the young Dyak girls. The eyes are black, clear, and expressive, and the lashes singularly long. Their chief point of beauty, however, is their hair,

which is black, wonderfully thick and shining, and so long that when allowed to flow down the back, it nearly touches the ground. Of this they are inordinately vain, and, when engaged in conversation, are fond of flinging their shining tresses from side to side by coquettish tossings of the head. Unfortunately, the fever, which is so prevalent in many parts of the island, causes the



A YOUNG DYAK.

hair to fall off, so that many a young girl is thus deprived of her chief ornament."

"They have a singular style of architecture, if I remember rightly," observed the Captain.

"Their architecture is very peculiar," returned Mr. Pierpont. "In the first place, the houses are all built on posts, some of them twenty feet in height, and the mode of access to them is by means

of a notched pole, which serves the purpose of a ladder. The chief dwelling in every village, and, indeed, practically the village itself, is the 'long house,' which is of enormous proportions. I measured one of them, and found it to be 545 feet long, and, on inquiry, learned that it was inhabited by 512 persons. Throughout the entire length of the house runs the broad veranda, or common room, which is open to all; and at the side



DYAK GIRLS.

are private rooms for the different families, as many as seventy or eighty such rooms being sometimes found in one house. Although the veranda is common ground,



A DYAK VILLAGE.

and here the members of the community go through their various sedentary occupations, each family occupies only the portion opposite their own rooms, and no one would think of entering another's apartments uninvited.

"The chief, or Orang-kaya, of the long house has a much larger room than the others, and the space in front of his room is considered to be devoted to the use of the lesser chiefs and councilors, and, although free to all, is frequented almost entirely by the old men and warriors of acknowledged courage."

"I suppose Sumatra is even more interesting than Borneo?" said Eugene, in an inquiring tone.

"Well," returned his uncle, slowly, "that is a matter of opinion. Perhaps the best way to put it is to say that there is much that is interesting in each that is not common to both."

"I think that's just it," exclaimed Chester. "For instance, Borneo, with all her long houses and broad verandas, has no such picturesque villages as may be seen in Sumatra."

"There you are quite right," replied his uncle. "The architecture of Sumatra is very different from that of Borneo, and there is really something quite pleasing about it, as there is in the dress of the people."

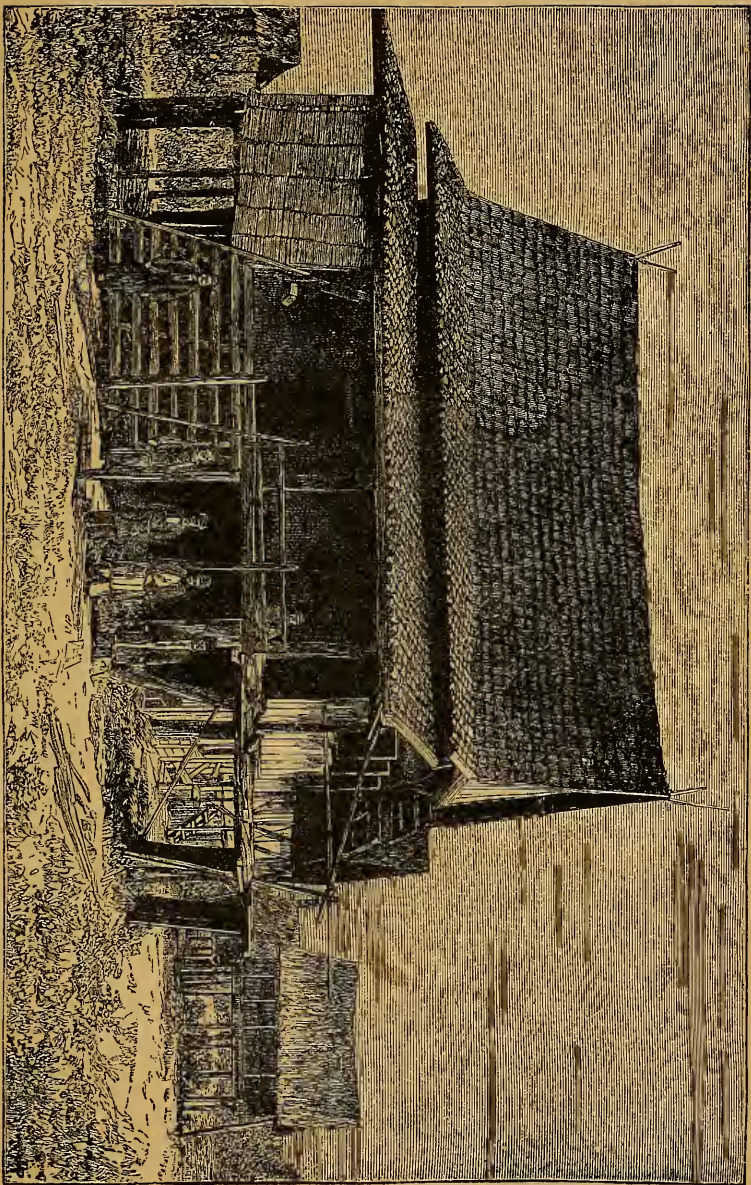
"The houses are raised on posts or pillars, like those of the neighboring islands, are they not?" asked Eugene.

"Yes; but usually not more than from four to eight feet from the ground. Still, in some districts, they are erected in trees. Those of the poorer classes are made of bamboo, and thatched with grass; but the houses of the more wealthy are framed of wood, and the sides enclosed by sheets of bark."

"It is thought by some that Sumatra at one time formed a part of the Malay peninsula, is it not?" asked Chester.

"I do not know as to that," replied Mr. Pierpont.

"According to Wallace," observed the Professor, "both Sumatra and Borneo were formerly connected with the peninsula."



A VILLAGE SCENE, SUMATRA.

"Well, whatever it once was," said Eugene, "it is a large and populous island now."

"True," rejoined his uncle, "for its extreme length is 1,050 miles, its greatest breadth 250 miles, its area 160,000 square miles, and its population is estimated at nearly 4,000,000."

"The Dutch claim the greater part of it, do they not?"

"They hold possession of a little more than three-fourths of the island, a large portion directly, and the rest through dependent native rulers."

"There's a grand mountain range in the west," observed Chester, "the result, I suppose, of volcanic action?"

"Yes; and even now there are five active volcanoes. The mountain range is near the western coast, and rises to a height of from 2,500 to 5,000 feet, with many lofty peaks, some of which reach an altitude of nearly 15,000 feet. The portion of the country lying eastward of the great range is a vast, low, and comparatively level forest region, watered by numerous and extensive rivers. The formation of this vast plain is comparatively recent, and the process is still going on, while the western coast is believed to be gradually wearing away."

"How about the climate?" asked Eugene.

"The climate varies according to the elevation of the land, from the scorching plains of a tropical region to the freezing cold of an arctic latitude."

"There are plenty of wild animals, if travelers are to be believed," remarked Chester.

"Yes, the wild animals are very numerous, and in no part of the east does the tiger attain more formidable dimensions; the elephant, hippopotamus, rhinoceros, bear, boar, and varieties of deer, monkeys, and many other kinds of wild and savage beasts haunt the woods and plains. Birds and insects, too, of all sizes and colors, literally swarm."

“What are some of the products, uncle?”

“Rice, sugar, betel, cocoanut, millet, coffee, sago, all kinds of spice and pepper grow profusely, while tobacco and the cotton plant are generally cultivated. Then the mineral wealth of the island is remarkable, gold being extensively found, as well as iron, tin, copper, sulphur, and a large number of precious stones.”

“Gold and precious stones!” exclaimed Eugene. “Where do they find the gold?”

“In the beds of the rivers, particularly the Indragiri, the Jambi, and their tributaries.”

“Let me see,” said Chester, “the Batang-Hari is tributary to the Jambi?”

“Yes, and much gold has been found in its bed.”

“Many of the inhabitants live in floating houses on those great streams, do they not?” asked the Professor.

“Yes,” responded Mr. Pierpont; “and on the Batang-Hari, near the Jambi, I have seen quite a collection of them—a regular village, in fact. And floating houses on the Jambi are a common sight.”

“The dwellers in these aquatic houses are fishermen, I suppose?”

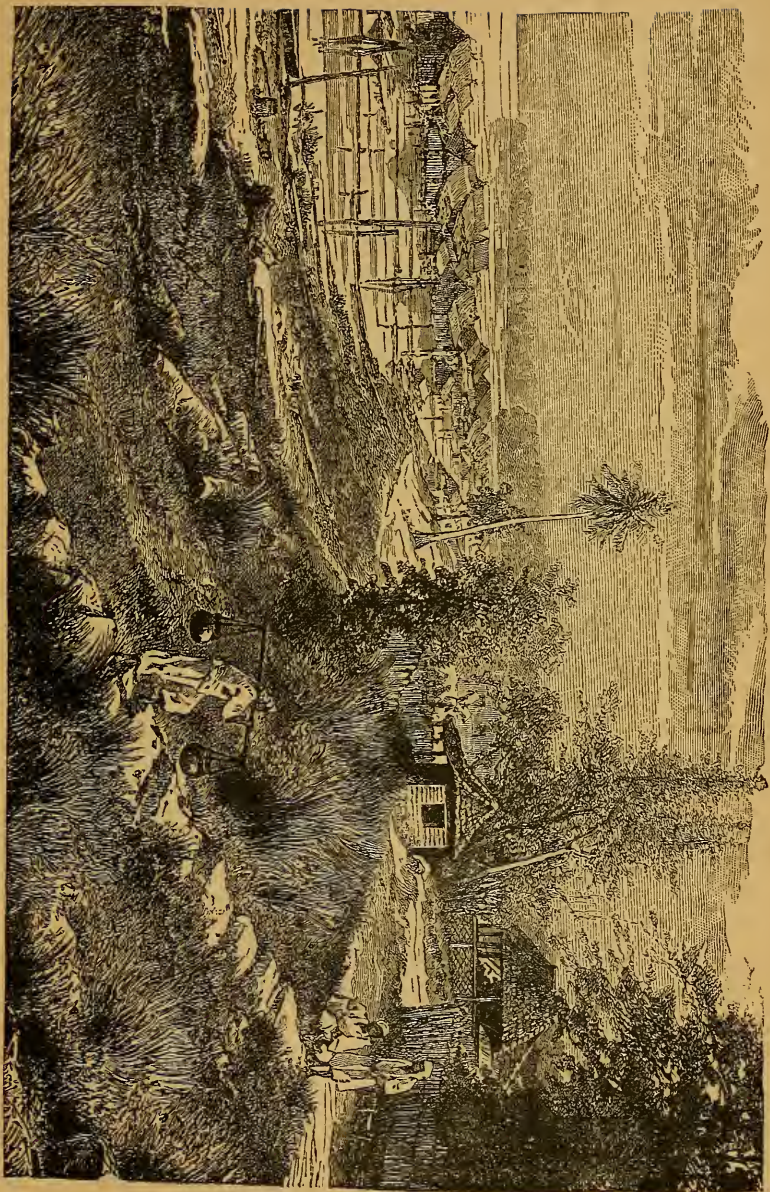
“Yes, mostly; and they make a fair living, too, for all the streams swarm with fish of many varieties.”

“As I remember, there are quite a number of islands on the coast,” observed the Captain, presently.

“Yes; at some distance off the western coast is a chain of islands, comprising several of considerable size, including Pulo Babi or Hog Island, Pulo Nias, Sibiru, Sipora, the Poggi Islands, and Eugano. Most of them are high, well wooded, and thickly inhabited. The most important islands off the eastern coast are Banca and Rupat, the latter of which is separated from the main island by a narrow channel.”

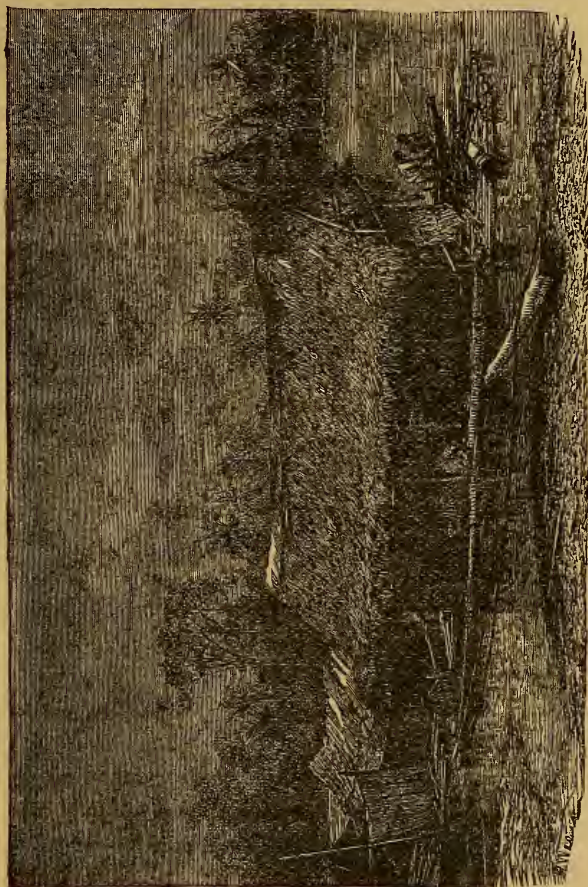
“The native Sumatrans, the aborigines, are hardly to

THE BATANG HARI, NEAR THE JAMBI.



be seen on the coast, I suppose?" said Eugene, inquiringly.

"No; they have been driven by the Malays to the interior, and are mostly a peaceable and sober people, while



FLOATING HOUSE ON THE JAMBI.

the mixed tribes along the coast partake more of the character of the Malay stock, from which they are sprung."

"But, uncle," said Chester, "I have seen the state-

ment that Sumatra itself, in all probability, was the cradle of the Malay race."

"Well," returned his uncle, "if Wallace's surmise, that the island once formed part of the main land, is true, that may have been the case. But, if so, what are you going to do with the tribes in the interior, especially those whose origin, even to this day, is involved in obscurity?"

"I'm sure I don't know," confessed his nephew.

"There is said to be a fine-looking race about Acheen," observed the Captain.

"Yes," rejoined Mr. Pierpont, "they are taller, stouter, and of darker complexion than the other tribes, and are supposed to have an infusion of Hindoo blood. The Bataks, immediately south of them, and who are said to be cannibals, are smaller, of lighter complexion, and altogether a different race."

"I suppose there are a great many Europeans on the island?" said Eugene.

"On the contrary, the entire number in the country would hardly exceed 2,000."

"Gracious! I should think the natives would rise and drive them out."

"Ah! but they are forbidden to bear arms, you see."

"I see, and acknowledge the wisdom of the Dutch."

"Is not Sumatra a great country for tree-ferns, as well as bamboos, rattans, and other kinds of reeds?" asked Chester.

"Yes, there are immense tree-ferns, and the greatest profusion of reeds, which they use for every conceivable purpose. Many, perhaps most, of their bridges are made of Indian reeds, and some of them are truly remarkable structures."

"It won't be long, I suppose, before the Dutch will be in full possession of the island," observed the Captain, after a pause.



A BRIDGE OF INDIAN REEDS.

"No," returned Mr. Pierpont; "and perhaps, on the whole, it will be as well; for, as far as my judgment goes, the native independent rulers are a bad lot."

The Captain being called forward at this point, the conversation was diverted to other channels, and, during the remaining days of the passage, other matters commanded their attention.

At length the brothers awoke one morning to find the steamer no longer under headway, and, upon going on deck, found they were in the harbor of Singapore.

This important city is situated on an island of the same name, which has a population of more than 100,000. The island lies off the southern extremity of the Malay peninsula, from which it is separated by a strait forty miles long and from one-half to two miles wide. It is twenty-five miles long from east to west, and twelve miles wide, with an area of not far from 225 square miles. Near the coast the country is flat and swampy, and covered with mangrove trees, but inland it is hilly, with some eminences 500 feet high. There are a few small streams, and in the lowlands the soil is rich. Nutmegs, ginger, pepper, cloves, gambier, tapioca, and sugar-cane are raised. The climate is very healthful and agreeable, and light rains are frequent. It is a well-known fact that tigers cross the strait to the island, and carry off, on an average, a Chinaman every day. Of the inhabitants, about 55,000 are Chinese, and only 1,400 Europeans. Malay is the language commonly spoken.

The city, which is the capital of the straits settlements, is on the south side of the island, and has a population of about 93,000. It is divided by a stream called the Singapore River, on the west side of which is the Chinese quarter, where all the great mercantile warehouses and counting-houses are situated. On the east side are the public buildings, churches, hotels, and the

residences of most of the Europeans; and still further east is the Malay quarter. On Pearl Hill is a fortress which commands the Chinese quarter, and on another elevation, back of the European district, is the government house, a stately building of cut stone. In the suburbs are many fine residences, and there are splendid drives, ample parade grounds, and a botanical garden with a rare collection of tropical plants.

Singapore is a free port. The harbor, which is divided into two by a tongue of land, is capacious, and the water is deep. In consequence of its advantageous position, its commerce is enormous — the largest, indeed, of any port in this part of the world, the annual imports being about \$50,000,000, and the exports not far from \$45,000,000.

For two days the *Albatross* lay at anchor in the harbor, during which time the passengers remained on shore, making themselves as familiar as possible with every part of the city and its immediate surroundings. On the morning of the third day, somewhat reluctantly, they repaired on board, when the yacht steamed through the Strait of Malacca. In due time, she rounded the northern end of Sumatra, and her course was laid for the Cape of Good Hope.

Just to the north were the Nicobar Islands, and at a greater distance the Andaman chain; but Eugene's mind still dwelt on Singapore.

"It was once the capital of a Malay kingdom, was it not, uncle?" he asked, after receiving answers to several other questions.

"A city," replied his uncle, "which was the capital of such a kingdom, and which bore the same name, occupied the same site in the twelfth century; but a century later it was captured by a king of Java, when the royal residence was removed to Malacca, and it gradually fell into decay. So that, in 1819, when the British built a factory

on the site, the whole island had only one hundred and fifty inhabitants."

"Singapore — what is the meaning of the word?"

"Lion's town; but perhaps it ought to be tiger's town now."

"How did the British obtain full possession of the island at last?" asked Chester.

"In the year 1824," replied his uncle, "the sultan of Johore, in consideration of \$60,000 and a life annuity of \$24,000, transferred the sovereignty and fee simple of the island, and all the seas and islands within ten geographical miles to the British government; and, although it seems an extravagant price, the English secured a good bargain."

"Ah! isn't it a delightful spot? And then the climate!" exclaimed Eugene.

"Yes, indeed," returned his uncle. "The island is regarded by the natives as the paradise of India, the home of plenty, and the abode of health."

"There are quite a number of groups and islands in this part of the Indian Ocean," remarked Chester, a few days later, while, as usual, they were reclining at their ease on the quarter-deck.

"Yes," assented the Captain; "to the south of us are the Compton Rocks, Ady, Candu, and Egmont Island, and the Chagos group, while to the north are the Maldives and the Lacardive Islands, and Ceylon."

"Ah, Ceylon!" exclaimed Eugene. "That is a wonderful island."

"Yes," returned the Captain; "but for any information regarding it I think you will have to look to the Professor."

"Well, Professor, what can you tell us about Ceylon?"

"Ceylon," smiled their friend, "is an island of very great importance. It lies, as you know, off the southern

coast of Hindostan, is 270 miles in length, and nearly 100 in average width, and contains an area of 24,000 square miles. The island is extremely mountainous in its central parts, and flat and well-wooded on its shores. Adam's Peak, as it is called, the highest mountain in the island, is 8,000 feet above the level of the sea, and the spot celebrated in Hindoo mythology as the place from which Buddha ascended to heaven, his last earthly trace being left on the apex of the mountain in the form of a gigantic footprint deeply stamped into the rock. All the animals common to India are to be found in Ceylon, the elephant, in particular, being universally met with, wandering about the streets and roads with unrestrained liberty. In no part of the world is the sagacity of this animal so remarkably developed as on this island, and nowhere else are they found so large, some measuring sixteen feet in height."

"How long is it since the island first fell into the hands of Europeans?" asked Eugene.

"It was taken by the Portuguese in 1505," replied the Professor. "They held possession of it for a century, when the Dutch took it from them, the British finally wresting it from Holland, and erecting it into a separate government or presidency."

"What is the population?" asked Chester.

"Not far from 2,500,000," was the answer.

"In mentioning the islands to the south of us, Captain," said Eugene, presently, "I noticed you left out St. Brandon, Rodrique Isle, Mauritius or Isle of France, and Bourbon or Réunion."

"Yes," assented the Captain, "and so I did the Isle de Lisboa, Tromelin, and a dozen other isles and groups, and for the simple reason that they are not in this part of the ocean."

"Nevertheless," said Eugene, "I should like very much

to hear something about the isle that was the scene of Bernardin de Saint-Pierre's 'Paul and Virginia.' ”

“ Well,” said the Professor, “ I can tell you this much : Mauritius, which is about 500 miles to the east of Madagascar, belongs to Great Britain, and has an area of 676 square miles. It is exceedingly picturesque, having irregular mountains, with bold and grand outlines, rising into points and pinnacles, some of them to an elevation of 2,800 feet above the sea. It is regarded as the port of Réunion, upon which island it almost wholly depends for provisions, producing itself only wheat, maize, yams, and sugar. The exports consist of coffee, cotton, indigo, raw sugar, and cloves. The population is more than 480,000, of whom some 15,000 are whites, the rest being Hindoos, negroes, and what are known as hill-coolies. The island was discovered by the Portuguese in 1505, and in 1598 it was taken by the Dutch, who named it in honor of Prince Maurice. The French took possession of it in 1715, and called it Isle de France. It fell into the hands of the British in 1810, and their possession of it was confirmed by the peace treaties of 1814 and 1815.”

“ You mentioned Madagascar, Professor,” said Chester. “ I have felt considerable interest in that great island since its recent brave struggle with France.”

“ And is the struggle over, then ? ” asked his uncle, in some surprise.

“ Yes, sir,” returned Chester ; “ and according to an item I saw in an English newspaper at Singapore, in the treaty of peace just concluded at Autananarivo, the capital of Madagascar, France waives all claim to a protectorate over the island. Madagascar agrees, however to pay, and France agrees to accept, \$2,000,000 for a release which is to cover all foreign claims against Madagascar, both those antedating the war just closed, and those growing out of it, France to occupy Tamatave until the money is paid.”

"I wish, for your sakes, we might pay the great island a brief visit," said Mr. Pierpont, "for its general appearance is beautiful in the extreme, the surface of the country being diversified by a great variety of scenery, lofty hills, and fertile valleys, the whole covered with every description of vegetation and immense forests."

"Ah!" exclaimed Chester, "the vegetation is most remarkable, I know, and there are some wonders in the way of plants. How I should like to secure a specimen of the lace-leaf, and for once quench my thirst from a traveler's tree!"

"I would like much to indulge you in your laudable desires, gentlemen," smiled the Captain; "but the time is getting short, and they are anxiously expecting us at home."

"Oh! home, by all means, now," exclaimed the Professor; "and when we reach Cape Town, I shall feel that we are almost there."

"At all events, we shall then be on the waters of the Atlantic again, and that's something toward it," said the Captain, as he hastened to join Jasper Morgan and the second mate.

In due time, after a pleasant run, they doubled the Cape of Good Hope and entered Table Bay, where the yacht remained at anchor for thirty-six hours.

Of course the passengers seized this opportunity to visit Cape Town, which is rapidly becoming an attractive city. The botanical garden interested them most, and here they spent some hours; then, after looking at the canals and public buildings, and paying a visit to the top of Table Mountain, they returned to the yacht for a late supper and a night's rest. The next morning the *Albatross* steamed out of the bay, and, entering the broad Atlantic, turned her head toward Home.

In due time St. Helena appeared in sight, and, contrary

to the expectations of the passengers, the yacht came to anchor in Jamestown harbor.

The Captain now informed them that he should remain in port for twenty-four hours ; so, securing the company of Jasper Morgan, they hastened ashore, and as all good pilgrims to this far-famed isle have done for the past half century, set out for Longwood, the last residence on earth of the first Napoleon.

St. Helena belongs to England. It is a precipitous and rocky island in mid-ocean, lying 1,200 miles off the coast of Benguela, and occupies an area of twenty-eight miles in circumference. It is almost everywhere surrounded by rugged perpendicular rocks, rising from 600 to 2,000 feet, here and there broken through by chasms extending to the sea-shore. The most important of these rifts is St. James's Valley, on the northwest, terminating at Jamestown, the only port or harbor of the island, and the residence of all the authorities. The place is so strongly defended, both by nature and art, that, until the recent wonderful improvements in heavy marine ordnance, it defied invasion. The interior is fertile and covered with gardens, orchards, and plantations, and the climate so remarkably healthy that invalids, particularly from India, retire to it for the benefit of their health. Diana's Peak, the highest point on the island, is 2,693 feet above the sea. The total population, including Europeans, the garrison, Chinese, and negroes, is about 6,200.

Probably we should know little and care less about St. Helena were it not for the fact that it was to this lonely spot that, on the 16th of October, 1815, the great Napoleon was banished, and here that he died on the 5th of May, 1821. But his body does not repose on the island, for in 1840 it was removed with great pomp to France, and all that St. Helena now has to remember him by is the dilapidated house at Longwood, where he dwelt, and an empty grave, where for a time his body was buried.

The party from the *Albatross* examined the miserable stable that had served the French emperor as a dwelling-place, and thought of the meanness of England. They stood beside the empty grave, and remembered the vulgar brutality of Sir Hudson Lowe. They visited Napoleon's walk, and sighed over the selfish ambition of a great man; were duly robbed by all with whom they came in contact, and at night returned to the yacht thoroughly disgusted with island and people, and ready to leave them and return no more.

The next morning they were once more steaming northward, and soon had passed Ascension Island, and were making toward St. Paul. Having left the latter isle far astern, the Cape Verdes were at a considerable distance on the right.

This group belongs to Portugal, and consists of ten large and four smaller islands, their united area being about 1,680 square miles. They are very mountainous, and one of them contains a volcano, which rises to the height of 9,157 feet. They are exceedingly fertile, and produce several sorts of grain, coffee, cotton, indigo, and tobacco, and a great abundance of fruit. There are plenty of cattle, pigs, and goats; fowls are plentiful, and fish abound along the coasts. The inhabitants are frequently reduced to great distress for want of water. Their principal occupations are agriculture and making a preparation of salt; but they manufacture leather, linen, soap, and pottery. The population is not far from 70,000.

About eight degrees north of the Cape Verdes are the Canary Isles, the more important of which are Teneriffe, Grand Canary, Palma, Lanzarote, Fuerteventure, Gomera, and Ferro. The area of the entire group is 2,800 square miles. The whole are extremely mountainous, and in some the mountains reach an immense elevation, their verdant and fruitful sides representing each zone by the

character of the vegetation that, in succeeding belts, shows the products of each clime, from the temperate to the arctic. The highest of all the peaks is that of Teneriffe, rising to 12,182 feet. The soil of the Canaries is very fertile, and yields in plenty all the cereal crops, potatoes, and other vegetables required for the support of the inhabitants, and for the ships that occasionally call at them for provisions; but the chief growth is the vine, and the staple manufacture is wine, which, with brandy and a few other articles, is exported in great quantities. Among the native birds are the much-prized canaries.

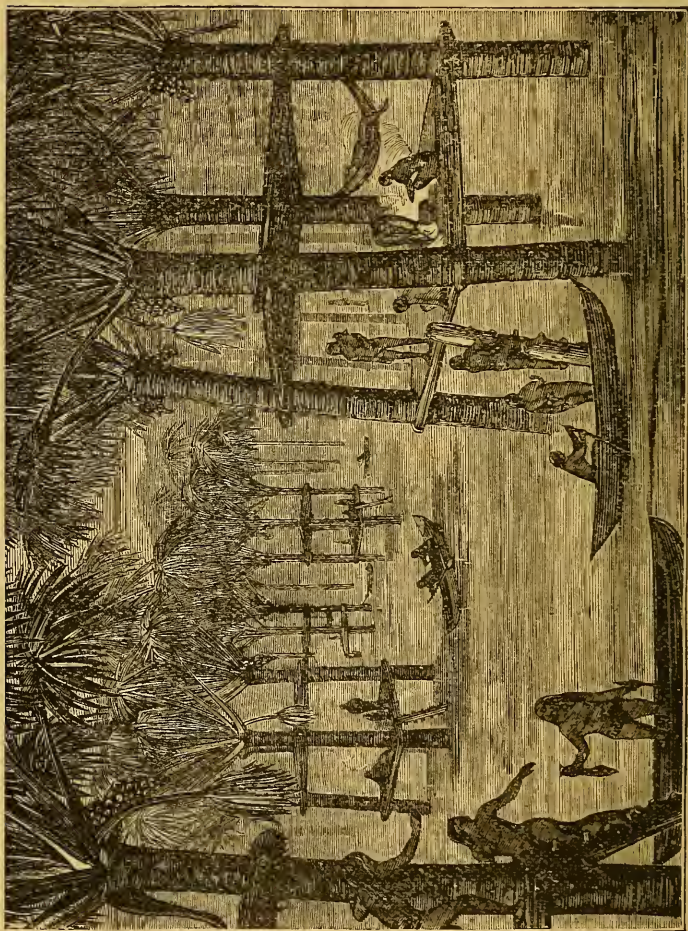
A little to the north of this group are the Madeira Islands, which belong to Portugal. There are only three isles of any consequence, — Madeira, the most important, Porto Santo, and the Desertas. The principal island, Madeira, is about thirty miles long and twelve broad, and the surface entirely consists of a series of hills, rising one above another, till they culminate in mountains 6,000 feet above the sea. The sides of these mountains are covered with the produce of the island, of which the vine forms the principal object, and on the cultivation of which so much of its prosperity depends. Wheat, barley, oats, coffee, and arrow-root are grown in small quantities.

Northwest of the Madeira Isles, and in the latitude of Lisbon, lie the Azores, a group of three clusters of volcanic islands, rising bold and rugged from the bosom of the Atlantic. The first, or most eastward cluster, is composed of two islands, St. Michael and St. Mary; the central cluster of five, St. George, Pico, Terceira, Fayal, and Graciosa; while the third cluster, which is considerably apart to the west, also contains two islands of importance, Corvo and Florea.

But the yacht's course was far to the westward of all these groups, and at length they were once more in the neighborhood of the West Indies.

“We had hoped to pay another visit to the groups and

clusters about the Caribbean Sea before returning home," remarked Eugene one day, while they were off the Lesser Antilles. "Indeed, we were particularly anxious to see the Leeward Islands."



AQUATIC DWELLINGS.

"If you are ever in that part of the world," said his uncle, "don't fail to visit the islands of the delta of the Oronoco. They will repay you for your trouble."

"What is there particularly interesting about those islands?"

"Well, for one thing, the aquatic dwellings of the inhabitants. You see, for many months in each year, large portions of the islands are under water, and so the inhabitants become lake-dwellers, and their only means of communicating with one another and the shore, which at such times is miles away, is by canoes. But they seem to like the life, for the water beneath them and the palms which support their dwellings furnish them with all the food they require."

"We must surely see these aquatic people some day," said Eugene.

"Indeed we must," assented his brother.

On and on steamed the *Albatross*, every hour taking them further north, and nearer home. At length, one beautiful morning in June, they passed the Light, and entered the harbor of the university town.

Quickly the intelligence of their arrival must have reached their friends, for hardly had the yacht come to anchor in her old berth off Belle Dock, when an excited party of ladies and gentlemen appeared on the wharf, and, having filled two large boats, were rapidly pulled toward the steamer.

Chester was intently watching a graceful figure in the foremost boat, when Eugene, clutching him by the arm, exclaimed:

"Brother, what ship is that? Is it not the *Mansfield*?"

"It is!" exclaimed Chester, turning toward the vessel indicated; "and a boat is just putting off from her side."

"And there are ladies in it," added the Professor. "Mrs. Beach, and Mrs. Hamilton's sister and daughter, no doubt."

An expression of satisfaction came into Eugene's face, as he said:

“A voyage among the Isles of the Sea is a very good thing, but I am not at all sorry to get home.”

A moment later their friends had reached the yacht, and were helped on board. Then the greetings commenced.

There were uncles and aunts and cousins to be saluted. The president of the university was there; so was Professor Gregory, and his friend, Captain Watson; so, too, was he whose guests they had so long been,—Warren Worthington.

To all these the party from the *Mansfield* was speedily added, and the greetings were renewed.

Chester soon found himself by the side of his fair cousin Grace, and Eugene discovered that he had much to say to Miss Kilbourn.

The president and Mr. Worthington had been conversing with Lyman Pierpont for some time. Presently they turned, and addressing the brothers, Mr. Worthington said:

“Well, young gentlemen, the foundations of Worthington Hall are laid, and the superstructure is rapidly rising toward completion.”

“Yes, thanks to you, my young friends,” added the president, “the first new building is growing into beautiful proportions, and the post-graduate department of our university is an assured fact.”

“To be instrumental, even in the slightest degree, toward accomplishing so much for our *alma mater*,” returned Eugene, “we would gladly again spend a year or more among the Isles of the Sea.”

THE END.

APR 29 1948

Deacidified using the Bookkeeper process.
Neutralizing agent: Magnesium Oxide
Treatment Date: June 2003

PreservationTechnologies

A WORLD LEADER IN PAPER PRESERVATION
111 Thomson Park Drive
Cranberry Township, PA 16066
(724) 779-2111

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 010 745 488 3

